



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

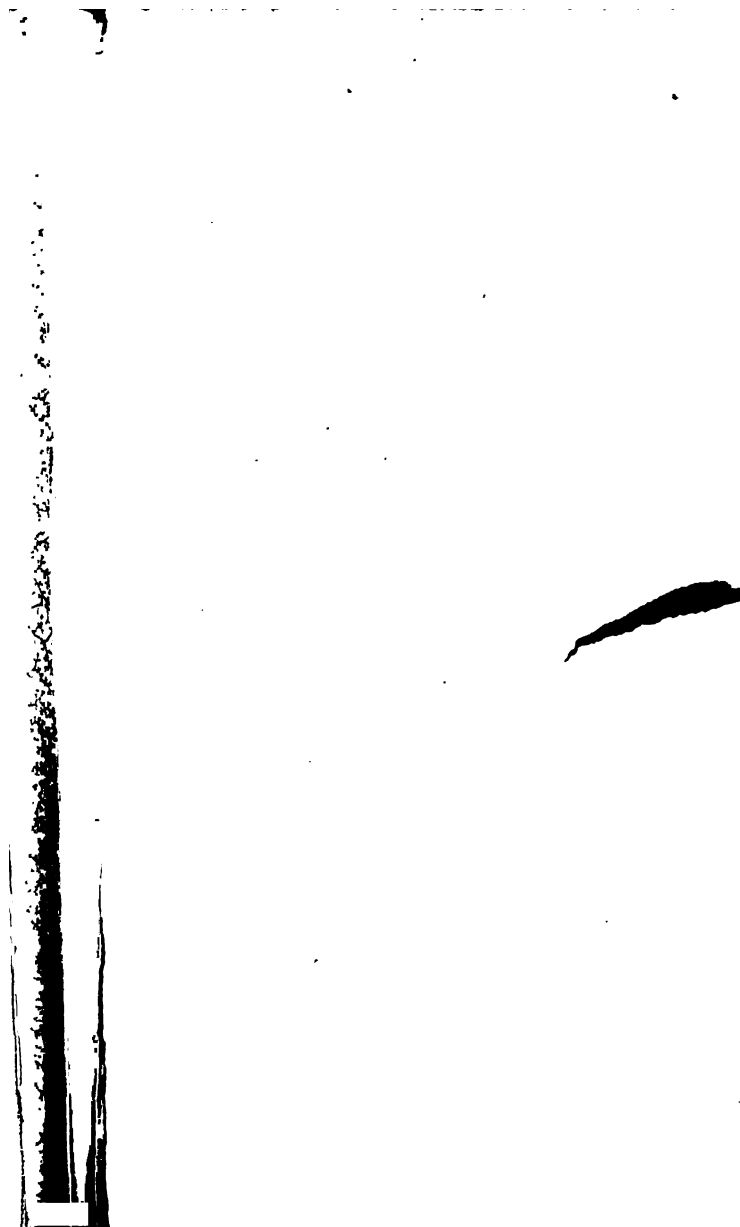
Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES



3 3433 07492309 9

Presented by
Mrs Henry R. Hoyt
to the
New York Public Library



—

—

CHRYSALE:

OR, THE

ADVENTURES

OF A

GUINEA.

Wherein are exhibited

VIEWS of several striking Scenes, with
curious and interesting ANECDOTES, of
the most noted Persons in every Rank of Life,
whose Hands it passed through, in AMERICA,
ENGLAND, HOLLAND, GERMANY, and POR-
TUGAL.

*Hold the Mirror up to Nature,
To show Vice its own Image, Virtue his own Likeness,
And the very Age and Body of the Times
His Form and Pressure.*

SHAKESPEARE.

Qui capit, ille facit.

By an ADEPT.

The THIRD EDITION, greatly enlarged and corrected.

In FOUR VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

L O N D O N:

Printed for JOHN HILL in the Strand.

M,DCC,LXVII.

By

Charles Johnstone

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
22571
ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.
1921

ငွေအဖွင့်အဖွင့်နှင့် အဖွင့်အဖွင့်အဖွင့်အဖွင့်

To the Right Honourable WILLIAM
PITT, Esq; &c. &c. &c.

S I R,

THE Publisher of these papers is sensible, that the time devoted to the care of nations, is too valuable to be spared to the perusal of them; yet he should think himself guilty of a breach of the general gratitude, which, at this time, swells every honest heart in Britain, if he omitted to lay at your feet, a work, in which every occasion of displaying the blessings of a good administration, appears to have been sought with pleasure, and dwelt upon with judgment.

The genius of my author was evidently so averse to adulation, that it would be doing him the severest injustice, to join any thing to his work, which even envy could possibly pervert to such a motive, by insinuating, that the pictures he draws, in many places, of national good conduct, and the happy effects of it, are a panegyric on present, not a representation of imaginary scenes.

A sense of this precludes me from the pleasure of illustrating his remarks with particular instances; but, in return for that painful self denial, I must be indulged in a profession of a joy, with which I (as must every Briton whose heart feels for his country) congratulate myself, on my happy fate, in living under an administration, in which the flights of imagination of a visionary recluse, dead so many years ago, may be taken for a relation of the real events of the present times.

Here my address to Mr. PITT must stop ! But nothing can ever stop my prayers to Heaven for the preservation and happiness of a life, on whose labours the welfare not only of this weighty empire, but also of the greater part of Europe, do now so eminently depend.

A Briton.

ADVER-



ADVERTISEMENT.

THE very favourable reception which the former edition of this work, mutilated and imperfect as it was, met with from the public, has encouraged the editor to use every possible means, for the recovery of the rest of the manuscript.

Such an attempt was necessarily tedious, troublesome, and expensive in going to all the customers of the chandler's shop, where it was first met with, prevailing upon them to search cup-boards, holes and corners, wherever they might possibly have laid up any thing that was wrapped in it, and purchasing the scraps which could be found; for such an enquiry made them naturally imagine, that the papers were of some considerable value, and of course demand an extravagant price for them.

His own trouble and expence he thinks well rewarded, by the many most curious and interesting parts of the work, which he had the good fortune to recover; and he hopes the public will excuse the unavoidable delay of this impression, on the same account.

The parts, thus recovered, he has inserted in their proper places, without any ostentatious mark or note; and tho' they amount to very near a third part of the whole, as it now stands, and would have been amply sufficient to have made another volume; to evince the sincerity of his grateful desire to give pleasure to his readers, and acquit himself of all suspicion of mercenary design, he has

vi A D V E R T I S E M E N T.

added them to this edition, by printing it in a smaller letter than the former, and by that means avoided enhancing the price.

He had flattered himself, that the candid account of the manner in which this work came into his hands, which he prefixed to the former edition, would have obviated every insinuation of its being levelled at particular characters; but every puny critic was so fond of shewing his sagacity, by finding out resemblances, and so zealous in support of his conjectures, that the editor's honest intention was in a great measure disappointed.

The dissingenuity and absurdity of this is evident: In painting a number of faces, tho' merely from the artist's imagination, if he designs well, and imitates nature with judgment, it is impossible but many features will have a likeness to many persons, whom he may have never seen or thought of, as they are all drawn from the same prototype with theirs.

This is the reason of the resemblance between particular persons; and as justly might be said, that wherever this appears, the parties must be brothers, as that, in a general description of nature, every feature that happens to resemble any particular person was drawn from him.

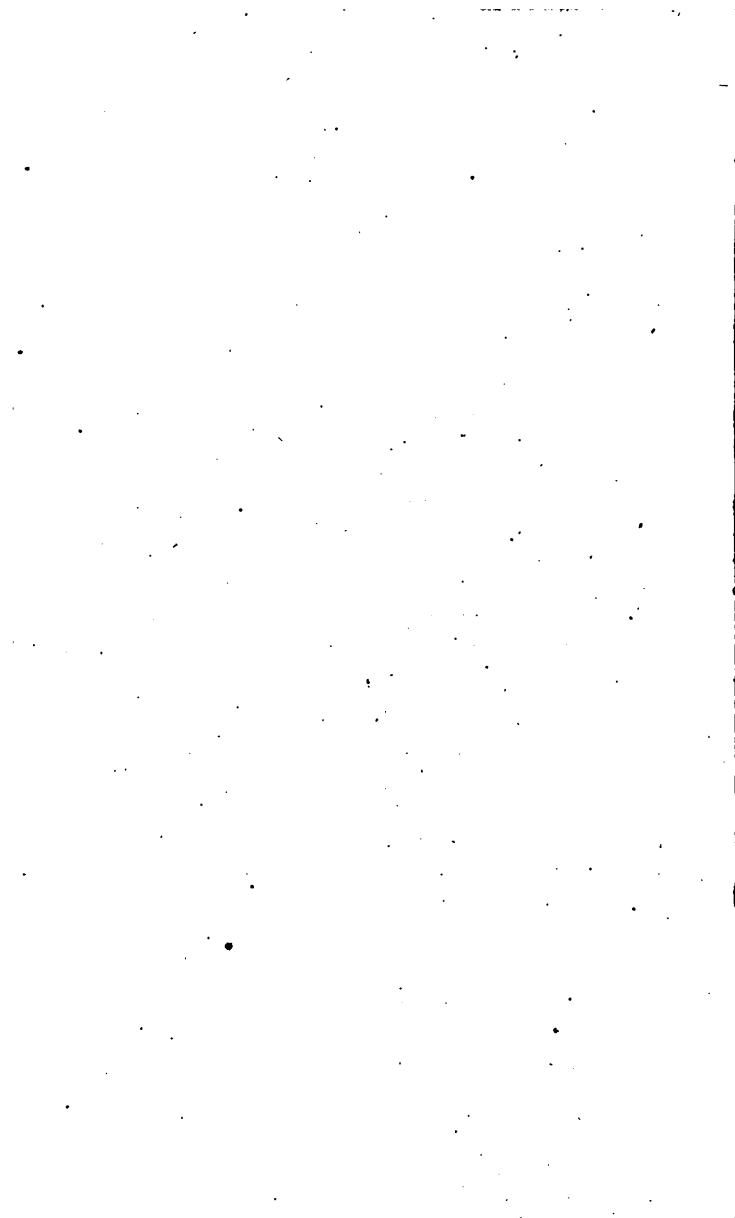
Between these accidental resemblances of nature, and the designed ones of art, there is always this difference, that the latter bear in every part, whereas the others hit only upon one or two particular features. Thus HOGARTH, or HONE, shall take off such a likeness, not only of the features and shape, but also of the air and sentimental expression of the whole face and person, that the nicest eye shall not find the least difference between the work of the pencil, and that of the
hand

ADVERTISEMENT. vii

hand of nature ; whereas there never was such a resemblance in any two instances of the latter, that there was not some difference, that immediately and essentially distinguished them from each other.

This, invariably just, observation will, to every candid mind, vindicate this work from the most distant imputation, of aiming at particular characters, and in the resemblances, which have been most confidently alledged, there are many features so utterly unlike, many differences so essentially irreconcilable with the fancied originals, that the injustice of such a charge must instantly appear.

This is another proof of this performance being a work of mere imagination, which will scarce be disputed by those who may not attend to the force of this reasoning, just and conclusive as it is ; which is, that it was published a considerable time, before many of the events, which it seems most particularly to describe, happened ; such, for instance, as the attempt of the *Dutch* in *India*, the forbidding to attempt influencing parliamentary elections, and many others, which, the judicious reader must be sensible, there was not the least reason to direct the most distant expectation of.



P R E F A C E

(To the FIRST EDITION)

By the P U B L I S H E R.

TO acquit myself of the suspicion of presuming to aim at particular characters in the following work, should any fancied likenesses be thought to direct any application, as well as to do justice to the real author of it; I think it my duty to make known the manner by which it happened to come into my hands.

As I was walking one morning, last summer, along *White-Chapel*, I was obliged to take shelter from a shower of rain in a cottage near the turn-pike. The family were at breakfast, at their tea, and, as the rain continued, I had leisure to reflect on the advantages of commerce, which thus, in a manner, joins the opposite extremities of the earth; by bringing their products together: at the same time, that the variety in the equipage of the tea-table, or indeed, stool, on which “there was nothing of a piece,” suggested a just ridicule on the vanity of luxury.

This last reflection was extended to all the pursuits of man, on the sight of a piece of written paper that served instead of a plate to hold their butter,——

“Who knows (thought I) but the writer of this bestowed time and care upon it, and promised himself both profit and fame, in reward for his labour?”

This thought prompted curiosity to look at the paper, which, by this time, was scraped quite clean. I therefore, after a few words of conversation to introduce my request, desired leave to see it, which was

readily granted ; when I was surprised to find my conjectures, as I imagined, confirmed, by its appearing to be part of some regular work.

Curiosity had now a stronger motive, than idle gratification ! I asked where they had got that paper ; and on their telling me, at the chandler's shop next door, though this discouraged me a good deal, I resolved to pursue my inquiry, and went to the shop, as if for some snuff, which, as I expected, was given me on a piece of the same paper.

The rain still giving me a pretence for delaying there, I entered into discourse with the woman, and, among other idle questions, asked her where she usually got paper to wrap her wares in, to which she answered, " Sometimes from the public offices, and, ' sometimes from the booksellers and printers ; and, ' when she was disappointed at those places, she was ' forced to buy brown paper, which was much dearer ; though, at present, she made use of some old ' stuff that had lain a great while lumbering her ' garret, having belonged to a lodger of her mother's, ' who died many years ago.' "

I then changed the discourse, for fear she should perceive my design ; but presently seeing her going to tear more, for somebody else that came in, I could not forbear any longer, but offered her brown paper for all the written paper she had, *as that was most proper for some work I designed*, which she readily agreed to, and sold me her whole stock for eighteen pence.

This adventure put an end to my walk : so I took the first coach that went by, and hurried home to examine my purchase, which I found to consist of a number of fragments, upon various subjects, whether originally left unfinished, or torn thus in the chandler's shop, it was impossible to say : and, among the rest, the

the following work, which seemed to have undergone a different, though not much better fate, being blotted in many places, often paragraphs, and sometimes whole pages being erased; and, what was worst, this havoc was made in the most curious and entertaining part of the whole, the *philosophy of the nature and agency of spirits*.

The oddity of this collection made me resolve to try if I could learn any thing of the author, from the woman of the shop where I had made my purchase; accordingly, I called upon her one evening, as if merely by accident, and sending for a pint of wine, to set her tongue a going, I no sooner hinted my desire, than she directly gave me the following account, which I shall relate as nearly as possible, in her own words, shortening it only of expletive exclamations and repetitions.

“ My father (said she) dying young, and leaving his family but poorly, my mother took this shop to help her to bring up three children, of whom I, the eldest, was but five years old. The times being hard, she was obliged to make every honest shift, and therefore took in lodgers, and, among the rest, an elderly man who rented the garret to sleep in, and a little turret in the garden, which he fitted up for himself for a work-shop: but what business he followed she never knew, as he let no-body see him at work; nor did she trouble herself to inquire, as he always paid her punctually: but she imagined he was a smith of some sort, from the quantities of charcoal he burned, and the constant blowing of his bellows.”

‘ In this place he spent all his time, often not quitting it for whole days and nights together, ’till
‘ hunger

• hunger has forced him to crawl like a starved rat out
• of his hole, to get a bit of victuals.

• At first my mother was uneasy at this, and ima-
• gining he must be *out of his mind*, or troubled
• in conscience, she spoke about him to a worthy
• gentleman, a clergyman, that lived in the neigh-
• bourhood ; but he coming to see him at a time
• when he had a clean shirt on, and had eat his victu-
• als; and slept regularly for some time before, his
• discourse was so sensible and pleasant, that the
• doctor could not help telling him the cause of his
• visit, as a joke at my mother, to whom he said,
• when he was going away, that so far from being
• mad, he believed her lodger was the best scholar
• in the whole parish.

• My Mother's good-nature had like to have lost
• her lodger ; for as soon as the doctor was gone,
• he gave her warning ; but upon her promising ne-
• ver to be guilty of the like indiscretion again, nor
• trouble herself any farther about him, than just to
• give him what he should call for, he consented to
• stay.

• From that time he lived among us as unnoti-
• ced as he could desire, following his business with-
• out disturbance from any one, nor appearing to give
• himself the least trouble about that of any other
• person living, except it was me, whom he taught to
• read, and said he would make his heir. An un-
• happy heirship, I am sure, for me ; for it hindered
• my marrying *Jack Twist* the rope-maker, who is
• now the toppingest man in all *Radcliff-highway*, and
• then offered to take me in my shift.

• But there's no help for that now ! Luck is
• all ! To be sure we thought he must be some
• extraor-

‘ extraordinary man, for he never wanted money, and
‘ then we used to hear him talking to himself some-
‘ times, as if all the world was his own, of *building*
‘ *colleges, churches and houses, and altering St. Paul’s,*
‘ and I do not know what great things; and, one day
‘ in particular, I remember he said, before us all, that,
‘ before seven years, he would hire an army, that
‘ should drive the *Pope* and the *devil* (Lord bless us)
‘ out of *Rome*; for to be sure, he would talk before
‘ us, as if we could not hear him, as we would also
‘ do any thing before him, as freely as if he was a cat
‘ or a dog! Well, as I was saying, it was no wonder,
‘ to be sure, that such ignorant poor folks as we should
‘ think much of him, especially after what the doctor
‘ said, and accordingly build great hopes upon his
‘ promises.

‘ He went on thus for near twenty years, no soul e-
‘ ver coming near him, nor he going out, above once
‘ or twice in a year, and then not staying above an
‘ hour or two at a time.

‘ At length his health began to break very much,
‘ which made my mother often speak to him not to
‘ work so hard, for he had been with us so long, and
‘ was so quiet, and paid so honestly, that we all loved
‘ him as if he was our father, but her advice was all
‘ to no purpose; he still went on, bidding her not to
‘ trouble herself, or be afraid about him. But this
‘ did not satisfy her; and one day, when he had been
‘ locked up, from the morning before, without having
‘ any victuals, or going to bed, she resolved to break
‘ through his orders, and call him to dinner.

‘ When she came to the turret, which he called his
‘ *laboratory*, she tapp’d gently at the door, but receiv-
‘ ing no answer, nor hearing any noise within, she was
‘ so

‘ so frightened, that she called me to fetch the kit-
 ‘ ea poker, with which we made shift to force it op-
 ‘ where we found the poor man stretched at his length
 ‘ upon the floor, to all appearance dead.

‘ This shocked us greatly ; but we did not al-
 ‘ the neighbours, as we imagined there were thir-
 ‘ of value there, that might be misplaced, or tak-
 ‘ away in the confusion : we therefore raised him
 ‘ ourselves, and after a little while, perceiving sig-
 ‘ of life, carried him in, and laid him in our own be-
 ‘ and pouring some drops into his mouth and no-
 ‘ at length brought him to himself ; when his fi-
 ‘ care was to inquire for the key of the turret, a-
 ‘ whether any one else had been there, or any thi-
 ‘ in it stirred : our answers satisfying him, he seem-
 ‘ quite easy, and in a little time recovered, to all a
 ‘ pearance, as well as ever.

‘ From this time, he changed his way of life a good
 ‘ deal ; and though he was much in the turret, which
 ‘ we observed he ever after called his *study*, and not
 ‘ his *laboratory*, he never sat up whole nights in it, as
 ‘ before, nor brought any more charcoal, nor even a
 ‘ for his lamp, but went to bed orderly when we did.

‘ But this change came too late, for, about six
 ‘ months after, we found him one morning dead in
 ‘ his bed ; though he had been as cheery the evening
 ‘ before, as he had been for a long time.

‘ This was a great surprise and concern to us ! But
 ‘ what avails grief ? we must all die, and he was a very
 ‘ old man. As soon as we were certain he was dead
 ‘ the first thing my mother and I did, was to go to
 ‘ the turret, impatient enough to take possession of our
 ‘ heirship ; where, Lord help our poor heads ! what
 ‘ did we find ? only a few great old books, and those
 ‘ paper.

‘papers you got ; the very bellows, and tools, and
 ‘pots that we saw there before, being all gone, and no
 ‘more sign of a workshop to be seen, than if it was not
 ‘the same place we had been in but six months before.
 ‘What he could have done with his things we could
 ‘not imagine, for we never observed him to carry them
 ‘out, so that we concluded he must have burned
 ‘them.

‘This was a sore disappointment to me, not to men-
 ‘tion the loss of my mother, to whom he owed a quar-
 ‘ter’s rent, besides an account of near twenty shillings
 ‘in the shop ; and seven shillings and two-pence half-
 ‘penny was all the money in his pocket ; nor did we
 ‘ever find one penny more after him, though we search-
 ‘ed close enough !——Well ! patience is a remedy
 ‘for all things, but death ! We were forced to submit ;
 ‘though I cannot help grieving, when I think of it to
 ‘this day, especially when I see *Peg Sprout*, the green-
 ‘woman’s daughter from *Wapping*, that *Jack Twist*
 ‘married out of despair, when I refused him, ride by
 ‘in her chaise like a lady : and it is now thirty years
 ‘ago !——No let me see ! it will be exactly twenty-
 ‘nine years come next *Michaelmas* ; I am sure I have
 ‘reason to remember it well, for my poor mother took
 ‘it so to heart, that she never held up her head after,
 ‘till it finished her, in about nine years, though I
 ‘cannot say but something else might have helped,
 ‘for she took cruelly to drinking drams, tho’ as she
 ‘began it, to comfort her for this misfortune, it was
 ‘all owing to that ; and poor sister *Bett* to.—

I was obliged to interrupt her here, by asking her what
 kind of a person he was, or she would have gone on to
 give me the history of her whole family, to which she
 answered thus, ‘What sort of a man ? I’ll tell you then:

‘for

‘ for I think I see him before my eyes this minute.
‘ He was a tall thin man, about six feet high, and no
‘ thicker than a watchman’s staff, as I may say ; then
‘ his constant leaning over his work bent his long back
‘ like a bow, especially as he had no belly to keep it
‘ up, for he lived almost upon nothing, so that when
‘ he walked, the length of his legs, and his great
‘ stoop, made him look as if he had no belly at all.
‘ As for his face, it was as long as my arm, and not
‘ broader than the edge of my hand ; his eyes were
‘ sunk half a foot into his head, and always covered
‘ with spectacles : his nose was hooked over his
‘ mouth, as his chin turned up an handful to meet
‘ that : and the constant toasting, over the charcoal,
‘ had shrivelled up his skin, so that his whole face
‘ looked as if it was covered with scorched parch-
‘ ment.—His dress (for I never knew him to have but
‘ one) was a black coat with little buttons all over it ;
‘ which being made for him while he stood upright,
‘ now he stooped so much, hung down to his ankles : a
‘ broad leather belt, that kept his coat about him ; a
‘ cloak which he hung upon his shoulders, but was so
‘ worn, that it shewed his skeleton through every part
‘ of it ; and an old high-crowned hat. In short, he had
‘ so little of the appearance of a creature of this world
‘ in his looks or dress, that whenever he went out in
‘ the day-time, the mob gather’d about him, and hoot-
‘ ed him home, just as the little birds do an owl ; and
‘ some of our wicked neighbours, when any accident
‘ has happened, have often threatened to take him up,
‘ and *dis* him for a witch, though I am persuaded,
‘ that was nothing but wickedness and malice, and
‘ that he knew no more harm than a baby.’

My curiosity being thus satisfied as to the author,
there was but one thing more that I desired to know,
and

and that was, how those papers came to have so many blots made in them, which, by the difference of the ink, I could see was done long since the first writing? To which she answered, that some time after the old man's death, her mother let his apartment to one that called himself a clergyman, and was a great scholar, and used to make almanacs, and other books; that he had looked over those papers, and, she believed, taken out such as he liked, and done what he pleased with the rest; for they set no regard on them; and particularly she remembered to have heard him say, that he would make something of one of them; but she believed he found it would not do, for he soon after left their house, and, joining with those methodists that were just then come up, went away with them, preaching about the country.

I thought it but reasonable to reward the good woman's expence of breath, with half a crown, and so took my leave, though with a secret resolution to give her half the profit, if there arises any, from the sale of the books; not thinking that such a purchase, as I had made from an ignorant woman, could give me a just title to the whole *beisbip*, as she called it, that had cost her so dear, as the loss of her old sweetheart *Jack Twist*.

This good woman's account explained to me, in some measure, the nature of this work from the circumstances of the author, who, I could see, had been a schemer, who had wasted his whole fortune in the search after the philosopher's stone, and having his eyes at length open to his folly, though too late to remedy it, yet was able to divert the grief of his disappointment, by writing these papers; in ridicule of such notions, and from the sale of which he might also expect some relief in his wants.

How

C E.

it have been then, it is
sent mutilated condi-
ed any man to make
was, that the ortho-
led at the author's
it to see, were only
idle dreams, which
philosophers, have
upon the world, as

e loss is now irropa-
the appearance of
whole philosophical
the personal appli-
present times, the
the author will shew
an attempt ; as it
person so little ac-
the stories in it must
of imagination.
re published, I shall
e to the faith of the
ions and interpolati-
, being given ; but
out the very words
he whole, not think-
y own words or sen-
edit of another.

at this point, will ap-
e pains of consulting
ll be deposited in the
fities, as soon as the
I have taken ; be-
and supplying a con-
any of the above-

O N T E N T S

CONTENTS

Of VOLUME the FIRST.

BOOK the FIRST,

- CHAP I. *The Apparition of CHRYSAL to an ADEPT, in the very moment of projection. His account of himself, and the cause of his appearing to the author.* Page 1
- CHAP II. *CHRYSAL gives an account of the person who dug up his body in the mine. The particular manner of his acquiring the knowledge of his life, with an explanation of the nature of memory and consciousness.* 5
- CHAP III. *The history of TRAFFICK. His father's advice to him; containing some general observations on the nature and end of trade; with rules to ensure success in it.* 8
- CHAP. IV. *The history of TRAFFICK continued: His father's death. He continues in trade, and turns schemer. His various schemes end in his ruin. The rise and progress of his passion for AMELIA. The base abuse of her confidence, by which he cheated her of the greatest part of her fortune, and afterwards formed dishonourable designs against herself.* 13
- CHAP V. *Continued. He cheats AMELIA of the residue of her fortune, and marries another woman. AMELIA sues him at law, is cast, and goes for AMERICA. He is ruined, and follows her.* 18
- CHAP VI. *Conclusion of the history of TRAFFICK. He arrives in Jamaica, where he learns that AMELIA had been taken by the Spaniards. He turns buccanier, and ravages the Spanish coasts, where he finds*

CHAP. XVII. Continued: Confusion worse confounded, rout on rout: The transformation of a constable into a devil introduces a story of the devil's terrifying a famous cardinal, by dancing in masquerade, and frightens a polite assembly into a fit of devotion, which lasts an whole night with most of them. A glimpse of the courage of a modern man of honour. Page 179

CHAP. XVIII. Continued: Maternal tenderness of an uncommon kind. A most magnificent wedding disappointed, by an unhappy instance of female frailty. A new method of calculating general opinion. An unlucky accident changes a scene of joy into grief, and affords an useful caution to old age and infirmity, to guide their steps with proper care. A drawn battle. An instance of fell revenge makes room for a stranger, who restores general harmony. 187

CHAP. XIX. More happy fruits of female government. The history of an eminent patroness of the polite arts. Her peculiar method of shewing a distinguished taste and judgment. An extraordinary charge in a bill at an inn. 194

CHAP. XX. An irremediable defect in human policy. The history of a most eminent personage. A new way of paying the debts of guardianship. A daughter's disobedience in refusing to comply with more than paternal laws. The hero of the tale extracts profit from charity, and asserts the right of agency, in defiance of public opinion and frame. 199

CHAP. XXI. The representation concluded with an eminent man-midwife. His motives for taking up that profession, with some unfortunate anecdotes of his practice. 206

CHAP. XXII. Some account of the officers of the charity. Their care of themselves. They fall out about the division of the spoil. A terrible uproar is appeased by a demand of general concern. The concise manner of passing public accounts. CHRYSAL changes his service. 210

CHRYSAL.

CHRYSA L:

OR, THE

A D V E N T U R E S

O F A

G U I N E A.

CHAP. I.

The Apparition of CHRYSA L to an ADEPT, in the very moment of projection. His account of himself, and the cause of appearing to the author.

ON a day when a long and strict abstinence had purified my body from every *terrene* incumbrance, and intense contemplation wound up my mind to an enthusiasm fit for *empyrean* conversation, as I stood with my eyes riveted on the *obstetric* flame, in strong expectation of the birth of the *mystic child*, the *first-born of the morning*, ready to seize the happy moment, when the *earth*, sufficiently impregnated with the *water*, ascendeth white and splendid, that I might compound the pure elements, before they fly from the fire, and so perfect the great work; my eyes began to dazzle, and the power of imagination overwhelmed my soul.—I saw a blue effulgence break from the liquid

VOL. I.

B

gold

gold, and play about the genial vase !—I was astonished ! I thought it the *substantial form of the son of the sun* ! I thought the happy moment was come, when *the rose of the east should bloom in the desert*, and mine the favoured hand to cultivate its growth ! I indulged the pleasing thought ! I melted in the virtuous joy ! and in obedience to the divine impulse, I kneeled to receive the reward of all my labours, *the radiant crown of wisdom and glory*, from the hand of nature, with every sense and faculty suspended, for fear of interrupting the mysterious process.

As my soul hung in this extasy, the flame which wrapped the *sacred birth in the bed of purification*, arose with a glory too strong for mortal sense, and filled the room. My senses sunk under the pressure, and I was dissolved into a trance, when a voice, celestially harmonious, encouraged me to raise my eyes, and I beheld *the body of the effulgence condense into an incorporeal substance in the form of a spirit*, while a placid shade softened the fierceness of the radiance, and made it tolerable to human sense.

An holy horror curdled all my blood ; but the melody of the same voice, which had before emboldened me to look up, re-assured my fainting heart with these words : ‘ Son of pains and votary of science : thy unwearied perseverance has prevailed, and I am sent to crown thee with the virgin rose ! I am CHRYSALE,* the spirit of that incorruptible mass now glowing in that vase before thee, who in reward of thy noble constancy in offering this thy last mite, on the shrine of knowledge, am come to reveal to thee the mysteries of nature, and satisfy that raging thirst for wisdom, which has so long excruciated thy soul, and thus emaciated thy body ! And, that thou mayest the better comprehend the greatness of this honour
‘ vouchsafed

* This name is evidently derived from *Xevods*, Gold, and may probably signify Golden, from her animating a piece of Gold ; for, by the universal authority of the occult philosophy, spirits are always denominated from their office.

' vouchsafed unto thee, I shall trace the operations
' of nature through her most secret recesses, and il-
' lustrate the truth of what I say, by a detail of the
' various incidents of my being, in my present state,
' to prepare thee for the reception and proper use of
' that *grand secret*, which I shall afterwards communi-
' cate !

' I can see your thoughts ; and will answer every
' doubt which may arise in your mind at the wonder
' of my relation, without the interruption of your in-
' quiries, as *awful silence is the essence of my converse*,
' the least breach of which puts an end to it for ever !
' listen then in mute attention, nor let a breath dis-
' turb the mystic tale.' —

The works of nature are infinitely various, and her methods of operation inscrutable to the curiosity of that vain intruder *Reason*, which has of late presumed to pry into her ways, and to doubt, if not deny the reality of all effects, which her short-sighted eye cannot trace to their causes ! a presumption that has justly shortened the line of human knowledge, and condensed the mist of ignorance which overspreads the world ! some noble efforts, though, I see the nature of man preparing to make, to recover the eminence of *conjecture* and *credulity*, which alone can merit such a communication of extraordinary knowledge as is now indulged to you. Some of the most hidden truths which I shall here unfold, has unassisted genius discovered already ; and more shall curious penetration make learned guesses at, even in this sceptic age.*

Know then, that in the œconomy of nature, to ease the trouble and keep up the state of its great author,† *a subordination of ministerial spirits executes the system of his government in all its degrees ; one of whom for the greater order and expedition, is made to actuate every divided particle of matter in this immense universe*. In this distribution, *that* portion of 'gold was assigned to my charge, upon its first feeling the influence

B 2

of

* See all the modern hypothetical philosophy.

† Essay on Spirit.

of the * *etherial fire of the sun, the general minister of the divine commands.* This happened in *Peru*, where *that body*, of which I then became the spirit, was torn from its peaceful bed 200 fathoms deep in the bowels of the earth.

I shall not describe my surprize, at my first plunging into those realms of darkness, nor shall I satisfy the curiosity I see rising in you, whether that period was the beginning of my existence, or whether I was, either as a punishment or reward for a past, or a preparation for a future life, thrown into this. These are mysteries not yet discovered, though often most learnedly guessed at. All I shall unfold to you are points already known, or such as I see ready to be found out by human industry, as it would put an end to learning to make a revelation of the objects of its inquiries! such matters, I say, I shall explain to you, and farther relate some occurrences, the knowledge of which will be equally useful and entertaining, which happened to the several persons with whom I have had intercourse, in the various stages of my present state.

And as you may be at a loss, to know how I could arrive at the knowledge of such facts, many of which happened long before my converse with those persons, I shall inform you, that besides that *intuitive knowledge* common to all spirits, we of superior orders, who animate this universal monarch GOLD, have also a power of entering into the hearts of the immediate possessors of our bodies, and there reading all the secrets of their lives. And this will explain to you the cause of that love of gold, which is so remarkable in all who possess any quantity of that metal. † *For the operation of every material cause is in proportion to the*

* *Siris.*

— *Would not those, and many other passages of the same nature which support the systems of those celebrated works, almost tempt us to think, that the writers of them must have had a communication with this or some such spirit, to come at knowledge so supernatural?*

† *Essay on Spirit.*

the strength of the spirit actuating that cause ; as the strength of the spirit is reciprocally in proportion to the quantity of his material body: and consequently when the mighty spirit of a large mass of gold takes possession of the human heart, it influences all its actions, and overpowers, or banishes the weaker impulse of those immaterial, unessential notions called virtues. And this intuition, and power of transmigration, I have thus explained, to remove every shadow of doubt of what I shall relate.

C H A P. II.

CHRYSAI gives an account of the person who dug up his body in the mine. The particular manner of his acquiring the knowledge of his life, with an explanation of the nature of memory and consciousness.

THE first object that struck me, when I darted on the power of a sun-beam, into those infernal regions where my body was just dug up, was the person in whose hands it was when I took possession of it.

Dark as the gloom of such a place must be, a melancholy that doubled the horrors of it, sat upon his brow. He gazed a moment on *me*, * in silent grief, and then groaned out these words, with a vehemence that seemed to burst his heart : ‘ Damned, damned, pernicious damning gold ! how dearly do I purchase this momentary possession of thee ! but let me acknowledge the justness of my fate ! I wished only for gold ! and now, this equivocal grant of that wish, is the just punishment of the folly, and the wickedness of it.’—Grief here choak’d his utterance !

B 3

he

* *Chrysal must here mean the Gold which now became her body, as she does not say that she appeared in the spirit to any one before the author.*

he could say no more, but sobbed aloud, while all the dreary caverns echoed to his anguish.

Curiosity prompted me to learn the cause of his distress: I therefore immediately entered into his heart, to read the events of his life, which I doubted not but I should find deeply imprinted there: but I was surprized to find that room in it, which, I could plainly see, had been possessed by the love of gold, so filled with sense of pain, with grief, and remorse, that I could scarce gain admittance.

Upon this I mounted into the *sensorium* of his brain, to learn from the spirit of consciousness, which you call SELF, the cause of so uncommon a change, as it is contrary to the fundamental rule of our order, ever to give up a heart of which we once get possession.

I found the spirit very busy, though I thought somewhat oddly employed: she was running over a number of *niches*, or impressions, on the fibres of the brain, some of which I observed she renewed with such force that she almost effaced others, which she passed over untouched, though interspersed among them. The sight of me seemed to suspend her works a moment, but as if that pause was only to recover strength, she instantly renewed her labour with great assiduity.

I looked at her, my desire to know the meaning of what she was doing, and to signify the cause of my visit, to which she returned me this answer in a glance, that interrupted not her work.

(I see you wonder that I speak of this spirit, tho' the SELF of a man, as if it was a female; but in this there is a mystery; every spirit is of both sexes, but as the female is the worthier with us, we take our denomination from that.)

You are surprized, (looked she) to find me so earnestly engaged in work which you do not understand; but in this work consists my very essence. This place, where we are, is the seat of memory; and these traces, which you see me running over thus, are the impressions made on the brain by a communication of the impressions made on the senses by external objects:—These first impressions

*impressions are called IDEAS, which are lodged in this repository of the memory, in these marks, by running which over, I can raise the same ideas, when I please, which differ from the first appearance only in this, that, on their return, they come with the familiarity of a former acquaintance.**

How this communication though is made I cannot so well inform you ; whether it is by the oscillation of the nervous fibres, or by the operation of a certain invisible fluid, called *animal spirits on the nerves* ; no more than I can explain to you, how my touching these marks, on this material substance the brain, can raise *ideas* in the immaterial mind, and with the addition of acquaintance beside ; for these are matters not quite fully settled among the learned.

All I know is, that the thing is agreed to be so by some, or other, or all of these means ; and that my whole employment and end of being, is to touch them over, and acknowledge their acquaintance thus : without my doing which a man would no longer continue the same person, for in this acquaintance, which is called a *consciousness*, does all personal identity consist. †

As for the work I am just now particularly engaged in, you must know, that this man whom, as I am *his self*, I shall henceforth, for conciseness and perspicuity, call *my self*, was once possessed of, or in power of possessing, every real happiness of life, till an insatiable desire of riches hurried him into measures which overturned all that happiness, and in the end plunged him into this gulph of misery.

The traces of that happiness are those which you see me to pass over without renewing ; by which means he forgets that he was ever happy, except sometimes, when the trace of any particular unhappiness comes so near that of any instance of happiness, as unavoidably to touch it ; which touch, by the renewal of the idea of such happiness, only aggravates the sense of the present want of it : And thus I make memory

B 4

either

* See all the modern philosophy. - † Locke.

either a blessing or a curse, according to the nature of the trace which I renew.

I see you are astonished, how a person who was ever happy could possibly fall into such misery as I am now in : but I shall remove that astonishment by the history of *my* life, in which I shall accommodate my accounts of places and things to the circumstances of my present state without regard to the universality of *our* spiritual nature ; and call them by their names among men, without the delay or trouble of description.

C H A P. III.

The history of TRAFFICK. His father's advice to him : containing some general observations on the nature and end of trade ; with rules to ensure success in it.

MY name is *Traffick* ; I was the only son of a wealthy merchant in *London*, who bred me to his own business. There was nothing remarkable in my youth, except that the characteristic passion of my heart, shewed itself, in the very dawn of reason, in my eagerness to engross and hoard up the baubles of my play-mates, and the far-fetched schemes I laid to over-reach them in all our little bargains.

My father was at first delighted with this cunning, which his fondness took for the first essays of a great genius, but when he saw me persist in it after I grew up, and attempt to practise the same arts in the course of my business, it gave him serious alarms for my future conduct ; for he had ever been averse to these artifices which are called *the mysteries of commerce*, and owed his success solely to close application in the plain way of a trader.

But this caution I looked upon with contempt, as timidity and want of genius, and, undiscouraged by his constant repulses to all my *bold strokes* and deep schemes, which I was continually suggesting to him,
I resolved,

I resolved, when I should be at liberty, to indulge my own inclinations, to strike out new ways, that should afford me opportunities of exerting my abilities in their full strength, and shewing them in their proper lustre.

The vanity which prompted avarice to form these designs, which so often break out in boasting, that my father was fully acquainted with them ; and a sensible decline in his health quickening his apprehensions for me, his tenderness would omit nothing which might shew me my error, in its proper light, and prevent my falling into so destructive ways.

Calling me therefore into his closet one morning, he addressed me in these words : words which dear experience has now printed deeply on my heart, though then they had no weight with me.

‘ My son (said he) the day approaches fast, when you will be in possession of the fruits of my honest industry. I leave you a good fortune ; and I have the happiness to be able to tell you, in this trying moment, that no wilful private wrong, or public fraud, makes me wish it were by one penny less.— As therefore it was acquired in the fear of God, if not abused, it will wear with his blessing. Habit had so wedded me to my business, that I could not leave it off myself ; and I bred you to it, to indulge, as I thought, the bent of your genius, and to prevent idleness from tempting youth to folly.—But now, that dangerous season is past with you ; and the labour of my life has taken away all necessity of labour from yours. Be wise then, my son, and enjoy the happiness which Heaven offers you, without tempting a reverse ! You will have riches, more than enough, for every natural want, for every rational wish ; and it will sweeten your enjoyment of them, and draw down the blessings of Heaven on your head, to employ the super-plus in acts of private benevolence, and public spirit ; in which best of employments, the abilities, with which you are so liberally blessed, will find ample room for their exertion ; and your pious endeavours be rewarded with a

‘ success, that will be a happiness to your life, and
 ‘ an honour to your name.

‘ As for the profession of a merchant, to which you
 ‘ have been bred, Heaven points it out to the inha-
 ‘ bitants of this country, by our situation; nor can any
 ‘ other be more advantageous to it; but still, even
 ‘ that advantage may be pursued too far, and the
 ‘ extreme of industry may sink into avarice, and so
 ‘ disappoint its own end.

‘ For I must tell you, my son, that though trade
 ‘ adds to the wealth, yet too eager a pursuit of it,
 ‘ even with the greatest success, diminishes the
 ‘ strength of a nation. I am sensible, that this is
 ‘ against received opinion, but truth, when properly
 ‘ displayed, will force conviction.

‘ The real strength of a nation consists in the pre-
 ‘ valence of disinterested spirit, which, regardless of
 ‘ *self*, throws its weight into the public fund; as
 ‘ may be proved by many examples of small, poor
 ‘ states, conquering large wealthy ones. Whereas
 ‘ the spirit of commerce centres all in *self*, discour-
 ‘ aging and despising, as folly, every thought which
 ‘ does not tend that way; and so breaking that una-
 ‘ nimity, which is the very essence of power, and
 ‘ only can give it success.—A reflection this, my son,
 ‘ which observation confirms too strongly at present,
 ‘ and which seems to overcast the prospect of this
 ‘ happy nation.

‘ My advice therefore to you is, to retire from bu-
 ‘ siness, though not to idleness. You will have a
 ‘ fortune that will make you of consequence in the
 ‘ state, and give you sufficient employment in the
 ‘ conduct of it, without embarrassing your mind with
 ‘ anxiety for more. And, to enable you to follow
 ‘ this advice with the greatest ease, I have settled all
 ‘ my affairs, and shall leave you free from every en-
 ‘ tanglement of life. This is the advice, the request
 ‘ of a fond father, who desires compliance from his
 ‘ dear son, and would not force unwilling obedience,
 ‘ by an act of authority or command. But should the
 ‘ love of business have taken such an hold of your
 ‘ heart,

‘heart, as habit gave it of mine, and not permit
‘you to comply with this request, take, my son, the
‘advice of experience, and hold fast the clue it offers
‘to guide you through the labyrinths of trade, in
‘which the vivacity of your genius may, otherwise,
‘lose its way. Nor are the rules, I shall hint to
‘you, many to be remembered, or difficult to be ob-
‘served.

‘*Be just, my son, in all your dealings ; wrong not in-
dividuals ; nor defraud the public.*

‘These are all the rules I recommend : but in them
‘is comprised more than, perhaps, appears at first
‘view. Do not, therefore, think them too obvious
‘to have been necessary to be repeated ! nor let the
‘mention of them give offence, by any seeming im-
‘plication of personal doubt.

‘In the business of a merchant these rules compre-
‘hend a great extent of meaning, though I shall men-
‘tion but a few instances of it at present.

‘*As for the first, every misrepresentation to mislead
ignorance, or abuse credulity, every taking advan-
tage by superior knowledge, is a wrong to the party so
deceived ; as every artifice to evade the intention of the
legislature is a fraud against the public, and against
yourself, and every individual who claims the bene-
fits provided, by the ordinances, so defeated of their
support.*

‘This indeed is so obvious, that it were an affront
‘to reason to insist on any proof of it. The most
‘eager pursuer of illicit trade will not vindicate a
‘general indulgence of it ; and if it is not lawful for
‘all, how can it be for him ? or with what colour can
‘he claim a profit which he is conscious arises only
‘from deceit, and from the benefit of those very laws
‘which he thus defeats ?

‘The temptations to this breach of honesty, I own,
‘are many and great, and some of them perhaps
‘plausible : particularly in those branches of trade,
‘which seem to bear a more than equal share of the
‘weight imposed for general advantage. But in op-
‘position to this, it must be considered, that it is im-
possible

ance of regard, and even respect for him, this shyness was not observed, nor any coolness occasioned by it, in the intercourse of intimacy between us.

But for this conduct I had another motive, besides regard for *him*. He had an only daughter, enriched with every beauty and virtue that could mark the favourite work of Heaven : she was about four years younger than I, which difference of age had given me an opportunity of treating her with such a fondness from her very infancy, as raised a real love in her grateful heart, as her beauties did the strongest one it was capable of feeling in mine. Our fathers had seen this growing attachment with the greatest pleasure, from the beginning, and encouraged it between us (our mothers both died in our infancy) joining in the general opinion, that the union which had always been between their families would be completed by the intermarriage of their children : an opinion that was then my pride, and seemed a pleasure to the young *Amelia's* honest heart, that was above disguise.

But my father's death, before she was of an age to undertake the care of such an awful state, and a long illness of her father's after, during which her filial piety and love would not admit a thought of any thing that should interfere with her tender regard for him, prevented my happiness from being accomplished, while there was any obstacle that could hinder my evil genius from defeating it.

At length after languishing five years, her father died, without a moment's more immediate warning, having been on the *Exchange* that day as usual.

In the tumult of this loss I was sent for ; and, no will being found, for he unhappily had not imagined his end so near, nor made any settlement of his affairs, in the confidence of our attachment, *Amelia* gave every thing into my hands, and requested me to make up all her father's accounts, and conclude her dealings with the world.

This happened just as my *scheming* had begun to embarrass my affairs. My heart therefore, never proof to much temptation, yielding to such an opportunity

opportunity of recovering the losses of my folly at her expence, by *sinking* the greatest part of her fortune to my own use ; never considering that I might have the whole in a just and honourable way, enhanced with the greater blessing of herself.

To accomplish this design, and prepare her for what was to follow, I pretended to *Amelia*, that I found many difficulties in her father's affairs ; and having secreted as much as I thought proper, and could with safety, and destroyed every memorial that might detect me, for all which her unbounded confidence gave ample opportunity, I at length gave her in an account, with the strongest expressions of concern, ' to find that what I had long apprehended was ' too true, and that her father's affairs were in a ' very bad situation ; that I had however, with great ' difficulty, got together something above 10,000*l.* ' and was convinced that this perplexity in his affairs, was the occasion of his long illness, and had ' not left him spirit enough to enquire into them, and ' make a will.'

This representation had the effect I designed ; *Amelia's* confidence in me would not admit a thought of my deceiving her ; as pride, too powerful to the purest human heart, prevented her revealing her circumstances to any one else, who might have attempted to disprove what I said ; though indeed it was scarce natural to suspect me of a deceit, that, according to the opinion which then prevailed concerning *Amelia* and me, could only affect myself.

She, therefore, with an appearance of surprise rather than doubt, or even concern, acquiesced, and signed a receipt in full, desiring me to destroy all her father's books and papers, as they could be of no farther use to her.

This completed my design beyond a possibility of detection, and even raised a new one against the poor pittance I had left her, though it was not quite a fourth part of what was really her right ; for I had now thrown off all thoughts of marriage with one *so far beneath me in fortune*, looking upon it as a reproach
to

to my wisdom and knowledge of the world, to make any *bargain* in which I should not have the advantage : for what I had so basely defrauded her of, I considered merely as an acquisition of my superior skill in business, and absolutely my own, without any manner of obligation to the person from whom I had obtained it : not that I had lost my *desire* for her person (the only degree of love my heart was capable of feeling) but the advantage I had it now in my hopes to obtain over her, made me look upon her as a sure prey to my pleasure.

C H A P. V.

Continued. He beats AMELIA of the residue of her fortune, and marries another woman. AMELIA sues him at law, is cast, and goes for JAMAICA. He is ruined, and follows her.

THOUGH my whole life was one continued scene of villainy, yet in all there was a gradation, a regular descent from bad to worse ; each successful crime opening new opportunities and suggesting schemes which never entered into my thoughts before.

This was exactly my case with regard to *Amelia*. While she was in possession of her whole fortune, the highest wish of my heart was to marry her ; But no sooner had an unhappy accident given me an opportunity of defrauding her of far the greatest part of it, than that respectful love immediately sunk into loose desire, and my success in my former schemes against her, set my thoughts at work to accomplish the gratification of this passion, on my own base terms.

To bring this design to perfection, it was necessary that I should get her fortune entirely into my power ; which I accordingly formed schemes to accomplish without delay ; for the success of my former attempt, so far from satisfying my avarice, or raising any sense of compassion in my breast, for her wrongs, had made me
look

look upon herself, and all that belonged to her, as my property, which I was impatient to possess, as if it was detained from me by injustice.

I therefore took occasion one day, when we were alone together, to drop some words of concern at my not having immediately by me, a sum of money to lay out on the most advantageous terms, which had been that very morning proposed to me.

She directly took the hint, and said, her little fortune was still in her hands, in the same bank notes I had given her; and if the use of it, for any time, could be of advantage to me, she should feel a greater pleasure in my taking it, than in any profit she could make of it any other way.

This was just what I wish'd, and though I could scarce refrain from laughing at the easiness with which she took the bait, I would not accept of her offer but with this restriction, that I would consider whether the terms proposed to me might not suit *her*, and be more advantageous than the interest I could afford her if I should make use of it myself. I said this with an equivocal smile, which she understood as I would have her, and immediately, with an assenting blush, put the notes into my hand, without requiring a receipt or any kind of acknowledgment for them.

Having thus gained that which I reckoned the better part of *Amelia*, and sure, as I imagined, of herself when necessity should humble her to my designs, as I had her whole means even of subsistence in my power, I directly resolved to close with an offer, some time before made by a wealthy merchant, of a large fortune with his daughter, whom I accordingly married a few days after I had got possession of *Amelia's* money.

I shall spare myself the pain of any farther description of my wife, than that she was the very reverse of *Amelia*, in soul and body; and my marriage consequently as unhappy as I justly deserved.

But I comforted myself with hopes of happiness in the enjoyment of *Amelia*, whom I looked upon as my own, and only deferred making my base proposal to,
till

till her resentment at my marriage should cool, and I could devise some plan of privacy to illude the vigilance of my wife. Not but I dreaded the first emotions of her anger, which I expected would break out in loud complaints.

But I was mistaken, in measuring her soul thus by my own. She scorned to complain; nor did I hear a word from her to interrupt the riot of my wedding. A greatness of soul so far above my comprehension, that I attributed it to fear of giving offence to one, in whose power she must be sensible she was.

But at the end of the month, I was awoke from those dreams, by a message from her, delivered by a relation of her's, to desire I should pay in her money to him, for which he would give me her receipt. As I was not prepared for this, I believe it threw me into a confusion too visible; but I soon recovered presence of mind enough to answer, that "I could not but be surprized at such a demand, as *Amelia* must be sensible, that I had paid her all the money of her's that was in my hands, for which I had her discharge in full."

The gentleman replied in astonishment, 'Her discharge, Sir! that was when you *settled* her affairs; but she says, that since then, she gave her whole fortune into your hands to lay out for her. And, Sir, my cousin is neither a fool nor a liar; though I fear she has suffered severely for her ill-plac'd confidence.' — 'Perhaps she says so, Sir, (said I) but I know nothing of the matter, and am not accountable for what she says, or you think, Sir; and I suppose, if your cousin is not a fool, she has not given her money without something to shew for it.—But you must excuse my talking any longer on so idle a subject; and so, Sir, your servant.' — The mine was now sprung, and I waited with impatience for the event. As to her demand I knew she could never support it, as there was no person present when she gave me the notes; and I had negotiated them in a manner beyond all possibility of their being traced.

While

While I was hugging myself in this security, the friend of *Amelia* persuaded her to bring a bill in Chancery against me, in which the whole affair was set forth without any exaggeration. But this I made light of, as I had *my lawyer* ready, under whose directions I swore such an answer as set her charge entirely aside.—Elate with this success, I thought this the time to pursue my victory, and wrote her a letter, in which I attributed every thing in my conduct of late, that might have surprised her, to love, and despair of obtaining her by any other method; and offered her a settlement above the demand she had made to me, if she would consent to my desires. This I wrote in such general terms, that my letter could not be brought in evidence against me, and the largeness of the offer was only to decoy her into a treaty, there being nothing farther from my thoughts than ever to make her independent to my pleasure.

This insult only added new fuel to her resentment; and all the answer I received was by another bill; but this met with the same fate, by the same methods, with the former.

After this I heard no more of *Amelia* for some time: but what was my astonishment, when I was informed, that she had sold off her jewels, and other little effects, and was gone to a relation of her's, who lived in *Jamaica*! This broke all my designs; and despair of ever obtaining her, awoke my love, and aggravated my remorse for my ill usage of her, almost to madness.

From this time the hand of Heaven seemed to be upon me; every thing I had any concern in, miscarried; and to hasten on my ruin, my house was a perfect sink of riot and debauchery; my wife, as she had no charms to excite desire, in a manner, publicly purchasing the gratification of her lusts at the most extravagant expence, and living in a profusion that must destroy even a royal fortune.

Mine, great as it has been, sunk under so many dissipations of all kinds; and I had no resource left,

as I said before, but in precipitate flight, which Heaven made my passion for *Amelia* direct to *Jamaica*, to mark the justice of its vengeance the more plainly.

C H A P. VI.

Conclusion of the history of TRAFFICK. He arrives in Jamaica, where he learns that AMELIA had been taken by the Spaniards. He turns buccanier, and ravages the Spanish coasts, where he finds AMELIA. Just as he is going to seize her, he is taken prisoner by her husband. He is condemned to die. He sues to AMELIA for mercy; she rejects him with abhorrence. His punishment is changed from death to the mines.

I HAD hitherto varnished over my villanies with hypocrisy, and strove to preserve some appearance, at least, of virtue. But this was a restraint no longer possible, nor indeed profitable to me now, when my flight took off the veil, and alarmed all mankind against me; so that mine was really a state of war with all the world.

On my arrival in *Jamaica*, I had the addition to my grief to find, that *Amelia* had been taken in her passage thither by a *Spanish* privateer.

This drove me to despair: I was wearied of life; but resolved not to die unrevenged on those who had thus, as I thought, robbed me of my hopes; never reflecting on the improbability of her hearkening to my suit.

Burning with this project, I fitted out my ship, and manned her with a crew as desperate as myself; resolving, though the war was at an end, to pursue my revenge upon the *Spaniards*, on the defenceless coasts of their *American* dominions, in which my other passions were urged to haste, by fear of my creditors, the news of my sailing having come to *Jamaica* almost as soon as myself.

We

We therefore set out upon our cruise, or rather piracy, without delay, of which I shall not raise your horror with any further particulars, than that we went directly into the *Spanish Main*, where we not only rifled all the ships we met, but also made descents on the coasts, and ravaged with a barbarity that was a reproach to human nature.

The tumult and hurry of this life kept my spirits in an agitation, that gave a kind of respite to my grief; and the spoil we made in our first enterprises was so great, as to awake hopes of restoring my affairs, so as to enable me to return to *England* with all the credit wealth could give.—And could I have known when to stop, I was soon rich even beyond my most sanguine hopes: but urged by avarice, and encouraged by success, I went still headlong to my fate, which I met in an attempt upon a town some way up in the country, the convenience and pleasantness of whose situation had made it the residence of the richest families in the whole province; as its distance from the coast made them live in a state of perfect security, without any fortification or guard.

To this place we directed our march, one evening; and arrived at it a little after midnight, with an intention to surprize the inhabitants, and return to our ship with the spoil, before the country could rise to intercept us.

The first part of our design succeeded, and we got possession of the town without any resistance; where we committed all the outrages, and roamed about with the licentious carelessness of free-booters under no command.

While every one thus prowled about for prey, fate goaded me to an arbour in a garden, whither I followed the cries of women! I was rushing in among them, inflamed with brutal desire, when——what was my astonishment to see *Amelia*, in the most magnificent undress, throwing heaps of gold and jewels into a vault that opened by a trap door into the arbour. I stood motionless at the sight for some moments, in distrust of my senses, but two such objects as she and her

her riches, soon awoke me from my trance, and I advanced to take possession of both, resolving not to discover myself till a more proper time ; the strangeness of my dress, that was designed to strike horror, and the blood which, from scenes of cruelty and murder just committed, still reeked upon my hands and face, making it impossible that she should know me.

At the sight of me, the women all shrieked, and *Amelia*, as I advanced to lay hold of her, fell into a swoon. This embarrassed me greatly, as I had no time to lose, for our centinels just then sounded a retreat. However, I thought I would wait a little, to see if she recovered, and stooping to raise her to give her air, I received such a blow from behind, as deprived me of all sense for several hours ; when, on my recovering, I found myself chained on the ground in a dungeon.

I was some time before I could believe my senses, or conceive where I was ; but I soon found my fate, when the jailor coming to see if I was alive, gave me to understand that my companions had gone off without me, and left me in the hands of a nobleman, who had himself knocked me down, as I was going to commit a rape upon his lady while she lay in a swoon ; and that I had been thrown into this dungeon, that, if I recovered, I might suffer the punishment due to the outrages we had committed both here, and in the several other places of their dominions.

I wanted no further information to shew me the horrors of my situation. I saw them all, and aggravated an hundred fold, by the accusations of my own conscience, that could now trace the hand of Heaven in the justice of my punishment, which had thus overtaken me, in the presence, and on the account of *Amelia*.—I wished for death, as my only relief, and determined to seek it : But, alas ! my resolution failed me ; and I feared to die. In this misery I was dragged before a magistrate, who, enumerating the crimes we had been guilty of, condemned me to immediate death.—This sentence, so much milder than my fears, awoke an hope of farther mercy, to obtain which,
my

my evil genius suggested to me, to apply to *Amelia*, absurdly flattering myself, that some spark of her love for me might yet remain alive, or, at least, her goodness take delight in shewing itself superior to my ill treatment. Base hope, that met its just reward!

I therefore waved attempting a defence of other crimes, as I was conscious that I could not make any, but asserted my innocence, as to the particular charge of a base design upon *Amelia*, at the time I was taken, adding, that, 'I had the honour of being nearly related to that lady, and that, if I was indulged with a few words with her, in the presence of all there, I hoped I might be found to merit a mitigation of my sentence.'

On my mentioning the name of *Amelia*, I observed one of the principal persons in the court, whom I soon understood to be her husband, kindle into rage. He did not however interrupt me; but as soon as I had concluded, he started up, and exclaiming with the most furious indignation: '*Amelia* thy relation! No more than angels are related to devils, by springing from the same creator! Her virtues are dishonoured by the claim! But she shall appear and disprove the odious calumny.'---Saying which words, he instantly went for her, while an hollow murmur of surprise and detestation, made the silence of the court more dreadful, and heightened the horrors of my suspense.

But I waited not long; *Amelia* soon appeared, led in by her husband, and being seated by the judge, 'Where, (said she, looking round with the serenity of conscious virtue) Where is the person who says he is related to me?'

The sight of her threw me into such a conflict of passions, that, without reflecting where I was, or how necessary it might be for me to raise her compassion by some moving address, that might soften the severity of her resentment for my former treatment of her, as well as assure her of my innocence of any base design against her person, in the condition she was in when I was taken, I could not forbear crying out in *English*, for I had spoken before in *Spanish*, in which I expressed

myself but badly, "O *Amelia* ! hast thou then forgot me ?"

At the sound of my voice she started, and, looking earnestly at me for a moment, fell upon her knees, and, lifting her hands and eyes to Heaven, she said aloud in *Spanish*, 'O God, how signal is thy justice ! Let me, let all the world acknowledge and adore it !' ---And then rising, and turning to her husband, who stood in amazement : 'This, my Lord, (said she) 'this is the man of whom I have informed you : This 'is that *Traffick*, whose base dishonesty obliged me to 'leave my native country : and so, by that Providence 'which is able to turn the greatest misfortune into a 'blessing, was made the cause of my present happiness with you. I abjure all kindred with him ; I 'desire that he may be examined as to my story ; and 'if he can vary in the least from what I have told 'you, let me be condemned to the severest punishment, but that of staying longer in his sight, or ever 'seeing his face more.'

On this she withdrew, without deigning a look at me : But her words had a proper effect upon my heart, and I resolved to do her justice. I therefore prevented her husband's command, and, in as few words as possible, related the black affair with the strictest truth. When I had concluded, her lord declared, that I had not only confirmed every thing she had told him, but also added many circumstances of my own guilt, which she had omitted, or perhaps not known.

So complicated a guilt seemed to require consideration to find out proper punishment, so I was remanded to my dungeon, but without the least encouragement to hope. The next day I was again brought into the court, where my former sentence was changed into that of being broke alive upon the wheel ; and this severity was said to be in justice to *Amelia*.

When I had stood some moments stupified with fear, the judge addressed me again in these words. 'Thou 'hast heard, O wretched man, the sentence due to thy 'crimes ; but great as they have been, mercy extends 'her hand to thee. The virtues of the illustrious

Donna

‘ *Donna Amelia* over-balance thy guilt, and have prevailed for mitigation of thy punishment, in gratitude to that divine providence which made thee the cause of her coming among us. Thou shalt not die, because we would not kill thy soul, before thou hast had time to repent of thy crimes, nor shalt thou suffer torture, that thy strength may not be impaired for the labour to which thy life is doomed ; for this is the last day thou shalt ever behold the light of Heaven. Thou shalt immediately descend into the mines, there to work out the residue of thy unhappy days, in raising that gold for the use of others, the insatiable desire of which was the cause of all thy guilt.’

I would have spoken in the agony of my soul, to desire death ; but I was stopped by the judge, who sternly said, that, to hear a word from me would be an insult upon justice. On his saying which, I was hurried away to the mountains over us, and precipitated into this gulph, where I have now been near.—

Just as he said this, I was obliged to fly away to my body, which the unhappy *Traffick* had thrown from his hand, into the vessel in which it was to be raised from the mine.

The length of this story will make you wonder, when I tell you that the spirit of *Traffick* shewed it to me in a moment, for no longer did the gold remain in his possession : and I am always obliged to attend my body whenever it changes its master. But to understand this, you must be informed, that *we spirits do not distinguish our existence by time, or a succession of parts, as men do ; with us, there is nothing past or to come, but every thing is present in one view, so far as the natural course of causes and effects is preserved free from interruption by superior power.*

Though this title may appear profanely great to you, yet they seem to support it by the share which they assume, in some of his most sacred prerogatives.

To a reverend father, of this order, was I presented, on the festival called *Easter*. He was seated in a retired chamber of his temple, in the exercise of one of the functions of the Deity, *bearing and punishing, or forgiving sins*, according to his sovereign pleasure. It is not possible to give you *here* an idea of the solemnity of this ceremony, in a country where all religion is evaporated into show. Be it sufficient to say, that the pageantry was such a mockery of the Deity, as no other of his creatures, but *man*, would dare to commit.—The man who brought me into this mysterious fane, advanced with fear and trembling to the *apparent Deity* of the place, and, kneeling before him, confessed himself guilty of several *heinous crimes*, in the *admission of involuntary thoughts*, and *indulgence of the appetites of nature*, contrary to the rules laid down to him by his spiritual guide.—But this will be best explained by instances. The first crime which the penitent revealed, was having tasted a morsel of flesh on a day, when it was prohibited. The father, with a severe frown, told him, “That was a great sin, which he must atone for, by working two days for the church, without hire, and abstaining from flesh, at the same time, tho’ it was generally allowed.”

He next confessed, that he had beaten a dog belonging to a priest, which had broke into his hut, and eaten the pottage prepared for him, by which means he had been obliged to go to sleep without his supper. At this, the priest knitting his brow into ten-fold austerity, exclaimed, “This is rebellion! rebellion against your God! Do you not know, that the dog of an ecclesiastic is above the greatest (even white) layman, much more a wicked native! you must make amends!—you must!—or”—The tone and gesture with which he spoke these words, so terrified the trembling wretch, that he instantly put his hand into his bosom, and pulling *me* out, presented me, to make his peace. As soon as I appeared, the priest’s features

features softened, the tone of his voice fell, and receiving me with a gracious smile, 'You have not said,' (says he) 'that the master of the dog was a Jesuit! thy crime, therefore, though great, may be forgiven! but beware for the future, and remember, that the world, and all in it, belongs to us: and that to be guilty of the least disobedience, even in thought, is treason, and deserves the severest punishment. Proceed! unburthen your conscience! I know your thoughts, but would have you speak them, that I may prove your sincerity. Proceed! I am in haste!'

The penitent then went on—'O father, be merciful, and I will confess all! Returning from my labour one evening late; I found my door fastened, and, no one answering when I called, I burst it in, when behold, I saw father *Ignatius* in the very act of carnality with my beloved wife *Mootaw*! I was amazed! and though fear prevented my striking him, I could not forbear thinking in my heart, that he who does those things, can be no *god*, he must be only man; and I cursed him in the bitterness of my soul; but he was drunk with wine, and did not hear me.'

'Wretch! devil! heretic! (exclaimed the father in a rage) thou intrude upon the privacy of a *Jesuit*! thou say, he was but a *man*! thou think he could not know thy very thoughts, because he had drunk wine! audacious slave! art not thou, and thy wife his? had he not a right to use his own? was it not an honour to thee, ungrateful wretch; and darest thou to think a *Jesuit* is but a *man*? But it is enough! the inquisition shall teach thee faith and obedience! the inquisition——'

At that tremendous word, the wretch, half dead with fear, fell at his feet, crying out, 'O father, O God, O King, forgive! forgive! (and pulling out of his bosom the rest of his gold) take this, O lord, from your poor slave, and forgive.—Take this, which I got at the peril of my life, and saved to buy the liberty of my dear child, whom my mas-

ter took from me ; take it and forgive ; let her still be a slave ; let me never see her more ! But O the inquisition ! O forgive, forgive !

The priest, mollified at the sight of the gold, replied, ' Thou knowest my compassion, but thou abusest it, and thy crimes are almost too great for mercy. In hope thou wilt amend, and transgress no more, I will forgive thee now : but thou must be punished : Hast thou no more gold ?'—' O, father, no more, no more ! and this I saved to redeem my child : O let me get my child !'—' *What ! insolent ! dost thou presume to capitulate ? Thou shalt be punished : Instead of getting back thy daughter, thou shalt bring me thy son, whom I saw yesterday, when I bade thee come to confession. The boy I blessed and kissed upon my knee.*'—' O father, father, take all the gold, and let my daughter remain : But spare my son ; he is too young, O father, too young for thee.'—' *The inquisition !*'—' O take him, father, take him, take all, but spare me ; I fly to bring my child to thee ; O spare me from the inquisition !'—' *'Tis well, be comforted ; thy sins shall be forgiven ; perhaps, if thou behavest well, thy son may also be restored. I fear thou hast forgotten thy Christian faith ; let me hear thee repeat thy creed.*'—The man somewhat re-assured, to hear that he should escape the inquisition, and comforted with the hope of having his son restored, began thus.—' I believe that God made the world, and all things in it, for my lords THE JESUITS ; and that I must worship him, by obeying them, and saying the prayers they direct me, to the saints, and the blessed Virgin, the mother of God, and above all to the great saint IGNATIUS LOYOLA. But if I disobey their commands in any thing, or repine at their service, or think that I must obey the viceroys before them, I shall be burned to death in the inquisition here, and the great devil will burn me for ever after I am dead.'—' *Well, son, remember and practise thy creed, and thy sins shall be forgiven thee : Go, and bring the boy when it is dark.*'

C H A P. VIII.

The holy father's tenderness to another penitent, who had ravished, murdered, and robbed his own brother's wife. He accepts the spoils as a recompence to the church. He hints a method of preventing the danger of his brother's resentment, and dismisses him with ghostly advice.

THE severity with which the Jesuit required satisfaction for the imaginary faults of the poor Peruvian, may perhaps lead you to think, that his zeal would be inexorable to real crimes ; but the following account will shew you, that it was no such thing, and that he looked upon nothing as a crime, which was not detrimental to the power or temporal interest of his society. — 'The next penitent who approached the *mercy-seat*, was a commander in the army. He advanced with a military intrepidity, and kneeling down in form, "Father," (said he) "I have a long reckoning to make, and some of the articles are rather heavy." "My son," (replied the priest) "you have had experience of the indulgence of the church, and that no crimes are too black for mercy, on *proper* penitence. Proceed then and open your wounds to your physician ; nor fear the efficacy of his medicines.'

"You know then, father" (said the penitent) "that I have long burned with a passion for the wife of my brother the judge. It was the subject of my last confession." — "I remember it right well" (replied the father) "and you may remember also what ghostly, yet comfortable advice I gave you, to strive against and suppress it, if you could." — "True, father ; but I told you then, that I knew it would be in vain for me to strive, as I was resolved to enjoy her, though at the hazard of my life." — "But, son, did I not

comfort you, by saying, that if you found it in vain to strive, and could not live without her, as life was the greatest good in this world, it was just that you should preserve yours, by obtaining what you were so violently set upon, but always to be careful that you conducted matters so, as not to give offence by your success.'——“ Ah ! but father, that was not in my power : She was deaf to all my intreaties: and that threw me into such despair, that, not able to wait any longer, I have this very morning had recourse to force.”——‘ That was really bad, if it could have been avoided ; but, as you would not have forced her, if she would have complied willingly, that alters the case very much in your favour, and perhaps she put you to that trouble, only to save the appearance of her own virtue, and if so, you have both acted right, and there is no harm done, provided the affair is not disclosed.’

“ O, father, that is the thing ; I was afraid of that ; as her husband had always been a father to me, and all my future hopes depended on him. I so greatly dreaded her telling him, that to prevent it, as soon as I had enjoyed her, I cut her throat.”

‘ Murder ! O fie ; it is an heinous crime : blood calls for blood : your case is terrible.’——“ I feared so, father ; but I depended on your tenderness ; as I did not think it reasonable, that I should have all the pleasure of the crime, and you only the trouble of forgiving, I stripped her of *these* jewels, which give me leave to offer you.”

‘ You are a prudent man, my son ; I thought you would act with discretion. I accept the jewels ; as a peace-offering to the *hol'y church*, for your sins ; and as the value of them (indeed they are costly gems) proves the sincerity of your repentance. I shall not hesitate to pronounce your sins forgiven.’

‘ * For though adultery is a great sin, and, in this case, aggravated by rape and incest, yet, as you
‘ say,

* See the casuistical Divinity of the Jesuits throughout.

‘ say, it was not because she was the wife of another man, and especially your brother, that you desired her, but merely as she was a beautiful woman, therefore the adultery and incest come in but by accident ; and then as you ravished her only because she would not comply, the sin of the rape is certainly hers, as I said before ; for, if I force a man to commit a crime, I am guilty of that crime, and not he : And again, though murder is a most heinous sin, yet as you killed her not merely to indulge a murderous intent, but to prevent her discovering your having forced her, and foruining you, the intention quite alters the nature of the fact, and makes it but self-preservation, which is the first law of nature. And lastly, as you took the jewels, not with a design to rob her, but to offer them to the church, and accordingly have brought them, that conclusion sanctifies the whole action, and makes your peace with Heaven.

‘ For know, my son, that crimes which respect *man only*, as in your case, rape, adultery, incest, murder, and robbery, though bad in themselves, ’tis true, yet are a pleasure to the church to forgive to a faithful and penitent son, *who believes all her doctrines, and pays due obedience to her clergy, the vicegerents of God on earth, the receivers of her revenues, and dispensers of her fortune and vengeance ; to whom all earthly power is subservient, who are the kings of kings, and lords of the world.*—This, my son, is the doctrine of our holy church, as delivered by the most learned fathers of our order, in the belief of which you will be safe from all the powers of hell : do what you will, while you pay faith and obedience to the church, she will pardon all your sins:—

When he had concluded his instructions, with this pious exhortation, and sealed his absolution with a blessing, the purified saint arose, and said, ‘ Holy father, thou hast set my soul at ease, with regard to *hereafter*, but still I fear for this world.

‘ It

‘ It unfortunately happened, that I was seen in the fact by a servant who escaped me, or I would have charmed her silence too ; and now I apprehend she will inform my brother.’---‘ This is unlucky, most unlucky (replied the priest) I know not what to advise ; I am utterly at a loss : If you should prevent her malice, and accuse her of the fact.’---‘ Oh, but father, the rape ; there may be appearances of that, which would disprove my charge against a woman.’
 ‘ Mistake me not, my son, I did not advise any such thing ! Heaven forbid that I should advise to bear false witness against an innocent life : I am utterly at a loss.’---‘ Suppose, father, I should strive to prevent my fears, by taking off my brother, as I cannot find her : this is the only way to make me easy ; ha, father ; is not that an happy thought ? I wish it had occurred sooner, and then I should have given you but the one trouble.’---

‘ Why, truly, son, the dead neither make nor receive discoveries ; and self-preservation will certainly justify any thing, as I have said before : but I must not advise you, your own genius is ready, and can improve an hint ; I must know nothing, till the affair is done ; all I can say, is, that work unfinished had better never have been begun.

‘ Adieu, my son, my blessing waits on all your undertakings. But be sure to hold the indulgent mercy of the church in grateful remembrance.’

The officer went away, happy in having lightened the burthen that was upon his conscience, and big with the pious project of making the murder of his brother the first fruits of his regeneration. He was the last *penitent* of that morning, and as soon as he was gone, his ghostly director retired to mortify his appetite in the refectory of his convent.

C H A P. IX.

The father's rage, on bearing that his penitent had secreted some of the jewels. The officer is pursued by his brother to the convent, whither he flies for sanctuary. His reception from the father, and the terms of their reconciliation. The father sends away the judge in a fright. The officer is received into the society.

THE great value of the jewels, which the officer had presented to my master, took up so much of his thoughts, that as soon as he had finished his collation, he retired to his cell, to meditate on the farther advantages he might make of his affair,

While he was in this pleasing employment, another ecclesiastic entered, to acquaint him with the murder and robbery of the judge's wife, and among other particulars of the story, said that her crucifix, thought to be the richest in *lay possession* in all *Peru*, had been taken from her.—‘That crucifix!’ (exclaimed my master starting, for he knew it well, and had long paid his devotion to it, and now to be *cheated* thus of it when he thought it so *justly* his due, provoked him almost to madness) ‘That crucifix taken too!’ ‘Damned! murderous! deceitful villain! villain on all sides! but I will be revenged!’

The other priest understood not what he meant, and was just going to enquire, when in rushed the captain all agliss. ‘O father! father!’ (said he, as soon as he could speak) ‘sanctuary, sanctuary! my brother is at the gate, with all the officers of justice!’—At this the father grinned an insulting smile, and beckoning to the other priest to withdraw. ‘Wretch (said he) ‘thou sacrilegious wretch! how could’st thou dare to enter these holy walls, violated by thy guilt?’ ‘Didst thou not fear the fate of *Ananias* and *Sapphira*?—As thou didst deceive me, with thy feigned penitence,

'nitence, and hast lied to the Lord, in concealing what
'thou hast most justly devoted to him, I revoke the
'absolution I gave thee, and will deliver thee to justice, to receive the punishment due to thy crimes.
'These holy walls afford no sanctuary to sacrilege!'

The poor criminal stood confounded at the reproaches which he dared not interrupt, though he could not comprehend the cause or meaning of them. At length, when the priest had exclaimed himself out of breath, the trembling wretch replied, 'O father! what can have kindled thy wrath against me; I have committed no crime, since thy absolution purged my soul! I was only going towards my brother's house, when I met him, and the servant with him, with all the officers of justice, in search of me, on which I fled directly to you for sanctuary.'—'I grant no sanctuary to sacrilege.'—'What sacrilege, O father?'—'The crucifix, deceitful wretch! Where is thy sister's crucifix? Hast thou not defrauded the church of her due? Didst thou not say, that thou tookest thy sister's jewels, only to make a peace-offering for thy sins, and then to secrete, thus, the most valuable part of them! *This is defrauding the labourer of his hire!* This is defrauding the church of her rights, without making the proper compensation! And what can be greater sacrilege?'

Just at these words, a knocking at the gate awoke the *penitent* from his amaze, and made him apprehend that he had not a minute to lose; he therefore, with the readiest presence of mind, replied,—'The crucifix, father! you astonish me! did not I give it to you.'—And then putting his hand into his bosom, and pulling out with a look of surprize, he reached it to him,—'Forgive, O father (said he) the crime of inadvertency; I meant not to have kept it from you, but only overlooked it, in my confusion! accept it! accept all I am master of, and save my life.'

'Son (replied the father, softening his voice, and taking the crucifix) I am glad thou was not *intentionally* guilty of so unpardonable an offence! I believe
'and

‘and accept thy excuse. Be comforted, therefore, my son, thy sins are forgiven.’—‘O! but, father, the officers of justice’—‘What officers, what justice dares attempt to shew her face within these walls? Thou art my penitent, I have absolved thee, and will defend thee. Sit down, and compose thy spirits, while I repel this bold intrusion on the peace and privilege of these holy walls.’

Saying thus, the father went to the gate of the convent, where stood the judge, displaying the guilt of the fugitive to the holy fathers, to engage them to refuse him sanctuary, and give him up to justice. But my master soon stopped him. ‘Cease (said he, with a low voice, and downcast, meditative look) disturb not the peace of these holy walls. The man you seek is *my* penitent. He has made satisfaction to the church, and reconciled himself to Heaven. I come this moment from giving him the seal of absolution. Disturb not the rapture of his soul that is now joining with the angelic choirs, in the hymns of joy raised in heaven for his repentance. Depart in peace.’

‘How, father (exclaimed the judge) can a wretch, guilty of such crimes, so soon have made his peace! he has deceived you, father; he has not told you half his guilt: rape, incest, adultery, and murder! Can *they* be thus forgiven? So easy pardons but encourage vice.’——‘And who art thou, presumptuous man! (replied the father, raising his voice, and putting on an air of authority) and who art thou, that darest thus to call the power of God’s holy Church in question? What, faith or rather what *heresy* has taught thee this presumption? Dost thou measure the divine authority of our unerring tribunal by the weak rules of thy blind law? Are not the keys of Heaven ours; and have we not the power to loose as well as bind? But I shall not argue more with thee *here*; there is a tribunal proper for such *opinions* as thine; there try if thy knowledge of the laws will justify thy heresies; there thou art not a judge.’

The

The first mention of heresy had struck such a terror into the heart of the poor Judge, that he was for some moments unable to reply. At last, recollecting himself a little, ' I submit, O father (said he) I am
' no heretic ; I have no *opinions* but what I learn
' from the holy church, whose power I acknowledge
' in all its divine plentitude.'—' 'Tis well (replied
' the priest) 'tis well ; depart in peace, and to-mor-
' row I will visit thee, and examine the state of thy
' conscience.'

The judge then making a profound reverence, with- drew without a murmur, and the triumphant father returned to his penitent. ' My son (said he) thine
' enemies are defeated. Thy rest is secure *here*. But
' such is their power, and so strong the general ab-
' horrence that pursues thy *late* guilt, that it will
' not be safe for thee ever to leave this sanctuary.'—
' O father, must I be confined for ever here ?'—I
' said not so, my son : there is a way for thee to go
' in triumph out, above the power of thy present
' persecutors.'—' O name it, father.'—' Take
' our vows. Heaven has blessed thee with a fertile
' genius, and steeled thy soul with fortitude. These
' talents must not be buried, an account will be re-
' quired of them ; and where can they be put to
' proper use, except in the service of the donor, in
' his church ? there they will raise thee to that rank
' and power, which thou seeest us enjoy. I see thou
' yieldest. Resist not the motions of the holy spirit.
' I receive thee into the fold. I salute thee, brother.
' From this moment of thine election, mayest thou
' date thy entrance into the highest honours of this
' world. The day approaches, when thy military
' knowledge and valour may also be called into prac-
' tice. Great events are ripening in the womb of time !'
—' I yield, O father (replied the penitent) I receive
' thine offer with due submission and respect ; and
' from this moment dedicate my valour, skill, and
' every power of my soul and body to the implicit
' service of thine holy order.'—' It is the hand

‘ of Heaven that leads thee, no longer son, but brother. I will go and acquaint our brethren with thy *miraculous* conversion and election. Thou hast no more to do but to make thy will, and bequeath all thy wealth to our order.’—‘ *Bequeath*, my father, must I die ?’—‘ But to the world, brother, to live with us.’—‘ But I have nothing to bequeath.’—‘ Leave that to us. Do you only give all your fortune, in the hands of your brother, to our society, in consequence of your admission ; and let us find that fortune.’ I go. The bell rings for *vespers*. I shall send our notary to you ; and when that is done, we will restore our exhausted spirits with a slight repast in the refectory, where I will introduce thee to our brethren.’

In a word, all things were executed, and the new brother admitted in proper time into the order, of which he has since arisen to be one of the brightest ornaments. And the judge, to avoid the imputation of heresy, which his *implied* doubt of the church’s sanctuary had given my master the hint of, was glad to pay half his wealth to the society, as the fortune of his pious brother.

Soon after this affair was thus happily compleated, my master, that he might openly shew his adoration of *me* to the world, had made me into a crucifix, in which shape I was fastened to his *rosary*, and there publicly received that adoration from his knee, which before was paid me only in the heart.—A repetition of all the occurrences I saw in the service of this master would be unnecessary, as the two I have related give a general idea of them.

C H A P. X.

CHRYSALE changes his service, and embarks for Europe in an English man of war. The cause and manner of his coming that way. The occurrences of his passage. On his arrival in England, he is sent by his master to settle some mistakes in the voyage.

I WAS heartily sick of such a scene, when the time came for sending me into these parts of the world, where scarcity enhances my value, and makes my power more extensive. There being a war between *Spain* and *England* at that time, about a liberty of cutting Sticks upon a desert shore, it was necessary to secure a safe passage for the treasure, by establishing a right understanding with the commander of an *English* man of war, which was cruising in those seas. It fell to my lot to go on this errand in the shape of a doubloon, into which I was cast, to save the profanation which a crucifix must suffer in the hands of heretics.

There was some little address requisite to conduct this affair with the captain, in such a manner as to keep it a secret from his officers, to gain all of whom would have been too expensive; besides that he would never trust his *sacred* honour to the fidelity of so many. But this was readily adjusted. The refinements of modern politeness having softened the natural ferocity of a state of war, and admitting an intercourse of courtesy between parties who profess to seek each other's destruction, the *Spanish* governor sent out a boat, with his compliments to the *English* captain, with a large supply of fresh provisions, fruits, wine, &c.

This necessarily produced a return of civility from the well-bred captain; and in this intercourse were the terms of his connivance settled, as the seal of which I was delivered to him, among a very large number of my fellows, who honourably, punctual to his promise, at
the

the appointed time, sailed away from that station, in quest of some ships of the enemy's which he expected to meet elsewhere, and did not return till the Spanish treasure was beyond his reach.

As this was a compliment of great consequence to the Spaniards, the captain had been so handsomely considered for it, that his desires were satisfied, and he only wished to be safe at home, to enjoy the wealth he had so happily acquired. Often would he take me out (for the beauty of my new impression had struck his eye, and gained me the honour of being kept in his purse) often, I say, would he take me out of his purse, and gazing on me till his eyes watered, 'O thou end of all my toils and dangers! (would he say) thou crown of all my hopes! now I have obtained thee I am content! Let others seek that phantom glory, I have in thee the more solid reward, for which I always fought, nor shall any thing tempt me to hazard being separated from thee.' A resolution which he had an opportunity of shewing in all its strength a few days after, when a ship appeared, which he thought to be a Spanish man of war.

As ours was a ship of force, and all the officers (except the captain) were very poor: and as the Spanish ships are always richly laden with treasure in those seas, the crew was in the highest spirits at this sight, and made every thing ready to attack her, with the most eager alacrity. But the case was quite different with the captain. He was now as rich as he desired, and dreaded the loss of that wealth which he had so long laboured for. He, therefore, retired into his cabin, while the lieutenants were clearing ship, and taking me out of his purse, with a look of tenderness that brought the tears in his eyes. 'And shall I hazard the loss of thee (he cried) the object, the reward of a life of toil and danger? Shall I sacrifice the only good of life to that chimera, honour? to that bubble lighter than air, and more variable than the wind, the interest of my country? What is honour without wealth? What is a country to him who has nothing in it? Let the poor fight for money, I have enough? let the

' the ambitious fight for glory, I despise the empty name. Let those who have a property in their country fight for it, I have none, nor can have, nor any of its blessings, without thee ; and therefore will not venture thy loss for any such vain considerations.'

As soon as he had formed this prudent resolution, he clasped *me* to his heart, kissed me, and returned me into his purse, just as the lieutenant came in, to tell him, they could now *make* the ship, which must be vastly rich, she was so deep in the water. My master made no reply, but, taking the telescope in his hand, he went upon the quarter-deck, and viewing her for some time, with great apparent earnestness, ' You are all mistaken (said he) in that ship : rich indeed ! and so she may remain for us. That ship is a first-rate man of war by her size : And as for her depth in the water, she is only brought down by her guns, which are fifty-two pounders at least. *Put about* the ship, and make all sail possible from her. I am answerable for his majesty's ship committed to my care, and will not sacrifice her against such odds. Her weight of metal would blow us out of the water. Beside, I have a packet on board, and must not go out of my way : *about ship*, and away directly, I say.'

The officers stood aghast at this speech, that disappointed all their golden hopes. They urged, they beseeched, they remonstrated, that it was impossible she could be what he said : they insisted that the colour of her sails, and the heaviness of her going, proved her to be a ship of trade that had been long at sea ; and as for her bulk, it only encouraged them to hope she would prove the better prize, as all the ships that carry the treasure are very large ; that they had observed they *wronged* her so much, they could go round her if they pleased ; and begged only that they might be permitted to take a nearer view of her, which they were confident would prove her to be what they said. They alledged the opportunity of making all their fortunes, the honour, the interest of their country. They begged, swore, stormed, and wept ; but all in vain. The captain

captain had taken his resolution ; and would vouchsafe no other answer than a repetition of what he had said before, ' That *he* was accountable for his majesty's ship, and would not hazard her, to gratify them : beside, the delay of the packet he had on board, might be of worse consequence than the taking of such a ship, (should she even be what they said, though he was *certain* to the contrary) would make amends for. And that, as to going nearer to her, the length of her guns would enable them to drive every shot through and through his ship, at a distance that his could never reach her from ; though, if they should be mad enough to engage her, his *small* shot could never pierce such mountains of timber as her sides were barricadoed with.' And so, as his power was absolute, they were obliged to submit, and *off he steered*.

It is impossible to describe the distraction which this affair threw our ship into. The officers acted all the inconsistent outrages of madness. The men chewed the *quid* ; damned their eyes and limbs for their bad luck, and went to work as usual ; while several poor sick wretches, whose spirits had been so raised by the hopes of such a prize, that they had forgot their complaints, and exerted all their strength, to assist in the engagement, now sunk under the weight of the disappointment ; and crawled back many of them to die in their hammocks.

But the captain had carried his point, and regarded nothing else : though indeed he was somewhat disconcerted a few days after, when he learned from another ship, that she really was a *register* ship of immense value, and so weakened by hard weather and sickness, that she could not have attempted any resistance, but had prepared to *strike* the moment she saw us. This information added such a fuel to the rage that inflamed the officers before, that all intercourse between them and their captain was entirely broke off, so that *I* became his sole companion.

This lasted all the while we were at a distance from *England* ; but, as we drew near home, the captain's
stiffness

stiffness began to bend, and he made several advances to a reconciliation and general amnesty, as he could not but feel some apprehensions for his conduct from his superiors. But all was in vain. The thought of returning in poverty, instead of that wealth which he had disappointed them of, kept up their resentments, and they determined to complain, if only for the satisfaction of revenge.

This convinced my master, that methods must be taken to obviate their attempts, or he might run a greater hazard at home than he had intended to avoid abroad. He therefore prudently concluded, that the same argument which had been so powerful with himself, would be the most effectual to vindicate what he had done with others, and that it would be better to share the spoil, than risk the loss of all.

For this intent, as soon as he arrived in England, he took *me* from his purse once more, and looking earnestly at me for some moments, ‘ We must part, (said he with a sigh) we must part ! but I hope to good purpose. Thou only wast the cause of that conduct which now gives me fear : exert therefore thy influence equally, where I now send thee, and thou wilt excuse my fault if it is one.’ Tears, at the thought of losing me, here choaked his utterance. He gave me a last kiss, and, sent me directly away, in company with a considerable number more to mediate his peace.

C H A P. XI.

The good consequences of a right understanding between certain persons. CHRYSAL'S reflections on his first seeing the public offices in LONDON. His master visits a gentleman, who gives the vehemence of his rage against certain abuses, and gives himself a violent slap on the face. The necessity of decency, and the methods of supporting it, instanced in the history of a pretty fellow.

AS the delicate nature of this transaction required some address, he entrusted the management of it to his purser, who had convinced him, by many instances of his sagacity in the methods of obtaining an influence over the great.

As soon as my new master arrived in London, his first care was to execute the commission for which we had been given to him ; but the person, to whom his application was to be made, happening to be out of town for a few days, that he might not lose any time, he proceeded to settle some affairs of his own ; in the course of which I had an opportunity of seeing into some parts of the secrets of his mysterious business.

The professed motive for his coming to town, was to settle his own, and pass his captain's accounts, between which there was a connection not necessary to be known to any other ; for though my late master did not think it consistent with his dignity to be too familiar with his officers, and generally slighted their opinion, if only to shew his own superiority and keep them at a proper distance, with him and his purser the case was quite otherwise, the best understanding always subsisting between them, and every affair being concerted with the greatest harmony, to their mutual advantage : an agreement, which, besides the comfort and convenience of it to themselves, had this happy influence over the rest of the ship's company, that it kept

kept them, if not easy, at least quiet, from all murmurings, and complaints of bad provisions, short weights, and such-like *imaginary* grievances, which the restless temper of seamen is too apt to make the cause of much trouble to the purser, and disturbance to the captain, when these happen not to agree between themselves. But, as the contrary was the case here, their common interest animated the assiduity of my master, and made him go directly to the several offices and contractors, with whom his business lay, to prepare every thing in proper order for public inspection.

On my first going to these public offices, every thing gave me pleasure. There was such an appearance of regularity in all the proceedings, of ease and affluence in the officers, that I could not help saying to myself, "Happy state, whose meanest servants are gentlemen! whose business is reduced to a system, above danger of confusion or abuse!" But a nearer view shewed these things in another light. The first person my master went to, was the gentleman who supplied him with those kinds of cloathing for the seamen, which are by these merry poor fellows emphatically called *slops*. As he was, ~~just~~ going to dinner, my master accepted of his invitation, and sat down with him. A round or two of loyal toasts to the success of the navy, and continuance of the war, having washed down their fare and refreshed their spirits after the fatigue of a full meal, they proceeded to business. "I come, Sir, (said my master) to settle the accounts of the last cruise. Here it is: you see most of the articles have gone off pretty well: but I must tell you, that you are more obliged to some of your friends for that, than you are aware of perhaps; for if I had not prevailed on the captain, to let the alehouse-keepers, and gin-women come on board, and keep the slop-keepers off, when the men received their pay, on going out, you would have had but a black list of it. But, by this management, the fellows spent all their money in drink, and then necessity drove them to me for cloaths."

"Have

'Here is to the captain's good health (answered the other) and that I may soon see him at the head of the navy: I am very much obliged to you and him, and shall consider your friendship properly. But is there no way of preventing those pedlars from intruding thus upon us? I am resolved I will try: I believe I can make an interest (you understand me) that will procure me an order to exclude them: at least, if I cannot do that, I will insist on raising my terms; for every branch of business is now so loaded with presents and perquisites, that there is scarce any thing to be got. A man who goes to a public office to receive money, runs the gauntlet through so many of them, that if he does not make up his accounts in a very masterly manner indeed, he will have but little to shew for his pains, in the end.'——'Very true (replied my master). I have had experience of what you say, this very morning. You know it is some years since I have been in town before: I was therefore quite surprised at the gay appearance of every clerk in the offices. Our midshipmen, on the paying off a ship, are nothing to them: So! thought I to myself: this is very well! Such fine gentlemen as these will never stoop to take the little perquisites which their shabby predecessors were so eager for: They cannot want them. Accordingly, as soon as I had done my business, I was preparing to make a handsome speech, and a leg, and so walk off; but I was soon undeceived; and found, to my no small astonishment, that, if the case was altered, it was no way for the better for me; the present fine gentlemen being to the full as rapacious as the former shabby fellows, and with this addition to the evil, that their expectations were raised, in proportion to their appearance, so that they must have a crown, where the others were satisfied with a shilling.'

'And how can it be otherwise (returned the other) while the principals set them such an example of

extravagance, and enforce obedience to it in the manner they do: for though their own exorbitant salaries enable them to live with the luxury of aldermen at home, and make the appearance of courtiers abroad, how can they think, that their hackney underlings shall be able to change their drefs with the court, and appear with all the precise scppery of pretty fellows, if they have not clandestine means of getting money: and that this is the case, I can give you an instance not to be contradicted.

Perhaps you may remember a little boy, that ran about the house here, when you were in the town last; his mother was servant to my first wife; you cannot forget black-eyed Man: who was the father is nothing to my story, but I took care of the boy. When he grew up, I thought the best thing I could do for him, was to get him into one of the public offices, for he was too soft for my own business, and this I imagined would sharpen him, and 50*l.* a year keep him from being an expence to me. Accordingly I got him admitted as an additional clerk, in this busy time; and that his appearance should not shame my recommendation, I added a *London-made* suit to his country wardrobe, which I thought good enough for him to wear every day.

Well; thus equipped, to the office he went, as good looking a lad as ever came from a 12*l.* academy in *Yorkshire*, which had been the height of his education. But I soon found that I had been out in my reckoning, for going with him to introduce him to the head-clerk, whom I had before spoken properly to, in his behalf, I found the whole office in deep mourning, which, as it had been ordered only by the court, and was to hold but for a fortnight longer, I had never thought of dressing him in; but I soon found that I had not a proper opinion of the consequence of the place.—For the head-clerk gave me a friendly hint, that it was expected, that all the clerks in his

‘ his majesty’s offices should shew the decent respect of conforming to the dress of the court, on these solemn occasions.—I could not help exclaiming, I believe a little too shortly, What, Sir! upon a salary of 50 *l.* a year?’—‘ Sir, (replied he) no body is forced to take that salary; and they who do not like the rules of the office, are at liberty to leave it:’ and then turned off upon his heel.—‘ I beg your pardon, Sir (said I, seeing my error) it was an oversight of mine; but it shall be amended.’—‘ The sooner the better, Sir (answered he) for his lordship will be in the office to-morrow, and he must not see any thing so irregular; and, pray, Sir, turning to the lad) get that fleece on your head shorn a little (his hair flowed down, in modest ringlets, on his shoulders) and strive to appear something like a gentleman.

‘ I saw it was in vain to say any thing, and so took the boy away with me; and had him equipped, the next day, in all the fashionable trappings of woe, with his hair shorn indeed, and tied up in a bag, by a *French* barber, for I would not stand for a trifle when my hand was in, and then went with him myself, being desirous to see how he would be received in his new appearance; but alas! I had forgot that indispensable article of a gentleman’s dress, a sword, which I was therefore obliged to send out for directly. In a fortnight’s time, the order for the court’s going into second mourning put me to the same expence over again; for the rules of decency were not to be dispensed with; and then, in a month after, it was as necessary to trim his light-grey frock with a silver edging of coxcomb, that he might not appear worse than his fellows; all which, with many other as necessary *et cætera*’s by the end of the first quarter, consumed his year’s salary.

‘ This enraged me to that degree, that I was going to take him away directly; but the boy had by this time got some insight into the ways of the place, and prevented me, by saying, that if I

‘ would try, but for another quarter, we was satisfied that his perquisites would more than defray all such expences ; and so I find they do ; for though he is now as smart well dressed a young fellow as any about town, he has never since troubled me for a shilling : nay, more than all this, he assures me, there are some of his fellow clerks who keep footmen and horses, and have routs and concerts at their houses, as regularly as people of the first rank ; and all by the perquisites of a place of fifty pounds a year.

‘ Now all those perquisites are draw-backs upon us, as I said before, we cannot carry on the business on the usual terms, if we do not bring up our loss in the quality of the goods, for it would be absurd to expect, that we should lower our living to let such fellows run away with the profit of our industry. In short, my wife’s chariot shall not be put down, nor will I deny myself a bottle of claret to give you or any other friend, to save all the seamen in Britain from perishing with cold : Charity begins at home ; I will insist upon having those pedlars prevented from interloping upon our trade, and so, Sir, my service to you.’

C H A P. XII.

CHRYSALE’s master gives his friend some hints, that make him lower his note. An uncommon piece of generosity returned more politely than could be expected from the parties. An odd story of an unfashionable steward. The success of CHRYSALE’s mediation in favour of his late master.

MY master had heard him out, tho’ not with the greatest patience, and now taking the opportunity of his stopping to drink, ‘ All this may be true (said he) and what you propose might possibly have been done, and with the effect you desire,

‘ fire,

fire, some time ago : but matters are altered a good deal, at present, both among the gentlemen of the navy, and here too, as I am told : and indeed, in respect to this affair, those things are made so infamously bad, and rated so high, that no body can speak in the defence of them : nay, it even goes almost against my own conscience to utter them ; for only think with yourself what a barefaced imposition it is, to make a poor wretch pay seven shillings for a coarse rotten jacket, when even a *Jew* shall sell him a sound one, and of finer stuff, for four and six-pence ; and every thing else at the same rate. In short, this point is so overstrained, that it will probably overturn the whole trade, in the end ; for several of the captains are so provoked at it, that they take every method they can, to prevent the men from taking up any thing from us ; particularly that which I hinted before, of keeping off the alehouse-keepers, and such people, and encouraging stop-sellers to come on board, when the men are paying, by which means they buy good comfortable cloaths, at half the price of your rotten trash : Indeed one of them went so far as to buy in a parcel of good shoes, at his own expence, and made a present of a pair a-piece to all his *top-men*, when they were going out on a cruize, as they had spent their money, and could not buy for themselves, and our shoes were so bad, that the first time they went aloft with them, after they were wet, the rattling tore them all to pieces, so that it was a common thing to see a man come down bare-footed, who had gone up with a new pair of shoes on. Though it is but just to comfort you, with an account of the return which he met for his kindness, which was no less than a *round robin* * to the lords of the admiralty, for his refusing to let them go ashore, and spend

D 3.

* The name that seamen call their complaints against their captain ; it is taken from the manner of their signing them, which is in a circle, so that there is no knowing who signs first.

‘ their money in the same manner, the next time they came in.’

‘ And such a return may their officiousness always meet (replied the other) for meddling with matters which do not concern them : cannot they be content with their own large gains, without interfering to hinder others ? But I see how it is : the spirit of patriotism has got into them too, forsooth, and they must be shewing their regard to the public ! What an evil effect will the bad example of one man have ! There was a time, when they would not have dared to do this. To say the truth, my friend, this is not the first alarm we have received on this head ; though what to do about it we cannot tell : indeed, I believe we must e’en mend our hands ; which, as half a loaf is better than no bread, hard as it is upon us, is preferable to losing the trade quite ; in the mean time, I am obliged to you and your captain for your friendship, and hope you will accept of *this* return.’ They then proceeded to settle their accounts, which as soon as they finished, my master took his leave, and went on with his business, which was exactly of the same nature, and concluded in the same way, with every person whom he dealt with.

As soon as these transactions were ended, his next care was to pass his captain’s accounts, which he also succeeded in, without any difficulty, though for this he was more indebted to the chance of a lucky minute than he had apprehended. For they were no sooner closed, than an affair happened that gave a turn entirely new, to the whole course of business, in that channel.

When the accounts of the next captain came to be examined, the clerk glancing his eye cursorily over them, in the usual manner, on looking at the amounts. ‘ There must be some mistake here,’ (said he) — ‘ How so, Sir, (said the captain, who was present) let me look at the account, if you please.’ ‘ No, Sir, there is no mistake, I believe.’ — ‘ Pray where do you mean ?’ — ‘ In the casting it up, Sir,

'Sir, (answered the clerk) you see the amount is made to be but 800*l*.' — 'Nor should it be more.' (replied the captain) I summed up the account myself, and these figures are of my own writing.' — 'How can that possibly be, Sir, (returned the clerk in a surprise) but 800*l*. for all the repairs, wear and tear, of a man of war on such a station, for four years! I suppose then, Sir, the ship had a thorough repair going out, and wants the like now! to be sure it can be done better, and cheaper here than abroad, and therefore you were in the right to bring her home to get it.' — 'Not at all, Sir (added the captain) that was not the case: she had no thorough repair going out, and is come home in better order than she went, as this return of the officers of the yard shews.' — 'Good God! Sir, how do you manage?' — 'To the best of my judgment, Sir; I laid out nothing but what I thought necessary, and I charged nothing but what I laid out: I mean not to arraign the conduct of others; I only speak for myself. In these cases, I look upon a man as a steward to the public; and I should think it as great dishonesty to betray, or break that trust, as to wrong a private person.'

This speech was heard with astonishment, and returned with a cold compliment, as it came too home to many, to meet general approbation; however, the affair necessarily had an effect not very agreeable to some present: for, the next captain's accounts arising to near four times the sum of the last, such an immediate precedent made the difference so glaring, that it was impossible to avoid putting a stop to them, and so he was mulcted his whole four years pay; tho' ours, which had been still higher, had gone off smoothly, and without the least remark.

My matter having concluded this affair so happily, proceeded next on the great cause of his coming to town, in which, with our assistance, he laboured so successfully, that the captain's *mistake* met only a gentle reprimand.

I here came into the possession of a new master, and immediately after changed my *Spanish* appearance for the fashion of the country, and, in the shape of a *guinea*, entered into the most extensive state of sub-lunary influence, becoming the price of every name, that is respected under heaven.

C H A P. XIII.

CHRYSA L explains some farther properties of his nature. He changes his appearance for the mode of the country ; and enters into the service of a noble lord. The sagacity of Mr. Poundage, and his address in business.

I AM now entering upon a stage, where the scenes are so various, and so quickly changed, that it will require your strictest attention to keep pace with my relation. But to make this the easier to you, and to disencumber your surprise from doubts, at my repeating the lives of persons, in whose possession I have been but a few moments, I must premise to you that our knowledge is very different from that of men. I have told you, that we know all things *intuitively*, without the trouble, delay and errors of *discourse* or reasoning. I must now further inform you, that this intuition extends not only to the present face of things, but also has a retrospect to the whole series of their existence, from its first beginning : the concatenation between cause and effect being so plain to our eyes, that let us but see any one event of the life of a man, and we immediately know every particular that preceded it.

As to *futurity*, indeed, it is not yet determined how far forward we can look into that ; some allowing us to have the same power of *foresight* as we have of *retrospect* ; which was the opinion that supported the credit of oracles in former days. But that notion is now exploded, and men argue, that our *foresight* tends only to *natural* causes and effects : but, in the

the actions of man, his *free-will* so often breaks that order, that it is impossible for us to know this moment how he will act the next, from any observation of the past: and they think they prove their argument by this, that if spirits could fore-know all a man's actions, it would spare them the trouble of tempting him to any particular ones.—But this by the bye! for as I shall confine my narrative to matters already past; without ever foretelling any thing, it is not necessary for me to determine a question, that opens such a field for the guesses of the learned.—But to return to my story.

From the *Mint*, where I put on the shape of a guinea, I was sent to the *Bank*, where the pleasure I had felt at the beauty and convenience of my new figure was considerably cooled, at my being thrown into so large an heap, as took away all my particular consequence, and seemed to threaten a long state of inactivity, before it might come to my turn to be brought into action. But I soon found myself agreeably mistaken; and that the *circulation* there was too quick to admit of such delay: for I was that very day paid out to a noble lord, in his pension from the ministry.

It was about two in the afternoon, when I was brought to his lordship's levee, where the grandeur of his looks, and the magnificence of every thing about him, made me so pleased with my situation, that I thought I could be satisfied to fix my abode with him for some time.

He was just risen, and seated at the fire, leaning on a writing table covered with green velvet, on which lay some books open, and several letters which he had just broke the seals off, and was beginning to read, while a female servant, beautiful as *Hebe*, poured out his tea at a side-board, and a page like *Ganymede* handed it to him.

In this easy indifference he sat, casting an eye upon a book, or reading a paragraph in a letter, between every sip of his breakfast; when I was laid upon his table by his steward, with these words,——‘Two

'hundred, my lord'—'Two hundred (replied his lordship) the order was for five hundred!—'But, my lord, the butcher, the baker!—'What are these wretches to me! Is not my whole estate sufficient for them?'—'My lord, there is not a shilling to be got from your tenants, the times are so bad and the taxes so high! and an ounce of provisions could not be had.'—'Then you might have all fasted! I must have money for this evening; I am engaged in a party, and cannot be off.'—'My lord, your lordship's taylor desired me to speak to you; he is to appear before his commissioners to-morrow, and begs'—'What can I do, I would relieve him if I could, but I have not money for myself: I cannot, will not do without five hundred more this evening, get it where or how you will.'—'My lord, I was thinking to apply to Mr. Discount, the scrivener, but he said the last time, that he would lend no more on that estate, without the immediate power of cutting the timber.'—'Well, damn him, let him have it, tho' it will not be fit to cut these ten years; and, do you hear, get me a thousand-to-day.'—'A thousand, my lord! you said five hundred: I am afraid he will think a thousand too much!'—'Then he shall never have it; let me do as I will; do not I know, that the timber is worth twice as much this moment, if I could wait to set it to sale? I will not be imposed on by the rascal. I'll go myself to my neighbour Worthland directly; he is a man of honour, and will be above taking advantage, though I did oppose his election.'—'As your lordship pleases for that. But then, perhaps, Mr. Discount will call in all his money; if he saw you put yourself into other hands; besides, I am not certain that he will refuse, and therefore I should think it better to try him first; you may do this after. Though I must take the liberty to say, I should be sorry to see your lordship stoop to Sir John Worthland, after all the expence you have been at to give him trouble. For to be sure he would boast of it in the country, if it was only to make you look little, and prevent

‘ prevent your opposing him again.’—‘ *Why there may be something in that: and therefore see what is to be done with DISCOUNT; but I must have the thousand at any rate, five hundred of which give to poor Buckram, and bring me the other as soon as possible, for I am in haste to go out.*’——‘ Then your lordship had better sign this deed first, to save the time of coming back again, if he should do it.’——‘ *Aye; let me see it; there: and make haste.*’—(And then turning to his page) ‘ *reach me that paper, this pen is so good it tempts me to write a letter, while I wait for Poundage’s return.*’——And so humming a new tune, he went on with his breakfast, without the least concern.

You are so great a stranger to the ways of that part of the world which deals in money-matters, that you will be surprized when I tell you, that, while this Mr. *Poundage* brought me from the bank, he had called upon Mr. *Discount*, and brought him to his lord’s, to do his business.

But you must not imagine this was to lend his lordship money. Nothing less. It was only to appear as the nominal lender of his lordship’s own money, which *Poundage* had that very morning received from some of his tenants in the country; and which, if he could not bring it in better, he meant to replace with part of the price of the timber, which he was to buy in *Discount*’s name, who was a creature of his own.

So remarkable a transaction gave me a curiosity to take a view of *Poundage*’s life, the main lines of which I will just touch over, while you may think him gone for the money, and his lordship dressing for his engagement.

C H A P. XIV.

The history of Mr. Thomas Poundage. His lordship goes to his appointment. An evening's entertainment in high-life. CHRYSAL changes his service : his reflections on the ruling passion of the times.

MR. *Thomas Poundage* was the offspring of a gypsey, who had left him in the straw he was born on, in an old barn near his lordship's father's, his weakness and deformity making her not think him worth the trouble of carrying away.

The old lord himself happening to be the first who heard his cries, as he was riding by, took compassion on the little helpless wretch, and ordered him to be taken care of at his own expence, and not sent to the parish.

Such an uncommon instance of charity was immediately attributed to a tenderer motive : a suspicion, however injurious to his lordship, so advantageous to the *foundling*, that it doubled the care and attendance on him, and made him appear of such consequence, that Mr. *Thomas Poundage* himself, his lordship's steward, condescended to stand godfather for him, and gave him his own name. As master *Tommy* grew up, he shewed all the sharpness and cunning of his race, which old *Poundage* representing to his lord, as a capacity for learning, he was put to the best schools, and being of the same age with his lordship's eldest son, his present master, was settled as an humble companion and attendant upon him ; in which station, the pliancy of his temper soon gained him his master's favour, as his secrecy and discretion did his confidence ; no service appearing too difficult or mean for his undertaking, to please his master, especially in the mysteries of intrigue ; nor a look ever betraying his success.

These

These services naturally produced an intimacy, that opened to him all his master's secrets, and gave him such consequence with him, that upon the death of his father, old *Poundage* was *superannuated upon a pension*, and the place given to him, in which he had behaved himself so judiciously, that in about ten years he had amassed so large a fortune, as to be able to supply his master's wants (with the assistance of his own money sometimes) without the scandal of exposing them to any other: a service that amply recompensed, to his lordship's honour, whatever prejudice it may be supposed to do his affairs.

'Tis true, his supplanting his godfather and benefactor, old *Poundage*, had not met with the approbation of such as were not well acquainted with the world, and particularly, as the old gentleman, in his rage, had accounted for all his kindness to him, by owning a relation, which he had before strove to fix upon his lord, by many plain insinuations, though he now said he had long before revealed to his ungrateful son the secret of his birth.

However, if he had communicated this secret, our son of fortune had kept it so well, that he could now deny it with safety; nor had he profitted so little by his father's example, as to be moved with a suggestion that evidently appeared, however true it might be in itself, to spring at that time from resentment. And as he could not expect to reap any great advantage from being acknowledged for the spurious son of one who had many legitimate children to inherit his fortune, he thought it better to confirm the former opinion, by his flights of the claim of *Poundage*, and, since he must be the bastard of one of them, chuse the lord before his servant.

But to return to my master. He was dressed by that time *Poundage* came back with the money, when taking the five hundred for his own use, he went to his appointment.

As to the other five hundred, which he had ordered to be paid to his taylor, for fear of the wretch's applying to the lord himself, in his despair, *Poundage*

lemnity to his appearance, even beyond his declining years. This man wore out the prime of his life in indigence and hardships, till chance, by one successful stroke of his business, gave him such a fortune, as was deemed sufficient merit to deserve nobility, and entitle him to one of the first employments in the state.

Sudden elevation makes a weak head giddy, the plain, good-natured, chearful man, is lost in the solemn proud peer; who is harder of access than his sovereign, and seems to value himself on having all the hours he has spent in cringing to the great, repaid tenfold in attendance upon him. As to the business of this office, the whole system of human politics is in general such a jumble of blundering and villainy, that I can seldom bring myself to bestow a moment's notice on it, so can say no more of his, than that the little attention and less capacity he has for it, may most probably give just occasion for all the murmurings that are against him.——But this was not the motive of my pointing him to you. It was his infatuation to the love of play, which makes him hazard that wealth which he so long felt the want of, in hopes of acquiring more, though he has already more than he can enjoy.

This has been an unsuccessful night with him. Observe how stupified he looks at his loss! extend the view but a few moments farther, and see how he sits down in the common hall of the tavern, among servants and chairmen, insensible of the impropriety of such a place, and unable to order his servants to carry him home: nor is it improbable that the scene he has just quitted may remain so strongly on his imagination to-morrow, that he may write down the rules of the game he has been playing at, instead of the orders of his office, as he has done once before.

Next to him, you see a short, ruddy, chearful-looking man. That is one of the deplorable instances of the evil of this preposterous passion. With every advantage of rank, abilities and fortune, did that person

son set out in life. But alas! soon was the prospect of his future happiness and grandeur overcast! soon did gaming reduce him not only to a necessity of prostituting his abilities to the prejudice of his country, but also of descending to every iniquitous mystery of the art, to support his practice of it; for so bewitched is he to it, that he cannot desist, though he now can scarce get any person to play with him, his want of money and his skill in the whole art are so well known.

This has been a successful evening with him, as you may see by his extraordinary flow of spirits: not that his natural vivacity ever fails him in the worst reverse of fortune. He has won a considerable part of the great losses of the person we have just been taking notice of; and though he has many demands upon him for every shilling of it, yet far from thinking of paying one of them, he is this moment planning new scenes of pleasure to consume it all, chusing to let his creditors all be bankrupts, or even to compound with them as a bankrupt himself, rather than deny his appetites their full gratification.

It is impossible to convey a just notion of such a complicated character, by any description; I shall therefore just mention one or two of his actions, from which you may, in some measure, form a judgment of the whole.

Having a pressing occasion some time ago, for an hundred guineas, he applied to one of those necessary attendants of the Great, who at the moderate interest of five hundred *per cent.* are always ready to supply them with money to discharge their debts of honour. This friendly gentleman being well acquainted with the character of the borrower, made many scruples to comply with his interest, till at length he suffered himself to be prevailed upon conditionally, that if the principal and premium were not paid in a week, he should receive a guinea as a further gratuity then and every time after, that he should demand his money till it was paid. Accordingly, at the end of the week he made his demand,

mand, and, as he expected, received his guinea, from which time he took care to call upon him every second or third day till he had received his money more than twice told, thus in single guineas, for forbearance, always timing his applications, when he saw his debtor engaged in company with persons, before whom he would not even enter into an expostulation, for fear of having the affair known; so that as soon as he saw him approach, without waiting to be asked, he used to pull out his purse, and calling him to him, give him a guinea, to go and buy something for him; an errand the other sufficiently understood.

The constant repetition of this could not always escape observation, nor was the cause of it unsuspected by most of his acquaintance; some of whom happening to hint to him one evening, when wine had taken away all reserve, he, who was above being ashamed of any thing, honestly owned the whole transaction, and joined in the general laugh at his own folly: however, as the secret was now out, he resolved to submit to the imposition no longer; and the next time his friend came to wait upon him, instead of hurrying him away, as before, he publicly entered into a discussion of his demand, and, as he could not attempt to deny his having received more than double what he had lent, the debt was adjudged by the company to be sufficiently discharged, and he was literally sent off, without his errand.

This story shews only the levity and inconsiderateness of his temper, and the distresses in which they entangle him: but the following is of a blacker hue, and will prove, that he is capable of doing any thing to extricate himself from those distresses, and provide for the gratification of his passions.

Not very long ago a young gentleman, who had a military turn, collected the whole of his small fortune to purchase himself a commission in the army. Having lodged his money in the hands of his *agent*, who for the convenience of making use of it, and to enhance the price of his own trouble, was in no haste to dis-

patch

patch the affair, he made an excursion to the country town, in which this gentleman's seat was, and where he happened to be at that time.

As the hospitality of his temper made his house open to every stranger, who had the appearance of a gentleman, the young soldier soon became acquainted with him, and in return for the friendship for which he mistook the general affability of his conversation, and to display his own importance, told him his present situation, and the method he had taken to procure success to his hopes of a truncheon. His friend expressed the strongest approbation of his spirit, and encouraged his hopes, but told him that he had chosen the worst way of entering into the army, as the sum of money, which he had given the agent to purchase him only a pair of colours, applied properly to some of the persons in office, and backed by good interest, would not only procure him a cornetcy of horse, at present, which was of three times that value, but would also establish such an interest for him, as should greatly accelerate his rise to still higher promotions. Struck with such a promising prospect as this speech opened to him, the young gentleman answered, that he was sensible of the truth of what the other said, but that it was his unhappiness to have had no friend to direct him how to apply his money properly, much less to back him afterwards. 'That's very hard (replied his friend) I wish I had known you sooner.'—This hint was enough: the young gentleman, fired with such flattering hopes, flew directly to town, and, finding that his agent had not yet concluded the purchase for him, took his money out of his hands, and returning to the country, in the confidence of his heart, went and presented it to his friend, throwing himself entirely upon his patronage and protection.

It is probable, that, when this gentleman began the discourse, which gave occasion to this action, he meant no more by it, than to display his own judgment and interest without any farther design: but the sight of five hundred pounds was a temptation he could not resist.

refist. He therefore, with seeming surprise and reluctance, received the money, and took the young gentleman into his care.

For some time he fed him with hopes of immediate success; but his impatience beginning to grow troublesome, upon his return to town, for the winter, he gave him to understand, 'that he was obliged at his importunity:—that since he had undertaken to serve him, he would do it as soon as he could—but that he need not give himself the trouble of calling upon him any more, as he would receive sufficient notice of his success in the public papers.'—Saying which words, he left him. Thunder-struck at this speech, the young gentleman withdrew, and meeting one of his acquaintance, informed him of what had happened. This person who was perfectly acquainted with the gentleman's character, saw immediately into the whole affair, and explained the imposition to him. This made him mad; he returned directly to demand his money, but was denied admittance, nor would his letters even be received by the porter. His case was now desperate; while he had paid attendance upon his patron, he had exhausted his means of subsistence to the last mite, so that he now was in want of a morsel of bread. In this situation, a moment was not to be lost; and, luckily his despair suggested to him the only means that could possibly have procured him redress. He drew up a state of his case in a few words, and putting on the best suit of cloaths he had left, went the very next day to court, where in sight of his patron, he bent his knee to his sovereign, and presented it to him. Something particular in his air and manner struck the monarch's notice; he read the petition; and then reached it to this gentleman, in whose altered countenance he soon read the truth of the contents; turning therefore from him, with a look of ineffable reproof and contempt, he ordered the secretary at war to make out a commission for the young gentleman that very day, and from that hour has never held the other in the least degree of esteem,

esteem, or favour; but he is insensible to such disgrace, and while he can gratify his passions in the manner you see at present, cares not what the world thinks or says of him.

Opposite to him, at the other side of the table, observe an uncommonly large-boned bulky man: that is one of the instances of the insufficiency and weakness of human laws, which, striving to remedy one evil, often makes way for a greater.—That man is now advanced to the foremost rank of the military list, merely by *seniority*! A grievous abuse of that institution, which to prevent favour from advancing its minions over friendless merit, ordains, that no senior officer shall serve under his junior; but now, by the natural force of human perversion, this well-designed regulation is made a pretext for giving command to such as have no other claim to it, than (what should indeed incapacitate them) old age, and so keeping back the advance, and damping the ardour of youth.

As there is no man without some particular ambition, his has taken a turn which, perhaps, you may think the most remote from his profession of a soldier. Pictures! painting is the sole object of his admiration, the only knowledge he values himself upon. Tell him of a siege, or a battle, an attack, or a retreat, conducted with the greatest skill, and he hears you unmoved, nor will interrupt your account with a single question: but name *Rembrant* or *Titian*, and he immediately gives you a dissertation on their excellencies, and the difference of their schools! Tell him but of a sale of pictures, on the day fixed for a review, and, if he is forced to feign sickness to excuse his attendance in the field, he will be at it.

Such absurd passions are always the objects of artifice and imposition. An ingenious painter of this country, not very long since, whose works would have been a credit to the best of foreign schools, but were despised at home, bethought himself of a way to turn this person's foible to some advantage. He made some designs, landscapes and other drawings, in the manner of some of the greatest of the antient *Italian* masters, whose

whose names he marked upon the backs of them, in the characters of their times, and giving them *the cast* of age, made them up in an *Italian* chest, and, by the assistance of a captain of a ship, had them entered at the Custom-house, as directly from *Italy*, and consigned to a stranger; as from a friend there, to be disposed of in *London*.

The report instantly reached this lover of *virtu*, who was so ravished with the thought of gaining such a treasure, that he flew to the place, and, *being convinced by his judgment of the authority of them*, bought them all together for a very large sum, but far short of their *real* value, had they been disposed of by a person acquainted with it.

Though this success was very pleasing, and useful to the painter, he did not stop here. This person had some way taken a dislike to him, which he indulged, by running down his work. This therefore was an opportunity for revenge not to be missed. He let him boast of his acquisition in all companies, and display his judgment in proving them to be the genuine production of those great masters, by criticisms which none but a connoisseur could make: but then, as soon as the whole affair was so public, that there was no denying it, what does the incensed artist but produce the counterparts of them all, which he had kept for the occasion, so like as not possibly to be known asunder, and unravelled the whole affair, taking only care to keep himself clear of the law, by saying, that he had sold those things as of no value, at a very small price to a *Jew*?

This was a severe stroke! It overturned the only reputation which he had even an ambition of, and robbed him of a large sum of money beside, to recover which loss, and divert the chagrin of the whole deceit, he has recourse to play, which he follows with the eagerness you see.

But his is not the only absurd passion which strikes the notice of an accurate observer of mankind. The person on his right-hand was born in the first rank of the state, but by some unlucky mistake, the qualifications

cations which fell to his share belonged to one of the lowest classes of mechanics. While others of his rank are marshalling armies, and planning conquests, correcting the abuses or studying to rise upon the ruins of the state, his utmost ambition is to cut out a buck's skin to advantage, and be reckoned the best breeches-maker of his time. Harmless as such an humble turn may seem, it involves the noble artist in many whimsical distresses.

His passion for breeches-making is so strong, that he never sits near any person, but his hand is immediately, and unpremeditatedly, applied to his thigh, which he has no sooner stroked down two or three times, than he thinks he conceives the size and shape of it so exactly, that he can compleatly fit it, without the trouble of taking any other measure; and accordingly never fails to introduce a dissertation on the art, which he concludes with the demonstrative proof of his skill, of offering to make a present of a pair of his own making. The advantage of such an offer, and the pleasure of encouraging so illustrious a mechanic, make his present always accepted, so that he has generally the most business of any of the trade; though some accidents have happened, that have almost made him afraid to pursue such an indiscriminate method of soliciting custom.

Happening some time ago, in a very large company, to sit near a young gentleman, whose delicate complexion had brought him, though most unjustly, under a suspicion of indulging unnatural passions, he applied his hand to the gentleman's thigh, and began to feel it all over, to take measure of it, according to his custom. The gentleman, who was not ignorant of the imputation he lay under, and therefore was more quickly sensible of every thing that might possibly seem to allude to it, thought this application to his thigh was meant either to tempt or to insult him, for he had been informed that those wretches often make their infamous addresses in this manner, and was enraged at it to such a degree, that, forgetting all respect to the company present, and to the

the rank of his supposed lover, he felled the poor breeches-maker to the ground, and, starting from his chair, drew his sword, and would have run him through the body, had not his arm been happily seized by the gentleman who sat next to him.

It is not easy to describe the astonishment of the company at such an outrage, which they could attribute to nothing but phrenzy; but the gentleman soon deceived them: "Infamous, unnatural wretch!" (exclaimed he, as soon as rage permitted his utterance) "I'll make you know, that I am not an object for your brutal passions. I have exposed you here; but your infamy shall not be confined to this company; I'll publish it to all the world. Unhand me, gentlemen, and let me wash off the disgrace of such an attempt with the monster's blood! I'll gladly pay my own life as a forfeit to the defect of the law, that has provided no punishment for such odious crimes."——To the greater part of the company this speech was quite unintelligible, and only confirmed the suspicion of his madness; but one of them, who had observed the gentleman change countenance upon the noble mechanic's applying his hand to his thigh, soon cleared up the mystery, "I believe, Sir, (said he) you have been too hasty, and mistaken an intention not only harmless in itself, but generous also, for one of a very different nature! Have you any other reason for accusing his lordship of unnatural designs upon you, besides his laying his hand upon your thigh and feeling it?"——"No, Sir! but that I think enough! too much for him to offer, or me to bear; nor will I bear it."——"I do not pretend, Sir, to tell you what you must bear; but this I can tell you, that you have entirely and most injuriously, mistaken his lordship, who meant no more by that action which gave you such offence, than just to take your measure for a pair of breeches, which, if you had not been so hasty in your resentment, he would have made you a present of."——"Death, Sir, do
you

"you make a jest of me?"—His lordship, who had heard their discourse, and was by this time so far recovered of his fright as to be able to speak, interposed here, or the affair might probably have taken another turn. "No, indeed, Sir, (said he) he does not jest! I meant nothing more; and all the company present know, that I never had any passion in my life, but for breeches-making; and, if you apprehended any thing else, you were very much mistaken."

This speech, and the manner in which it was delivered, were not to be resisted. They disarmed the gentleman's rage instantly, and his only concern was how to make up the matter, so as to avoid the ridicule of such a mistake. He therefore told his lordship, that he was very sorry for his error, and hoped that he would attribute the consequence of it to that delicate sensibility, which every man of honour must have under such an apprehension. This was sufficient: his lordship, instead of harbouring resentment, was glad to get so easily rid of the affair; and to convince the gentleman, both of the sincerity of his reconciliation, and that he had no other design, than what he said, in the action that gave him the offence, he undertook to make him a pair of buck-skin breeches, only from the measure he had taken, that should fit him better than any he had ever worn in his life.

C H A P. XVI.

The character of a VIRTUOSO. The history of an HORNED COCK; with some curious philosophical remarks on cornuted animals.

OPPPOSITE to him sits one of those philosophers who build their pretensions to scientific fame, on making collections of the anomalous frolics of nature, without ever attempting to investigate the wisdom and power displayed in the regular process of her works. In the course of this study, a whimsical

sical adventure lately happened to the noble *Virtuoso* before us. A man that bought poultry round the country, to supply the markets of this great city, having got intelligence of his lordship's taste, resolved to turn it to his own advantage. He accordingly procured a most beautiful game-cock, and sawing off the spurs of another cock, that had very long ones, contrived to fix them firmly with wax on the head of this bird, on each side of the comb, the points turned backwards, and inclining from each other, like the horns of a goat, in such a manner, that they appeared to have grown naturally there.

As soon as he found that he could bring his scheme to a probability of success, he waited on the *Virtuoso*, and giving notice, that he had something curious to communicate, was immediately admitted to an audience, in his museum, where he informed him, that he had received intelligence, from a particular friend of his, a *Scotch* pedlar, that in the farthest part of the Highlands, there was a most remarkable cock, with two surprising horns growing out of the back of his head, in the possession of an old woman, who was famous for the *second sight*; that upon his admiring the creature, the woman had offered to sell it to him, for a pound of tobacco and a bottle of brandy; but he was afraid to meddle with it, as all the country said it was her *familiar*, though he had seen it himself scrape the dunghill and tread the hens, like any other cock; and that, upon hearing the news, he was come to inform his lordship of it, and to offer his service to go all the way himself for the bird, and bring him up, if he would promise to reimburse him the expence of his journey, and give him some little consideration for his trouble; and to convince his lordship, that he had no design to impose upon him, he would go, at his own hazard, and desired nothing if he did not succeed.

The first mention of such a curiosity threw the *Virtuoso* into the highest rapture: he embraced the fellow, conjured him not to lose a minute, nor drop the

the least syllable of the affair to any person living, till he brought him the cock ; and, to secure his fidelity, pulled out his purse, and gave him ten guineas, with a promise of fifty more, the moment he should receive him. The man promised every thing he required, and went away hugging himself in the success of his scheme. Accordingly he left that part of the country directly, and, taking care to keep beyond the reach of his lordship's inquiry, followed his business, as usual, for the time that he might be thought to have spent in his expedition. In the mean while, the *Virtuoso* could not conceal the pride of his heart on the prospect of so great an acquisition ; but in all his letters to his philosophical correspondents, gave mysterious hints of something immensely fine, rare, and unnatural, and assumed the importance due to the possession of such a treasure.

At length the moment arrived that was to complete his happiness. About ten o'clock at night the man alighted at his lordship's gate, and sending in his name, was immediately shewn into the museum, where his lordship flew to meet him, in the utmost impatience. As soon as the man entered, all over spattered with dirt, and putting on every appearance of fatigue, " Well, my good friend (said the *Virtuoso*, with the greatest eagerness) what success? Where is the dear creature? Shall I be so happy as to see him in my possession?"—" My lord (answered the man) I must beg your pardon for a moment, I am not able to speak: I am quite worn out."—— and then dropping upon a chair, as if he was ready to faint, his lordship immediately rung for some cordial for him, which he took from the servant himself at the door, (for he would not admit any one living) and gave him, with his own hand. When he was a little recovered, " I beg your lordship's pardon (continued he) but I could not hold out a moment longer ; what with travelling all day, and watching all night, I am quite worn out."——" But where is the bird?"——" And then such offers as I have refused! Well, to be sure, I trusted to your

lordship's generosity, for I shall never have such another opportunity of making my fortune: for behold the thing had taken wind, and there were my Lord Duke's and Sir *Thomas's* men, and twenty more riding for life, to try who should get him, but I had got the start of them, and was coming back, with the pretty creature in my bosom; but I let them all go on their fool's errand, and did not say any thing to them; for how did I know but they might kill me to get him away from me?"—Having finished his speech, which the other did not chuse to interrupt, though he listened to it with the utmost impatience, the fellow opened his horseman's coat, and with the greatest caution produced the wonderful creature, the head and neck of which had been carefully thrust into a box made on purpose, for fear the coat should rub off the horns.

His lordship's rapture at the sight is not to be described. He instantly pulled out his purse, and, paying down the promised price, took possession of him, and bid the man go and refresh himself for that night, with the best in the house, and in the morning he would consider how he might make him a return more equal to his service, by procuring him some handsome place at court. But the fellow had other designs in his head, than ever to see his face more. However he kept that to himself, and retiring with many professions of gratitude, left his house directly, and took his leave of that country for ever.

In the mean time, his lordship had notice, that supper was served up; but, though he had company of the first rank in his house, he was so wrapped up in the contemplation of his new acquisition, that he sent word he was taken suddenly ill, and could not possibly attend them: he then dispatched several servants express, to his learned friends, to desire their attendance next day, to see the most astonishing and beautiful composition nature had ever made in the animal world, and devoted the rest of the night

night to drawing up a proper description of this surprising *horned cock*, with a physical inquiry into the substance of his horns, and a philosophical attempt, to account for such an extraordinary production. When this work of uncommon learning was finished, he indulged himself with taking another view of his darling bird, and then put him in a beautiful cage, from which he dislodged two *Chinese* pheasants, and placed him in his museum next to his favoured *horned owl*.

It was six in the morning before he retired to rest, when his head was so full of his new acquisition, that he lay dreaming of cows with wings, and cocks with horns, and such like wonderful works of nature, 'till the arrival of his learned friends at noon. As soon as their coming was announced, he arose directly, and, without waiting to visit his cock, to whom he had given a sufficiency of provisions before he left him, went to meet them. After several impatient inquiries into the cause of so sudden and peremptory a summons, the *Virtuoso*, in all the mysterious importance which so inestimable an acquisition gave him, produced his own learned labours of that morning, and, when they had sufficiently studied and examined them, introduced them to a sight of the unparalleled subject. — “There, gentlemen,” (said he, in conscious exultation) “there, my friends, behold the most uncommon, unnatural, and inestimable curiosity, that ever enriched the collection of a philosopher. There behold an indisputable proof of their error, who assert that nature has placed an immovable boundary between the quadruped and winged creations. There behold a sufficient encouragement, to urge your indefatigable search for monsters, and to mix the whole animal creation in coition, for the production of mermaids, griffins, centaurs, harpies, and horned cocks, and all that beautiful confusion which yields such inexpressible delight to the inquisitive, philosophic mind.” —

While he was making this harangue, the company approached the gilded cage, that contained this in-

estimable prodigy, and, stooping down to contemplate him, were surprised to find one of his horns fallen off, and the other moved considerably from the situation, in which it had been described to them : for, doleful to relate ! the cock, which was of the right game breed, had unfortunately taken offence at the visage of the owl his neighbour, and in his struggles to come at him, through the bars of the cage, had rubbed off one, and displaced the other of his horns. When this deplorable misfortune was mentioned to the owner, it is impossible to describe his astonishment and confusion. He stooped hastily to be satisfied of the truth of it, and beholding the irreparable ruin of his pride, gave one dismal groan, and fell at length on the floor in a swoon.

While his servants, who were summoned upon the occasion, were fetching him to himself, one of the philosophers opened the cage, and taking out the bird, they all entered into a discussion of so strange a phenomenon. After many learned and ingenious solutions, one of them declared, that it had always been his opinion, in which the present case abundantly confirmed him, that all cornuted animals cast their horns every year like the stag, and that the present case was no more than that; of which he was perfectly convinced, as he could plainly feel, with his finger, the growing horn, which had thrust off the old one ; “ So that, my lord,” (said he, addressing himself to the owner, who by this time was recovered, and attending to their remarks) “ instead of being vexed at such an event, you have reason to rejoice, as it explains a very difficult point, and you will now have an opportunity of tracing the growth of this beautiful prodigy.”

This sage solution administered some consolation to the *Virtuoso*, who immediately took the bird in his own hands, and feeling the lump of wax, which had fastened on the fictitious horn, was convinced of the truth of his friend’s accurate observation, which he himself farther confirmed, by taking notice, that,

as no blood follow'd the avulsion, it was evident that the horn was of itself ready to fall off, without the assistance of the cock's struggling (for they had caught him at that work) as the dislocation of the other horn shewed that it was not in the same state of ripeness, and, therefore, it had resisted that force. Consciousness of the sagacity of this remark in some degree, restored his spirits, and he was going to proceed, when one of the company, who had taken up and examined the fallen horn, and had not given any opinion on the matter, interrupted him dryly, and said, the hypothesis was certainly very ingenious, but he believed the affair might be solved a readier way; for, upon examination of the supposed horn, he found it was only a cock's spur, which had been fastened on the creature's head with wax, as appeared evidently by the remains of the wax upon the end of the spur in his hand; and, if they would let him pull off the other, he would undertake that the imposture would be too plain to admit of any doubt.

The mention of this threw them all into confusion, as they had all given their opinions positively, of the honour of which it deprived them, and cut short many more which they were ready to offer: they therefore stood looking at each other, till he stretched out his hand to pull off the other horn, when they all interposed, particularly the owner, and insisted, that they must be better satisfied of what he had advanced, before they could permit so rash an experiment. But the bird himself cut short the dispute; for, some of the company happening to have snuff in their fingers, it got into the cock's eyes, and made him shake his head with such violence, that off flew the horn in his owner's face. The person, who had made the discovery, immediately took it up, and shewed such plain proof of the trick, that it could no longer be denied.

It is impossible to describe the shame and vexation, in every philosophic face present, at this lamentable event. The abused purchaser, in particular, was almost mad: however, after mature deliberation, it was

agreed upon, for the credit of philosophy, to bear the deceit in silence, rather than expose themselves to the ridicule of the unlearned, by seeking satisfaction from the cheat. As for the cock, he was immediately sacrificed to *Æsculapius*, to avert the consequences which such a disappointment might have upon the health and understanding of the company, and to remove such an evidence of their disgrace. But all their caution was in vain : The person who had first detected the deceit, could not deny his vanity the pleasure of making his sagacity known ; and the fellow, finding his trick passed over thus with impunity, could not avoid boasting of it, and to this day diverts his customers with the history of the horned cock.

C H A P. XVII.

More mortification to human vanity: A reason for submitting to be pillaged by sharpers. What's got over the devil's back, is spent under his belly. Filial piety remarkably rewarded.

I SEE you are shocked at the inconsistency, vice and folly of mankind ; but this is owing to your reclusive life, and want of acquaintance with the world : to an accurate observer, things appear in their proper colours ; and if the picture should be unpleasing, the fault is in the subject, not in the painter, who honestly represents nature as he finds her. As to those, of whom I have given you these short sketches, they are wealthy, and wealth is an excuse for all things ; the nobility of their birth not yielding a greater sanction to their persons, than their money does to their vices and follies. And where these tend to the dissipation of that wealth, they only enhance their welcome in every place of public resort : indeed the society, in which you see them at present assembled, subsists entirely by these, as, by the institution of it, no person can be admitted, who hath not wealth to dissipate ;

disipate; as no person will desire to be admitted, who has not a vicious avarice for the wealth of others, and folly enough to hazard his own for the acquisition of it.

But, though folly is, in the strictness of truth, thus essential to the association, there are many of the members, who, in the general meaning of the word, are entirely above the imputation of it: yet so prevalent is the insatiation of gaming, that they will bear the grossest impertinencies, and mix with the outcasts of humanity, for its gratification, as if the dice, like death, levelled all distinctions.

Observe that person, who seems to be absorbed in thought, in the midst of the hurricane around him. Reason takes the advantage of his being for a moment disengaged, and forces him to behold, in a proper light, a scene so contrary to *THE OECONOMY OF HUMAN LIFE*, as that in which he is involved; but wait till the dice-box comes round to him, and you will see all his philosophy vanish, and this passion for gaming hurry him as destructive lengths as the most thoughtless of them all.

Every ability, every virtue that could adorn and exalt the human mind, conspired to throw the brightest lustre round his youth, and mark him as a blessing to society. Nor did he disappoint the general hope, but filled, with dignity and honour, the high employments to which his merits raised him, till this pernicious passion insensibly unbent his mind, and turned his thoughts from every nobler pursuit. The falling off was most unhappy: his time, every moment of which is precious to the public, is wasted in idle dissipation, or devoted to pleasures, destructive to his fortune, which thus falls a prey to sharpers, while the industrious honest tradesman calls, in vain for payment at his door.

Yet, even in his improvidence, the natural virtue of his heart sometimes appears, in a manner that softens the severity of censure. Some years ago when he filled one of the most important places of the state, in a neighbouring nation, he had notice given

him, that a set of sharpers, disguised with the most delicate and specious art, had entered into a combination against him ; but instead of profiting by the friendly caution, and avoiding them, he seemed to throw himself on purpose, into the snares laid for him, till they pillaged him of sums of money, sufficient to distress the greatest fortune.

As it was known, that he had been forewarned of their schemes, his conduct was astonishing to all : but he vindicated it, by saying, that the wretches had put themselves to a considerable expence, and travelled a great way to accomplish their design ; if he had disappointed which, they must either have starved or robbed, perhaps from those who might not be able to bear the loss, and then have been hanged ; so that he looked upon it as charity, in a double sense, to submit to be cheated by them, and in the same manner does he still vindicate his gaming, with persons so notorious for their villanies, that it is almost infamous to speak to them.

At his left hand you see a person with an heap of gold before him, which he dissipates with such eagerness, that he seems desirous to be poor. His father heaped up that wealth with an avidity, that was a disgrace to human nature. The groans of the distressed, the tears of the orphan and widow, which he hoarded with his riches, now eat them like a canker, and the gold, that he wrung from the hard hands of the poor, melts in the possession of his spendthrift heir, like snow before the sun. Nor was the sordidness of his heart, in abstaining from the most necessary use of his riches, inferior to his iniquity in acquiring them. He denied himself the very necessities of life, and literally lived in the most abject poverty, for fear of being poor. To this perverse disposition does the person you see, in a great measure, owe his inheriting his wealth ; for he had an elder brother, whom the miser had always designed to be his heir, till an ill-timed act of filial piety lost him his favour.

The

The old man had an ailment in his leg, which, for want of proper and timely care, had grown to such a degree of malignancy, that it at length became absolutely necessary to cut it off, in order to save his life. Terrible as the apprehension of such an operation must be, the expence of it gave him still greater concern. To have it done therefore, in the cheapest manner, he made his eldest son disguise himself in a mean dress, and taking a lodging for him in a garret, in one of the obscurest corners of the town, whither he removed himself by night, and, under the character of a poor tradesman, sent for a surgeon who lived in that neighbourhood, and advertised his skill at the lowest price. His son, whose near prospect of such an immense inheritance did not efface his filial duty and affection, was shocked at such an instance of avarice, and though he dared not contradict, was resolved to counteract it. Accordingly, when he was sent for the surgeon, for his father had not revealed his retreat to any of his servants for obvious reasons, instead of going to the quack, as he was directed, he went to one of the most eminent surgeons of the age, and, revealing the whole affair to him, prevailed on him, for a large gratification, to disguise himself, and undertake to perform the operation, for whatever trifle would be offered to him, and then told his father, with an appearance of joy, that, as he was going for the advertising surgeon, he had luckily met in an alehouse, where he was directed to inquire for him, a person who had been many years a surgeon's mate on board a man of war, who he was sure could cut off his leg, not only much better, but cheaper also, as his appearance shewed that he was starving, and must be glad to take whatever he could get.

Such a lucky hit raised the old man's spirits so, that he submitted to the operation without farther concern, which was performed in so masterly a manner, that, in a fit of unwonted generosity, he gave the surgeon half a guinea, though he had bargained with him for a crown, but then he comforted himself, when

when he began afterwards to reflect upon his extravagance, that he could stop it out of the fees for his attendance. In the same manner as he had imposed a good surgeon upon him, did his unfashionable son supply him with all things necessary for his condition, by making a woman, in whom he could confide, bring them every day, as if from a lady of fortune, a patient of the surgeon's, to whom he had represented him as an object of charity; for, if he had no other support but what he allowed himself, he must have perished for want of proper nourishment. When his cure was compleated by this management, and he came to discharge the surgeon, after lamenting his inability to make a more suitable return, he offered him a couple of guineas; but the surgeon not thinking it necessary to carry on the deceit any longer, now the end was answered, told him, that he need make no apology, for his son had already given him two hundred.—“My son, Sir, I do not understand you” (answered the wretch, in the most violent agitations of surprise, confusion and rage) “Yes, Sir” (replied the surgeon, addressing him by his name) and telling his own) “your son, to whom you are indebted for your life more ways than one: for it was he that supplied you with the things which you imagined to have been sent you out of charity.”

Shocking as this discovery* was, the old miser recovered presence of mind to carry it off in an admirable manner. ‘Sir,’ (said he) ‘I have a proper sense of my son’s duty, and of your skill in your profession; though you have prevented my making an acknowledgement of them in the manner I intended: For you must not think that I have been deceived; I knew you all along; and I removed to this place, and took this method of concealing myself, both to avoid the trouble and impertinence of visitors and complimentary messages, and to make trial of my son’s duty; of which I have now had a sufficient proof.’——Saying this, he took the surgeon by the hand, and accepted his offer of continuing to attend him till his wound should

should be quite healed, with the greater readiness, as he was paid already ; but to his son he behaved in a different manner, for he directly made a new will, by which he bequeathed his immense fortune to the next brother, the person before us, leaving the other to pine out his days in poverty, on a poor annuity, *in reward for his obedience and duty* (in the very words of his will :) An injustice that was farther aggravated, by his having made him relinquish the most promising hopes of rising in the army, and resign his commission, some time before, merely to attend upon him. Such a shock was almost too great for human fortitude : the injured gentleman sunk under it ; happy in escaping soon from a world, where the highest virtue is despised if destitute of wealth.

As for the heir, it was his good fortune to be bred at such a distance from his father, that he had no opportunity of making any observations on him, and therefore, as the miser could not carry his wealth with him out of the world, he e'en left it to him ; though could he have foreseen the scene before us, he would sooner have bequeathed it to charitable uses, to enrich overseers, and starve the poor, than give it to such a spend-thrift.

I see your senses fail under such an extraordinary exertion, I shall therefore close this scene with observing, that the whole company may be characterized under the few I have pointed to you. In this view of them, I chose to take the silent moment, when their business was near over, for in the height of it, the agitation of such complicated passions would have been too horrible for representation.

C H A P. XVIII.

CHRYSA L gives a farther account of his late lord. The methods by which he had been initiated in the mysteries of polite life. Some sketches of the character of his next master, who gives him to an extraordinary person.

IPROMISED to give you some account of my late lord. He was the son of one of the most distinguished persons of his age, who had acquired a fortune in the service of his country, sufficient to support, with proper dignity, the nobility with which his faithful zeal was rewarded by his grateful sovereign.

The youth of his son opened with such promising hopes, that it was expected he would advance, in the steps of his father, to the highest rank of a subject. To facilitate these hopes, at his return from his travels, in which he had not only gone to see, but had also taken time to consider, the principal countries of *Europe*, with those of *Africa* and *Asia*, whose interests might any ways affect that of his own, or whose history, illustrated thus by observation, might teach him to improve the advantages of his own country, and avoid the evils which had been the ruin of others, he was placed in the lower-house of the senate, with every advantage of fortune, interest, and opinion, to support the exertion of his abilities.

He had scarce made himself known here, in his proper light, when the death of his father raised him into the house of *peers*, where he soon established a weight that made him of real consequence to the nation, and alarmed the fears of the ministry, who, as they could not confute, resolved to corrupt him, if possible ; for which end the deepest schemes were put in practice to relax his morals, and embarrass his fortune, as the present situation of both raised him above their attempts.

It would require uncommon virtue to resist the temptations to vice, in an age whose refinements have taken off every grossness, and almost every horror of its appearance. His regard was won by a most delicate application to that vanity, which is too often the shadow of merit, especially in youth; the very persons who designed to change his principles, seeming to give up theirs to the superior force of his reason.

Such artifice soon won the confidence of his unguarded heart, and inclined it to receive their opinions and advice, without farther examination; as the heat of youth and a vivid imagination assisted their designs against his fortune, the success of which was in itself a sufficient reward.

He had always expressed a dislike to *play*, nor ever gave into it but in complaisance to company. To conquer this aversion was therefore their last labour, in which they found easier success than they could even have hoped for. The affluence of his fortune made him above apprehension of loss, and a disdain to be excelled, even in an art he disapproved, engaged him with a keenness, that soon made his advantages in the art a pleasure to him.

The work was now done; and a few years of his own industry, with the assistance of his friends, and the management of his faithful steward, made him willing to enter into the pay of a ministry, which he might in less time have over-turned.

This was his situation at that time; but some secret struggles, which I saw reason and virtue making in his heart, make me think he meditates to revolt from his infatuation, which the least liberty to his natural good sense could not fail to accomplish: an event which the rapacity of *Poundage* must hasten, to his own ruin.

The person, in whose possession I left the scene you have just beheld, was one of those who had been so successful in initiating my late master into all the mysteries of pleasure. Indeed, he seemed designed by nature to extend his empire over all mankind, making it the sole object of his abilities equal to the most exalted

exalted pursuits, to invent new, to improve the old methods of gratifying sense, and enforcing his precepts, by an example so keen, and a conversation so captivating, as not to be resisted.

Appetites so extensive required a large support ; to provide which, for fortune had so far frowned upon his birth, that he was but a younger brother, he was compelled to steal some moments from his darling pleasures, and sacrifice them to business.—The interest of his family and his own abilities had raised him to the first employments in the state ; but as the sole motive of his submitting to the restraint of any application, was to acquire a fund for the gratification of his pleasures, his haste to arrive at that end precipitated him into the most destructive measures, and made him ready and eager to embrace every opportunity of sacrificing, or rather selling the interest of his country for present private gain.

The proper application of the gifts of heaven makes them a blessing. This cast of his disposition made those abilities, which under a right direction, would have been of the highest service to himself and his country, a real prejudice to both, making him the ready and dangerous instrument of the most enormous crimes, that could promise gratification to his passions.

In such a life, there must necessarily be many disagreeable occurrences, but they make no impression on him, for his whole soul is so devoted to pleasure, that upon the least miscarriage in business, he finds immediate relief in the return of that, which he can fly to, without any difficulty, the natural vivacity of his temper, that makes his conversation so bewitching to others, never yielding to a second moment's vexation at any one event.

As the viper bears in herself the antidote of her poison, this dissipation of temper prevents his abilities from doing all the mischief he otherwise might, by pulling off the mask, and shewing his designs too soon for their accomplishment. The very persons, who would gladly avail themselves of the venality,
not.

not daring to trust to the inconstancy of his disposition ; so that he soon lost his greatest power of doing evil, otherwise than by opposing, and impeding the measures of those, whose successful honesty disappointed his designs, and shewed the danger of them in its proper light.

You will not imagine, that my stay could be long in his possession. He that very day gave me to an author ; for throwing dirt on the characters of those who had detected and defeated his schemes, of leading his country into ruin.

CH A P. XIX.

The history and character of CHRYSAL's new master. His adventures at a coffee-house. The fun of a modern GENIUS retorted upon himself, by the grave rebuke of a testy veteran.

MY new master was a votary of *Apollo*, in the double capacity of physic and letters : for, the former not affording scope enough for his genius, he usually dedicated his leisure hours to the gentler entertainment of the latter, through the extensive circle of which he had occasionally run ; there not being a branch in the wide wood of science which had not felt his pruning ; the lowest rudiments of the most vulgar arts being, in his opinion, no more beneath the philosophic pen, than the most abstruse heights of speculation.

It must be owned, that, in such a latitude of study, he often was obliged to prostitute his labours ; but from this he had the solid consolation, that his gain generally rose, in proportion as his subject sunk, the caprice of the world paying best, that is, buying most eagerly, what it affected to decry most. Nor is this to be wondered at, a loose tale, or a receipt for cooking a new dish, being better adapted to general taste, than a moral essay, or metaphysical speculation,

From.

From his patron's levee, my master went directly home, and, undressing into his cap and slippers, ascended to his study, and took a meditative turn or two, revolving in his mind the many grievances that called upon him for redress, from the success of that morning.

At length, bursting into rapture, he cried, "I'll think no more! Be the wants of yesterday forgot! those of to-morrow will come too soon, without the anticipation of thought! I cannot pay all I owe! I cannot provide all I want! Hence then, vain care! I'll depend on fortune, and myself, for a greater supply another day, and indulge my genius with the present."——Big with this heroic resolution, he gave orders for dinner, and then, sending for his best suit home, he dressed himself in all his pride, and went to a coffee-house to look at the papers.

The pleasure of *my* company had given such a flow to his spirits, naturally high, that he soon drew the attention of the coffee-room, the greatest part of the company gathering in a circle round him, to hear his remarks on the publications of the day, which he threw out with the confidence of one, who thought his opinion the established standard of all writing; and, at the same time, with a sprightliness that made his very impudence and absurdity entertaining.

While he was thus running on, in the torrent of harangue, a *veteran*, whose employment, for many years, was talking over the actions of his youth, and comparing them to the mistakes and losses of the present times, no longer able to contain his rage, at having his audience drawn from him, in the midst of his daily tale, rose up with an execration that shook the room, and calling for his cloak and cane, 'This is not to be borne (exclaimed he.) Here, waiter, take for my coffee! I shall stay in such a place no longer: is this the land of freedom, forsooth! that a man must be disturbed in his discourse, and not have liberty to speak where he spends his money? Had I but the command here, I'd

Pd settle other orders ; every prating puppy should not presume to interrupt his betters : things are like to go well with us, when matters of the highest consequence can be broken in upon by noise and nonsense. This is freedom with a vengeance !

The look and accent with which these words were pronounced, were too terrible for my master to encounter ; both nature and experience having given him so lively an apprehension of danger, that his readiest presence of mind was not always able to conceal it. He was, therefore, cut short at once, and could scarce muster spirits to throw a wink at some of those about him, as the *man of war* looked another way.

But the triumph was not so absolute over all the company, one of whom, resolving to have some *fun*, cries out, “ Pray, doctor, proceed ; you are just in the most interesting part of your story ; the colonel could not mean to interrupt you ; he is too fond of telling his own story to give another such pain ; go on, you should not be frightened at a flash in the pan.”

“ Frighted, indeed, (replied the doctor, gathering courage when he saw himself supported) “ at what, I wonder ? at the sight of what old age can sink to ! no, no ! I am not so easily frightened ! I leave that to antiquated heroes, the exploits of whose youth have exhausted their courage : I mean no offence ; ———— but to go on, as I was saying, *the discovery of the sleep of plants accounts in the clearest manner*” ———— “ Hold, doctor (cries the other) that was not *as you were saying*, you were telling us of the nobleman, who caught his coachman in bed with his lady, one morning, when he came home, sooner than usual from the tavern, pray how did she bring herself off ?”

“ Oh, was that it (replied the doctor) faith I had forgot : the fury of *Mars* had like to have made a gap in the annals of *Venus* : ha ! ha ! ha ! why she made nothing of it, but laughing in his face,

most

half a dozen directly ! this very day if possible !”——
 “ ’Tis rather too late now ; but where are the books ? ”——*‘ In the lumber garret, where they have been these seven years. ’*——“ That is well, they are forgot by this.”——*‘ Forgot, why they were never known ! the author was a man of fortune, who printed them at his own expence, but I prevented the sale, and so had them for the publishing ! Ha ! ha ! ha ! beside a good consideration for buying up at a double price, what I had (NOT) sold of them ; so that it was not a bad job ; and, now he is dead, they may safely come out under new titles !*——*It will be too great a delay to wait to see them, but here are the old titles, which I suppose may do. ’*——“ Why, aye ; they may do ! but I cannot possibly write them this evening ; you know I must answer the pamphlet I wrote last week, before it is forgot ; I have an answer ready, that will make a noise ; I expect it will raise a curiosity, that will sell another edition of the pamphlet. I left opens for such retorts upon the characters I praised in that, and have such pieces of secret history to hit them off with, that I’ll engage for the success.”——*‘ Aye, secret history, and stories of family misfortunes, and such like, may do something ! But I had like to have forgot the main business of my coming. There is an account of the death of an eminent divine, this morning ; could we not vamp up a volume or two of sermons for him, think you ? He was suspected of heresy and atheism, and you know that would make any thing in his name go off. ’*——“ Egad, a good thought ! and particularly lucky at this time, for as I have been engaged in divinity lately, I know the weak sides of the question, and a little fidelity will be a refreshment to me. It shall be done ! the sermons shall be ready without delay ! Have not you got some by you that did not go off ? let me have one of each, and I’ll interline them to save time ; but will you publish them yourself ?——I thought you had given up sermons ! ”——*‘ Myself ! no ! I’ll send them in to Mr. Vampe ; I’ll reserve the confutation of them to myself ! ’*

myself!—"Egad, another good thought; the con-
 futation will do better! and I'll take care to make it
 a smart one, and play the devil with the author; ha,
 ha.—But, Mr. Vellum, your coming here this morn-
 ing prevented my waiting on you: it is a great while
 since you promised to settle with me. You should
 consider, Sir" ——— "What pray, good Sir, should
 I consider? that I have supported you!" ——— "Sup-
 ported me, Mr. Vellum! Sir, I have a profession"
 ——— "I know you have, Mr. Doctor; a profession in-
 deed, in which his Majesty's subjects may bless God
 that nine in ten of you would starve, if they had no
 other way of getting their bread beside that." ———
 "Mr. Vellum, you know this way of talking signi-
 fies nothing. It is a long time since we have settled
 any account, and there are a great many articles!
 Let me see: aye, here they are! and a long list it is!
 NINETEEN PAMPHLETS, with ANSWERS to
 FOURTEEN of them; NINE RAPES, SIX MUR-
 DERS, FIVE FAST and FOUR FUNERAL SER-
 MONS, THIRTY-SIX ESSAYS, TWENTY-TWO
 TITLES, FOUR QUARTO VOLUMES RE-WRIT,
 SEVENTEEN WILLS, TWENTY-FOUR" ——— "Go
 on, Sir, go on! but when you have done look at THIS, and
 then talk to me of an account; here is your bond for 15*l*.
 which is due these two years; and it is very likely to be
 sure, that you should leave it out-standing so long, if
 you had any account to set off against it! but I am glad
 I know you; and, since you talk of accounts, observe
 that I demand my money, due on this bond, which I will
 have, and when you have paid that, it will be time
 enough for me to settle accounts with you; so, Sir, your
 servant." ——— "Mr. Vellum, good Mr. Vel-
 lum, do not be so hasty! I did not mean to give you
 offence." ——— "Accounts indeed! have I not sup-
 plied you with paper above the weekly allowance we
 agreed for, and yet you talk to me!" ——— "Mr.
 Vellum, I may be in the wrong: let matters stand as
 they are: but you have not told me what size you
 would have this affair of the divorce, that I mentio-
 ned to you just now" ——— "There it is now;

that is your way always ; you know my easy temper, and that you can bring me down when you please : why if the story will bear much painting, and the circumstances are very strong and plain, I believe you may draw it out to two shillings ; and to encourage you, and show you that I mean generously by you, when you have finished that, and the Answer, and the Sermons, and the Confutations, and the Titles, and the Exercitations, I will give you up your bond, and then, we will begin an account on fair even terms. But I am in haste, I have three or four other gentlemen to call upon ; I shall depend upon your promise, and so good morning.'—" Good morning to you, good Mr. *Vellum*—Damned imposing grinding scoundrel ; but I'll be quit with you, for all your tricks (said the doctor, as soon as Mr. *Vellum* was out of the room) and teach such stupid rascals to attempt outwitting men of genius."

When I considered the nature and importance of my master's demand, I could not but wonder at the ease with which he took a denial, and the joy he expressed at Mr. *Vellum*'s departure ; but the mystery was soon cleared up, by the arrival of Mr. *Pamphlet*, another of the trade, almost the very moment *Vellum* went down stairs, and whom I saw by his reception, my master expected.

If I was before shocked at the cruelty with which I thought *Vellum* treated my master, I was now no less so, at the part he acted with *Pamphlet*, with whom he bargained over again for the very same ware which he before promised to *Vellum*, and flattered him with an assurance of having his business done, that is, the answers and re-writing, before *Vellum* possibly could, for they were mortal enemies.

The discourse between these was much the same as the former, only that it was concluded in a different manner ; *Pamphlet* giving my master a couple of pieces to keep him in mind of his engagement.

I was utterly at a loss to know how he meant to act between these two ; when he put an end to my doubts

doubts by this soliloquy. "So, now, I have dispatched you too, the day is my own; keep my engagements! I will, with both alike. Let me see, there is nothing in it but a little trouble of writing: I can divide the hits between both answers, according to the opens I have left on purpose, and to send them to both at the same time; only to divide the alteration in my scale of style, and make a second title, and so 'tis done. This method that I have found of using a feigned name, makes it all easy. Well, let those who were born to fortunes, spend them in sloth and ignorance, I have an estate in myself, that can never be exhausted. I am obliged to nature only for my abilities, and carry the fountain of honour and fortune in the fluency of my genius."

He then descended from his aerial citadel, and, going out *to visit* his patients, *changed* me at a coffee-house, where I was immediately borrowed at the bar by an officer, who was going to dine with his general, and wanted money to give his servants.

B O O K II.

C H A P. I.

CHRYSAE enters into the service of a gentleman of a general. Gratitude in high and low life. The modern way of rising in the world, and the happiness of dependence. Influence of CHRYSAE's master, with his curious manner of supporting it.

YOU may judge that my stay with this owner was but short : he gave me directly to the general's gentleman, with a letter to be presented to his excellency next morning, as he could not find courage to speak to him in person.

The case of this person, though not uncommon among men, I own affected me. He was the son of an officer of distinguished merit, the services of whose life had, in the 80th year of it, been rewarded with the command of a regiment, and the hopes of his son crowned with a pair of colours ; which, on the death of his father, in six months after his elevation, he found to be his whole inheritance ; the fees of office, and the equipage for his new rank, having exhausted all the savings of the old man's subaltern frugality.—The most exemplary duty, in five warm campaigns had advanced the son to the rank of a lieutenant, when the exaltation of the person to whom he now applied, raised his hopes to a company, which was vacant in the regiment, and his right by seniority ; for such was his ignorance of mankind, that he built san-

guine

guine expectations on the very reasons that should have deprived him of any, *the obligations of the person to whom he applied, to his father*, who had taken him up the poor friendless orphan of an ensign, educated him at his own expence, procured him his first commission, and afterwards lent him the money, with which he had purchased his company : a debt which the son was weak enough to expect a friendship from, though it, and much more, had long since been cleared at play.

But, though the character of the son, and the general's known intimacy with the father, in a manner obliged him to promise him his friendship, yet nothing was farther from his thoughts than ever to do him any real service ; as he imagined that would be acknowledging the obligations which his very attendance seemed to upbraid him with : a dinner now and then being the only favour he ever had, or ever meant to give him. You may perhaps have experienced the misery of a dependant's dining at the table of his patron, where the tortures of *Tantalus* are aggravated by the anxiety of giving offence. I shall therefore hasten over this, and the other scenes of that evening, which were but the common occurrences of military greatness, and ended in a deep debauch, as soon as all but the *chosen few* had retired, to come to the conclusion of my *late* master's story, in which my *present* bore a considerable part.

As soon as the general had slept off the fumes of his wine, and awoke next morning, my master's hour of influence arrived, which he never failed to improve. After a prelude of coughing and spitting, the scene opened thus : "*Who's there ? William !*" — "*Sir,*" — "*William, Was not I very drunk last night ? my head aches most confoundedly.*" — "*Your excellency was a little cut, but you broke up much the strongest of the company.*" — "*Aye, I wonder at that, I spend myself with talking, when I begin to go, and that helps a man on damnably to that story of the battle where I was taken prisoner, is a bottle in my way*"

till his merit should get him a commission. But, though he would not accept, he did not forget the offer, nor make his obligations a cause of hatred, now that it was in his power to make some return; a way of thinking that proved the meanness of his birth; for quitting the barren paths of military honour, he had turned his genius to the more thriving profession of a footman; through the various ascents of which he had risen to his present rank of his *excellency's* gentleman; in which he had the unfashionable gratitude to return the favours of his former benefactor in the above manner, which his experience and knowledge of his master's temper convinced him to be the only one he could hope to succeed in. As to his promise about the child, he was in no pain about that, there being no person who could contradict whatever excuse he should please to give.

There is one circumstance, which I see puzzles you in the character of this man, and that is his taking *me* from his friend, when he must be sensible how badly he could spare such a sum. But you must consider the power of nature when strengthened by habit.

From his mother, *William* had inherited venality, which the bribery of vails, in his present profession, had confirmed beyond all possibility of correction; so that it was no more in his power to refuse a guinea when offered to him, than to change his stature or complexion. And attention to this observation would take off the wonder, and ease the world from the trouble of the exclamations that are daily made, against the rapacity of persons in office, for, as such are generally taken from the class of *William*, it cannot be expected but they must act from the same natural principles with him.

I see the depravity of human nature, when stripped of disguise and ornament, affects your unexperienced heart too strongly. But consider, that we see things as they really are, and to present them otherwise to you would invert the design of my mission,

sion, and confirm, rather than remove the prejudices that lead astray the mind of man.

However this consolation I can give you, that the vices I have already drawn, and may hereafter draw to your view, are not particular to this age or country: they are the weeds which, in every age and clime, have always, and always will, overrun the human heart.

Nor is it just to call them vices (though in compliance with the language of men I do call them so) which *perhaps* are but * necessary parts of this universal system; and though in a particular instance, and viewed by themselves, they may appear deformed, yet, when thrown into the general representation of things, they may have their beauty and use, if only to diversify the scene: and, with respect to men in particular, be as † advantageous to the community as they are prejudicial to individuals.

But to return to my master *William*. Beside the advantages of education, he had such from nature, that he was not only the most accomplished gentleman, but also the handsomest fellow of his time; an happiness, of which he availed himself so well in the *polite* world, that he was the favourite of all the *compliant* fair, who shared with him the pleasures they only suffered from his superiors for hire.

Of this I saw sufficient proof that very evening, when he went to an assignation with the most celebrated courtesan of the age; who, sacrificing avarice to pleasure, gave orders to be denied to every body, and shut herself up with him, to give a loose to joy for the evening.

This was a scene too sensual for a spirit to describe: I shall therefore only say, that their fatigue and waste of spirits were recruited with the highest delicacies and richest wines, and the pauses of joy enlivened with

* From hence it should seem, that the hint of a late treaty, on the origin of evil, was borrowed, or else dictated by the same spirit.

† Fable of the bees.

with the recital of the adventures of their profession, heightened with the most poignant ridicule of those whose folly was *their* fortune.

Before satiety could pall their pleasures, time summoned them to business. The fair to prepare for the reception of her *friend*; and *my* master to wait on *his*; when, to conclude the evening with proper gallantry, he presented me to the maid at the door.

I was a good deal surprized, at being received with less emotion by this portress of *Venus* than I had ever found before; the sight of me having always raised joy. But this was soon explained, when, on return to her mistress, she threw me on the table, and receiving a shilling in exchange. An instance of that methodical œconomy, which, by many small savings, makes up for one large expence, and extracts profit even from pleasure.

The joy of the mistress seemed to make amends to my vanity for the indifference of her maid, and promised me the full possession of her heart; but I soon found myself mistaken, and that her love for me was only while I was the property of another: for no sooner did I become her own, than she threw me carelessly into her purse, and turned her thoughts immediately to the acquisition of more. But, though I lost the greatest part of my power over her, by coming into her possession, I still found ample room in her heart for my abode.

The apartments were scarce got in order, and my mistress new dressed, when her *friend* appeared, to whom she flew with all the appearance of rapture.

But, however he might be deceived, the difference was plain to me, between the joyless caresses she sold to him, and the extasy she shared with my late master, the glow of whose kisses yet reeked upon her lips. Nor, was this strange; the ardor of her lover met her half-way, and communicated as much fire as it received; but with her *keeper* the case was quite otherwise: all the advantages were to come from her; all her caresses were a duty; nor were the tenderest

dereft ſhe could beſtow, able to warm him to the leaſt return.

You wonder that a perſon in ſuch circumſtances ſhould be at the expence and trouble of *keeping* a miſtreſs, whoſe extravagance was to be equalled only by her inſolence. But this is only a ſmall inſtance of the tyranny of faſhion : and how will your aſtoniſhment be increaſed, when I tell you, that this very man, in the prime of life, was remarkable for the coolneſs of his conſtitution, and now in its decline was married to a beautiful young lady, whoſe reſentment at his conjugal neglect roſe ſo high, as to charge it to inability.

Whether this was really the caſe, and that he *kept* my miſtreſs to hide it, as a failing tradesman ſets up a coach, or whether the paſſion remained, but ſo feebly ſupported, as to require the laſcivious blandiſhments of a prostitute, I cannot determine, as I was never in his poſſeſſion, to take a view of his heart.

C H A P. III.

The manner in which CHRYSAL's new miſtreſs received and took care of her friend. How ſhe employed herſelf while he was aſleep. Her management of him next morning.

IT was about two in the morning when my miſtreſs received him drunk and ſtupified with play, at which he had loſt deeply that night. On his coming into her room, he threw himſelf into a chair, without ſaying a word, or ſhewing the leaſt ſenſibility of her careſſes ; where after ſome time he fell faſt aſleep, which my miſtreſs no ſooner perceived, than calling her maid to undreſs and roll him into bed ; ‘ Here *Jane* (ſaid ſhe) take my place by this heap of mortality. I’ll ſtep to ——— ſtreet ; perhaps the company may not be all gone. Never fear, I’ll inſure you from a rape ! he wants nothing in a bed-fellow but to keep him warm, and you may do that, while

‘ while I pass my night better than in nursing his infirmities : I’ll be home before he stirs.’

Jane obeyed her mistress, who slipped into a chair, and went away directly to an house, where she used to piddle away her leisure hours with any chance customers rather than be idle.

About five ended this scene, in the rites of which my mistress bore a distinguished part. I shall not attempt to describe these mysteries: they were too gross for my relation, as well as your conception, in your present mortified habit. She then returned home, and laying her *pure body* in her maid’s place, beside her *friend*, who had not stirred yet, her fatigues soon threw her into a sleep as sound as his.

It was noon before these fond lovers awoke: the first was my mistress, who, enraged that any thing which bore the name of man, should shew so little sensibility of her charms, resolved to tease him with endearments, which, as he was seldom in a humour to return in kind, he never failed to pay for in a more substantial manner.

When she had awoke him with her toying, the *syren* thus began her song: ‘ How can my dearest sleep so long, when his little girl lies languishing by his side! O turn and let me lay my head on that dear bosom.’

“ Ha, what is it o’clock ?” (replied the lover, yawning and rubbing his eyes)——‘ Alas I know not! I have told so many tedious hours, that I have forgot them: but what is time to us, who only live to love ?’——“ Past twelve! I must begone! some business!”——

‘ Business! leave that for duller souls, who have no taste for pleasure: can you leave love and me for business ?’——“ I am sorry I happened to oversleep myself, my dear; I believe I was bewitched to drink so much; but we’ll make it up another time.”——“ So you say always; but that other time will never come: but I will not be served so; I am flesh and blood, whatever other people may be; and you yourself know, it is not for want of *friends* I keep myself up, thus, like a nun, for you; and all, I do not know for what!”

——“ Is

——“ Is the girl mad ? Do not I give you every thing you want, every thing you desire ? ”——“ No, nor any thing I desire ! I desire now——So you will get up and leave me : I will not be used thus : you have got some other woman : but I here give you fair warning, that I will be even with you ! Sir George was here yesterday ; and so was the young lord——but I would not see either of them : and I am well requited now : but I know where to send to them. I will not be made a fool of every way, for nothing ; and so you may *sleep* where you please, I care not.”——“ Come, my dear, let us not fall out for nothing ; you have not shewn me the diamond earrings you got last week.”——“ No, my dear, they are not come home.”——“ I thought you told me they were finished when I gave you the money to pay for them.”——“ They were so ; but, when he brought them home, I did not like them. The jeweller told me, they were not so fine as those he made for your lady some time ago ; so I sent them back, and ordered him to make a pair that should be as good as her's at least.”——“ Not good enough, child ! were they not to cost 150*l*. ? ”——“ And what is 150*l*. ? Sir Richard gave his girl a pair that cost 500*l*. but if you think these are too dear, you are not obliged to pay for them : there is another who will be glad to do it.”——“ And pray what are those fine ones to cost ? ”——“ Why only—but kiss me first——only 200*l*. But then I have bespoke a necklace with them.”——“ Zounds, a diamond necklace ! ”——“ And what mighty matter is a diamond necklace ? Pray has not your *wife* one ? But I see how it is ; you think any thing good enough for me ; and nothing good enough for her ; but every one does not think so : I am not at a loss.”——“ Well, you saucy little minx ! and what do they all come to ? ”——“ Another kiss, and I'll tell you : why—don't frown ; or I won't tell you at all ;—only 500*l*. ”——“ Five hundred devils ; that's more than my wife's cost, by 100.”——“ And do not you love me 100 times better than your wife ? I have given up thousands for you. But as I said before,

before, you need not pay for them, if you do not chose it : there are others who will : I see I am slighted ; and I deserve it, for slighting so many good offers : but I will not always be a fool !”——“ Well, my dear, for this one time I will humour you ; give me the pen and ink : but you must not expect that I shall ever gratify your extravagance so far again :”——“ I thank you, my lord : I shall not trouble you again this great while. But what is this ? 350l. ! you have made a mistake my lord ; I told you 500l.”——“ Well, child, did I not give you 150l. to pay for the other pair ?”——“ Yes, my lord ; but that was not to pay for this pair though, you know these are dearer.”——“ But that and this will.” “ I am afraid not.”——“ How so, child ; do not 150 and 350 make 500 ?”——“ Indeed I am a poor accountant ; but I know it will not do.”——“ No ! why so ; I do not understand you :”——“ I’ll kiss you first, and then I’ll tell you.”——“ Psha : cease fooling ; I am in haste ; I must go to court ; and have scarce time to dress : where is the 150l. ?” “ There (kissing him.)”——“ Where ?”——“ Gone, as that kiss is ; all gone, and only the relish left behind, to give an appetite for more.”——“ Infernal jade !” (aside)——“ What do you say, my lord ?”——“ That I cannot, will not bear such extravagance.”——“ I am glad I know your mind, my lord ; then, if you do not, somebody else will, who will not make such a stir about trifles.”——“ Well, give me that bill”——“ No, thank you, my dear.”——“ Why so ?”——“ For fear you should be a bold boy, and not return it. If you please to give me the other 150l. I’ll get the necklace and ear-rings ; if not, this will serve for some other use.”——“ Damnation ! and then I must give it to her all over again.” (aside)——“ Well, my lord ; you said you were in haste, and so am I.”——“ Give me the pen and ink : there it is, you little termagant : but once more let me caution you against such extravagance for the future.”——“ And once more let me tell you, my lord, ‘ not to give yourself such airs : extravagance ! they that will have delicacies, must pay for them : and, if

‘ if you think the price too dear, there are more customers in the market ; and so, my lord, like it, or like it not, I will be supported ; and more than that, what I want in pleasure, shall be made up in profit : let wives save, who may be the better for the savings, *our business is to make hay while the sun shines.*’
 ‘ ——— *Come, my dear, let us have no disputes : you have the money now, next time we will clear off the other score : give me a kiss, I’ll call in the evening, and take a dish of tea with you : farewell.*’ ——— ‘ Good morrow ——— (*after he is gone*) for an old, impotent, poor-spirited lecher, that must be treated like a dog to make you know your duty. What fool would ever be at the trouble of behaving well to any fellow, when she can, so much better, mould him to her pleasure by ill usage ?’

C H A P. IV.

The history and character of CHRYSAL’s mistress. She gives him to a noted matron. Some account of his new mistress, and her manner of managing her family.

THIS principle she acted up to, for two days that I was in her possession, without any other variation in her conduct, than just what was necessary to work on the various tempers of her lovers, making no real difference between them, except it was, that she always used those worst who used her best.

I have often told you, that sensuality is disagreeable to a spiritual being. I therefore longed to quit this mistress, the succession of whose amours was so constant and quick, that I was astonished how nature could afford a fund of love for them all, in so young a creature, for she was not 20 years old.——I see you have a curiosity to know the history of this young votary of *Venus*, in which you think there must be something extraordinary : but you are deceived ;

ceived ; it contains nothing but common occurrences.

She was the daughter of trade's people, in moderate circumstances, whose foolish fondness, because she was a pretty smart child, gave her an education above her rank, in hopes of her making her fortune by marriage.

This raised the vanity, natural to the female heart, so high, that she despised her own station ; and not being so fortunate as immediately to climb to the one she desired, by the way proposed, she fell an easy victim to the first seducer who promised it, in any other.

Thus the accomplishments, by which the injudicious tenderness of her parents meant to raise her into a rank higher than their own, became the cause of her falling into that of the lowest of all human beings ; a fall, though deplorable in itself, yet unaffected to her, as the time, in which her mind should have been formed to virtue, was given up to the nourishing that vanity which proved her ruin ; so that she is absolutely insensible of the wretchedness of her condition, and never has the pursuit of her most infamous profession being disturbed by a moment's remorse.

I told you of her spending the hours that were unemployed at home, at an house in ——— street, where she was always sure of business. Though this venerable mansion was dedicated to the mysterious rites of unrestrained love, yet, as the priests of all temples expect to live by the offerings made at them, her conscience would not permit the priests of this to break through an ordinance so long established, and she exacted fees from the votaries of her's : not indeed a tythe, indiscriminately from all, whether they received benefit from their devotion, or not ; but always in proportion to the fruits they reaped.

At this shrine was I offered, the third night of my being in the possession of this young devotee, when the plenteousness of her gain, from a multitude

rude of lovers, seemed to her piety to merit so rich a return.

I now entered into a much more extensive scene than my last, the prostitution of which made but a small part of the business of the profession. But what I have related in the history of my late mistress, shall suffice for that branch, nor shall I give more than some outlines of the horrors of the rest.

My new mistress had originally been of the sisterhood of my last, who having fallen a prey to lust, almost in her infancy, and having no beauty, nor any thing but extreme youth to recommend her, as soon as that was worn out, neglect obliged her to apply to other business for bread, and her natural turn determining her to this, as well as the outrageous virtue of the *undiscovered* part of her own sex, excluding her from every other, she changed her occupation from *yielding* to *providing* pleasure, in which her success was so great, that she soon became the most eminent of her profession.

It was near five in the morning when I changed my service ; and, business being ended, my late mistress having reigned *sole mistress* of the night, and seen out all the company, there remained nothing to do, after she went home, but to see the inmates to their truckle-beds in the cock-lofts, where, stripping off every part, not only of the finery, but even of the comforts of dress, they were crowded three or four together, to keep each other warm, under a ragged coverlet under a bare mattresses, where their shudderings and groans, made a just contrast to the spirited wickedness of their conversation some hours before.

This was always the fate of those who were not so successful in the evening as to earn the price of a better bed, above the fees of the house, and hire of cloaths.

These happy few were treated with fondness, while they squandered their poor *peculiam* in a drop of cordial to settle their heads, and were lodged in apartments suited to their purses ; though the night before,

before, perhaps, they had experienced the same fate with their sisters above stairs, and knew they must expect it again the next, if unsuccessful in their business.

When matters were thus settled, this happy family disposed themselves to take the best repose which dis-ease in mind and body would permit.

An active spirit disdains rest. Though debauchery had anticipated old age, in the constitution of my mistress, yet her application to business made her refuse nature even necessary indulgence. She was ready to go out before ten that morning, when the modest decency of her dress and appearance were such as drew the general good opinion, and would almost deceive the devil himself, on whose most favourite service she was going.

C H A P. V.

CHRYSAL'S mistress pays a visit to the last place she could have been suspected for going to. She meets a young lady with whom, by an artifice, she goes home. Her schemes to ensnare the lady.

IF a judgment were to be formed for the whole day, from the manner of beginning it, my mistress should have spent her's most happily; her first visit being to church, where the piety of her behaviour was an edification to the devout matrons, who having nothing to do at home, meet there regularly, to compare their aches and dreams of the night before, and enjoy the innocent amusement of a little gossiping over the affairs of their neighbours.

But her devotion wasted not itself so fruitlessly: her industry had formed expectations of drawing considerable advantage from it, and so anticipating futurity, and making sure of the reward here which others waited for in another world.—The immediate motive of her devotion, this morning, was to see
a young

a young lady with whom she had commenced an acquaintance at this church, and who constantly attended divine service there. You are surpris'd how she could think of going to such a place, on such an errand ; but the wolf roams about for prey every where, and is often most successful, where his attempts are least suspected ; though I must rob her industry of the merit of design in the first introduction to this affair.

Going through *St. Martin's-Lane* one morning about a month before, she was so struck with the appearance of a lovely young creature, in widow's weeds, who was going into the church, that she followed her ; where the fervency with which she poured out her soul in devotion, gave such a lustre to her beauty, and made it shine so lovely through her grief, that my mistress immediately remarked her for her *list*, not doubting but she would be able to turn her distress to such advantage, as should bring her into her measures, and make her beauty yield her a rich return for her pains, from some of her customers. If you consider the nature of womankind, you will not wonder at this instance of the profligacy of my mistress. They are ever in extremes ; either the best or worst of human creatures.——From church she dogged her to her lodging, in a little court, where she lived with a poor, but honest family, in such privacy that no one in the neighbourhood could give any account of her.

Real virtue shines with a lustre that dazzles the most confirmed vice, and keeps it at awful distance. My mistress, hardened as she was, in all the ways of sin and impudence, dared not go directly to her without some business or introduction ; but, as she had not either, her ready genius prompted her to win her good opinion, under an appearance of religion, and then an acquaintance would come easily.

She was not deceived in her expectations : a few mornings constant attendance at church, and the exemplary warmth of her devotions, struck the eye,
and

and opened the heart of unexperienced innocence, to the acquaintance she wished for, which she did not fail to improve, by the same arts, to some degree of intimacy.

In this situation they were, when she went, but without any appearance of design, to meet her this morning at church as usual. As they came out together, my mistress, turning with her fair friend, said she had some business into *Long Acre*, and asked her, if she went that way? to which the young lady innocently answered, that she did, and should be glad to walk with her.

As they walked together, my mistress turned her conversation on the wicked ways of the town, and particularly the many base designs that were laid to ensnare unwary innocents, adding, that all the pleasure which sensuality could give the most luxurious heart, must fall infinitely short of what she felt at that very moment, in the design she was then going upon, of relieving the distressed of a worthy family.

She had timed her discourse so as to say these words, just as she came to the entrance of the court, in which she knew the widow lived, when, feigning to slip, she fell all along, crying out, as in the utmost agony, that she had wrenched her ankle.

The lady, raising her with the greatest tenderness, expressed her concern for the unhappy accident, and desired she would submit to be helped into *her* lodgings, which fortunately were at the next door, where, though she could be but poorly accommodated, she might be more at her ease than in a more sumptuous place, and should have all the care in her power. This was just what my mistress had schemed for, who courteously accepted of the offer, made a shift to limp in, without any other assistance than her's.

It raised my indignation to see the tenderness, with which the beautiful young creature pulled off her shoe and stocking, and chafed her ankle, thrown away upon so unworthy an object, as it did my abhorrence to hear the counterfeit shrieks and groans of
my

my mistress, and the assurance with which she attributed the swellings, caused by debauchery, to this immediate accident.

This affrighted the young lady so, that she in a manner forced her to send for a surgeon, which, with much intreaty, she yielded to do, but it must be for a *friend* of her own, a gentleman who lived a considerable way off, at the polite end of the town, for she could not think of letting any *common low-lived* fellow come near her.

Upon this a porter was directly dispatched for her *own* surgeon, and in the mean time, as she began to grow easier, she recovered her spirits, and renewed the conversation that had been broken off by this accident.

‘ I was telling you, my dear friend (said she) for so I shall ever call you from this moment, your kindness having compleated the conquest which your beauty had before made of my heart, I was telling you, that I was going to visit a family this morning, where I promised myself the highest joy that the human heart is capable of feeling, in lightening the distress of the virtuous, by sharing with them some of that wealth which Heaven has abundantly blessed me with, and which can justly be applied to no other use, than making this grateful return to that goodness which bestowed it.

‘ But my heart was too elate with the thought, and I received this accident as a caution from Heaven not to flatter myself with any thing so strongly for the future. But, though I could not have this pleasure myself, the benefit shall not be delayed to them. I will make you my *almoner*, an office that I know will suit the goodness of your heart. You shall give this packet, which will put an end to all their distresses.

‘ Oh madam! your good opinion is the greatest honour to me (replied the lady) and I hope I shall never forfeit it, especially in this commission, which I shall undertake with the most sincere joy ; but

‘ but pray, dear madam, who are the persons to whom I must dispense your goodness ?’

‘ That’s true, my dear (returned my mistress) I should give you some account of them, that you may be the better able to judge of the joy I feel in serving them. It is the widow of an officer who has been killed in this war, and left her with three poor babes destitute of every support, but the allowance of the government, which, wretched as it is, and only aggravating misery by barely prolonging life under it, is often grasped for by the hungry mouth in vain, where interest is wanting to procure the immediate relief of it, as was her unhappy case ; so that they must have actually perished for want of food, had not providence brought them into my knowledge, seemingly by the greatest accident, about six months ago, since when, I have myself afforded them the necessary comforts of life, and have also made such interest for them with some of my friends, that I have here got them a grant of a pension on the *Irish establishment*, sufficient to bring up the children, and make the remainder of the mother’s days happy ; for, my dear, I never do any thing by halves——Good God, child ! what is the matter with you ! what do you weep for ?’

“ Nothing, dear madam (replied the lady) nothing ; I only sympathize in the distress of the poor widow.”

——‘ But, my dear, the distress is now at an end.’——

“ O Madam, let me carry her the blessing, let me not delay her happiness a moment ! who knows but her heart is this minute bursting with the dreadful apprehensions of want for herself and her dear infants !”——‘ With all my heart, madam ; but you will please to order a chair to be called to carry me home, when you go ; for I cannot stay *here* alone.’——

“ Dear madam, forgive my rudeness ; I beg your pardon, pray forgive me : the distress of the widow put every thing out of my head ; indeed it did ; pray excuse me.”——‘ Excuse you, my dear, I honour the heart that feels another’s woe : you shall go directly ;

directly ; you shall be the messenger of glad tidings to them. But, my dearest young lady, give me leave to tell you, that I fear you have not answered me sincerely ; I fear your tears flow from some other cause than mere sympathy ; speak, my child ! does any thing affect your own heart ? can I any way be serviceable to you ? Command me freely, and make me happy in serving one for whom my heart has conceived so tender an esteem ! Speak as you would to your own mother, and wrong not my friendship with a doubt.'——“ *O madam ! madam !* (replied the mourner, as soon as sobbing permitted utterance) *I have no mother to make my complaint to : I am the wretched widow you have described ! a widow without support, without friends, or any other hope than just in Heaven !*” ‘And Heaven will raise you friends, my dearest child ! Heaven has raised you a friend in me ! you shall be *my* child ! I look upon you as my own ! as a gift from heaven, from this moment ! You shall leave this place this very day ! it is not fit for *my* child ! I will take a lodging for you, near myself, till *my* nephew, who is lately come to see me, goes home ; and then you shall live with me for ever.’

Saying these words, she threw her arms round her destined victim, and wiped away the tears that flowed down her cheeks, while a variety of passions filled her tender heart almost to bursting.

CHAP. VI.

The history of the young lady. She is critically interrupted by the arrival of an unexpected person. She is reconciled to her father, who rewards the woman of the house, and resolves to punish the baron.

WHEN she had recovered herself a little, my mistress thus resumed her lore. "Weep not, my dearest child, all will be well. And have you any dear little infants too?"—"Oh no, my wretchedness, thank Heaven, is all my own!"—"But may I, my dear, ask your name, and the circumstances of your story? I would know all, that nothing may be unredressed"—"You are all goodness, madam! My story, alas, has few circumstances, and they are all distresses! I lost my mother while I was yet a child; my father left me in the country to the care of a governess, the wife of his chaplain, who educated me in the sentiments of piety and virtue. When I was scarce fourteen, I returned the love of her son, the most deserving and most lovely of his sex, who was two years older than I: but, young as we were, we concealed our passion, till my father obtained him a commission in the army; when on the regiment's being ordered to America, I yielded to his fears of losing me, and consented to a private marriage, which was soon discovered by a letter falling into my father's hands, who in his rage, turned my husband's father, and mother, and me, out of doors, nor would be ever see us more. A small vicarage afforded us a present support. My mother-in-law soon died; the suspicion of her having betrayed the confidence of my father, and been instrumental in my marriage, breaking her heart; as did the account of my husband's death, his father's. I then was left quite destitute; and have since supported a wretched being by my work, which the honest woman

woman of this house takes in for me, without the least hope of relief in this world, till your goodness has, this day, taken compassion on me."—"And what is your father's name, my dear?"—"That I have never yet revealed, as I would willingly bide the disgrace, my distress may be thought to him; but with you I need not use that caution; his name is"——

Just at this word, the surgeon, who had been sent for to my mistress, entered, and presented a new scene.

At the first sight of this person, the young lady gave a great shriek, and swooned away. The gentleman stood a moment stupified with astonishment, when, turning hastily to my mistress, "Is this the 'lady?'" (said he)——"Aye, and a lovely one she is (answered she) but help me to raise her up, when you will see her better; she has been telling me her story, and the grief of it has overcome her! it is a moving one; and she must be our own."

"Oh, my child! my child!" (exclaimed he in a transport) and, spurning my mistress from her with his foot, raised her himself, and leaned her head upon his bosom, kissing her, and almost smothering her with tears. "Oh, my poor child! what have you escaped! what have you endured!"

It is impossible to describe the situation of my mistress at this scene. She saw the error she had been guilty of, in introducing a woman to whom she was a stranger; and was aware of the danger, with which the horror of such an interview, on such an occasion, threatened her. While, therefore, the father seemed wrapped in an extasy, that made him as insensible as his daughter, she thought it her best way to retire from the first burst of his anger, and, forgetting her sprained ankle, was going directly away; but he perceived her intent, and calling her with a voice that nailed her to the ground; "Stir not upon your life (said he) I will have this whole mystery cleared up."

low (calling to the porter who had directed him to the house) bring me the parish constable.

While the porter was sent for him, my mistress, wretched now indeed, her guilty fear magnifying her danger, stood trembling, but afraid to essay his pity with another word.

After he had walked a turn or two about the room, his daughter entered, and with her the woman of the house with her little effects, which were soon packed up; at the sight of them his countenance softened: "Well, my dear, (said he to his daughter) I see you are ready to come with me; but I must wait a moment to do justice to the wretch who brought me hither. Plead not for her! I would not have you ever sue to me in vain, again; and any thing in her favour I cannot yield! But my justice shall not be only severe, nor confined to her alone. You have said that this honest woman has been a friend to you! she shall be rewarded. Here, good woman, is the sum of money I was to have given this vile creature for my daughter in another sense. Take it as the reward of your honesty and kindness to her; and call on her every year of your life for the same sum.

The poor woman took it with a reverence, but was unable to speak her gratitude, her heart was so full, while his daughter dropped suddenly on her knees, and raising her hands and eyes to Heaven, exclaimed in rapture, *Oh pour thy blessings, Heaven, on his head, who thus dispenses happiness on all who merit it.*—

As she said these words, the constable came, into whose charge his lordship gave my mistress, to be taken to a justice of the peace, whither he appointed to follow her; and then handed his daughter into a coach, in which he took her directly home.

C H A P. VII.

The address of CHRYSAL's mistress, and civility of a constable. She arrives at the justice's, and is fisted and softened by his clerk, and terrified by his worship. CHRYSAL changes his service.

AS soon as this happy couple were gone, my mistress recovered her spirits, and smiled with contempt, at the danger she had often gone through before, without harm. "And (so says she) master constable, I am given in charge to you ! and for what, pray ? But I am no such novice, as to yield myself a prisoner, till I see proper authority to hold me ; therefore, Sir, I shall wish you a good morning : If you please, you may go tell his lordship, that I was not at leisure to wait for him, at the justice's ; and, because you may be dry after your walk, here is a crown to drink my health."—" I thank you, mistress (replied the magistrate, taking the money) but, in the mean time, you must come ! I am sorry I cannot let you go—" " Cannot let me go ! pray, Sir, where is your authority to keep me ?"—" Here, mistress !' (producing his staff.)—" But your warrant ?"—" Oh ! as for that, I'll make bold to do without one at this time, and take you to the justice on my own authority, and his lordship's request ; and so mistress, you had better come along, for I am in haste : you may have a coach if you please,"—" Aye, so I will, to carry me home ! and here's something for you to pay the coachman (putting a guinea into his hand,—" 'Tis very well, mistress, I will see you safe home, to be sure, if you desire it, and the justice gives you leave ; for to him we must go directly."—" Then give me my money ; and be assured you shall answer for this false imprisonment."—" Your money, mistress ! why aye ! so I will, if I do not

earn it'.—' Then let me go home this moment.'——
 " No, no mistress ! that I cannot do, till you have been to visit his worship ; and then I will see you safe home, if he gives me leave, and drink your health into the bargain ; and that was what you gave me the money for : come, come, mistress ! one of your trade should know better things, than to ask for money back again ! Have I not shewed you all the *civility* in my power ? Do you think I would stand preaching with you here this hour for nothing ! come along, the coach is at the door."

I *saw* you were surprised at the address and turn of expression in my mistress's conversation with this young lady, before the arrival of her father, as above her sphere : but nature had given her a capacity equal to any thing, and her intercourse with the *polite* world had gained her an ease of behaviour, and elegance of expression, that made every condition of life seem natural to her. As to the story of the family, whom she was going to relieve, she had actually prepared one of her confederates to have acted that part, so that the lord might justly say, her designs were laid so well, that it was next to impossible for her to miss of success. For, by this deceit, she would have gained the young lady's confidence, to receive favours from her, and, when she had her in her debt, she thought she could make her own terms.

As soon as my mistress and her conductor were come into the antichamber of justice, the clerk, recognizing her, addressed her thus : " Good-morrow, mistress——Pray what has got us the favour of your company ? You have been so great a stranger of late, that I was beginning to think we had lost you."——

' Pray, Sir, (said she) let me speak a word with you in the next room.'——On which he ordered her to be shewn in, and only waited to ask the constable, by whom and for what she was sent there, who was able to give him no other answer, than that the lord had ordered
 him

him to bring her, and said he would follow himself directly.

Having got this *full* information, the clerk came into the room to my mistress, and told her with a look of importance and concern, that he was sorry to see her on so bad an account. ——— ‘ So bad an account, Sir ! (said she) why ! pray what do you think I am brought here for ? nothing in this world ! they can charge me with nothing but intention ; and I hope that is not punishable by law ! ’ ——— ‘ I hope it will appear so, (replied he) but (shrugging up his shoulders) my lord has sent a message that has another appearance ! ’ ——— ‘ And, pray Sir, what does my lord charge me with ? ’ ——— ‘ You’ll excuse my revealing the secrets of a privy councillor ! he’ll be here too soon, I am afraid, to tell you himself.’

Verfed as my mistress was in all the wiles of man, the look and manner of his saying those words alarmed her conscious fears. ‘ Pray, Sir, (said she) what has his lordship said ? Or, if you do not think proper to tell me that, at least, you can direct me how to make the best defence against his designs ! I shall not be ungrateful ! You know I never was.’ ———

‘ Why that’s true, madam, (replied he) and indeed I should take great pleasure in serving you, and getting you out of this *hole*, but my lord, you know, is a great man, and can, in a manner, do what he pleases with poor people.’ ——— ‘ Pray, Sir, can I speak a word to the justice ? ’ ——— ‘ I fear he is engaged just now ; besides, it is so long since he has seen or heard from you, that I believe you must expect but little favour from him.’ ———

‘ Why, that is the very thing I would speak to him about ; and believe me, it was my business out so early this morning, till I was delayed by this unlucky accident.’ ——— ‘ As for that matter, you know you may say any thing to me, as well as to him, and I can tell him.’ ———

‘ That is true : why all I have to say to him, at present, is to beg his acceptance of these five guineas for his past favours, and his advice how to

get out of this scrape, and pray do you take these three for your trouble. I am sorry I have no more to offer, but really the times are very bad, and little or no money stirring among the gentlemen; beside all my ladies have been very unlucky of late, and the doctor, you know, must be always paid in hand."——
 "I am sorry things go so badly with you; I will speak to the justice, and let you know what he says, and you may depend on my friendship and interest at all times; though I am afraid this is a very bad affair. I will go to him directly, and return to you as soon as possible."

I here left my mistress to her meditations, having been one of the pieces she had given to the clerk. You may imagine I was glad to leave such a service, though I could not promise myself much pleasure, beside variety, in the exchange, from what I had already seen of that which I was entering into.

The justice was in his office, busied in examining the informations of some of his people, who had made some lucky *bets* the evening before. On a wink from his clerk, they were all ordered to withdraw, when reaching *me*, and four more of my brethren, to his worship; "Here, Sir, (said he) five guineas from Mrs. ———."——"So then, (replied he) she has thought proper to come at last."——"To come; no, no, Sir! she has been brought, or else, I believe, you would have hardly seen her."——"The ungrateful jade: but what is the matter now?"——
 "I really cannot well tell; nor does the constable know any more, than that my lord——ordered him to bring her, and said that he should follow himself."——"My lord! then I must be ready to receive him properly: He is a great man: quick! reach me my green velvet cap, red slippers, and new gown, and open half a score of these books, the largest of them, and lay them on that great table, as if I had been referring. There! now I look like a justice! and bid those gentry, I was speaking to, go backwards, till my lord is gone: He must not see such faces; they might prejudice him against us; and he
 is

is a great man: so! now I'll open the NEW JUSTICE, and his lordship may come as soon as he pleases.

Just as all things were thus prepared for his lordship's reception, in proper formality, a servant brought a note from him, to let his worship know, he could not come himself that morning, but desired he would take proper care of the woman he had ordered to be taken before him, who kept an house of bad fame in such a street, where upon the least inquiry, he could not fail to find sufficient matter against her, from her neighbours.

Though his lordship's not coming was a disappointment to his worship, after the preparations he had made to receive him; and baulked him of an important advertisement for the next morning; yet the general wording of his note gave him some consolation, as it might seem to authorize any measures he might please to take, to squeeze the criminal before him.—“This may do (said he to his clerk) this may do something: but we must proceed with caution, for Mrs. — is an old *band*: let her be called in; I'll *soften* her a little first, and then you may work upon her after as you please.”

As soon as she came in, his worship accosted her thus:——“So, mistress; this is a fine affair; I knew what your doings would come to at last; I have often warned you; but you would take no advice; and now you see the consequence!——“Do, make her *mittimus*! I must wait upon his lordship, and I cannot go till she is committed!”—“Committed! dear your worship, for what must I be committed? I have done nothing.”——“No! to be sure, you have done nothing! his lordship would prosecute you so severely for nothing: Look at this letter! do you know his hand-writing? His lordship has here given me an account of the whole affair, and desired that I would proceed against you, with the utmost rigour of the law! I have already sent to search your house.”

This

This word completed the terrors, into which the sight of his lordship's well known hand had thrown her, and deprived her of all resolution and presence of mind. She burst into tears : and throwing herself on her knees, ' Oh, good your worship ! dear Mr. Clerk (said she) advise me : assist me to get over this misfortune ! here is my watch ; it cost 50l. at a pawn-broker's but a month ago ; it is a repeater ! take it, Mr. Justice ! Mr. Clerk, here are my rings ! they are the only valuable things I have : take them, and help me out of this dead lift : send, and stop the people from going into my poor house ; I shall be *blown up* ! the gentlemen will all desert me : I shall be ruined, just when I have brought things to a little bearing : help me but this once, and I never will give you cause to complain of me again : will always be punctual to my promise.'

C H A P. VIII.

She is discharged on proper bail. The labours of CHRYSALE's new master, in the service of the public, with some of the various mysteries of his office.

THE work was now done, and a wink having settled the *cue* between the justice and his clerk, the latter began thus : " If I may presume to advise your worship, though this is a very bad affair to be sure, yet as it is not quite felony, *by the statute*, I am humbly of opinion, that if bail could be got."——
 ' Dear Mr. Clerk, I am obliged to you'——" But then consider, my Lord is a great man."——
 " That is true, please your worship ; but the law is greater than any man, and the law is very tender of the liberty of the subject, and says expressly *in the statute, in favore libertatis*, that no person shall be confined that can get bail ; and besides, who knows, if she was at liberty, but she might

mind and means to be reconciled to his lordship ; and so all would be well."——' *Dear Mr. Clerk, that is true ; I could easily be reconciled to him ; I know how to gain his favour, when his anger is a little cooled.*'——' Why, Mrs. if you are quite sure of that, I believe we may venture to bail you : but where are your friends ?'——' *Dear your worship, I have no friends ; I have nothing to make friends with ; I throw myself upon you, gentlemen !*'——' Why really this is a nice case ; but if you'll step into the next room, we will consider what can be done for you.'——' *Oh ! but send and stop the men that went to my house.*'——' Never fear, they were not to go without farther orders.'

When she was gone out, " Well (said the justice) this has been a good *bit*, it makes up for the bad week : but cannot you guess what this matter is ?"——' Not a word of it (replied the clerk) she has not dropped a syllable herself, that could let me the least into it, and I would not discover my ignorance by asking her any questions. But I suppose it is only some trick she has played my lord about a girl, for you know she has often told us, that he was one of the best customers, and boasted of his protection ; and if it is no more than that, as I imagine, he will think no more of it, and so the best way is to let her go, for indeed we cannot keep her if we would ; though to keep up the form, for fear she should *smell* us out, she must have some bail : and therefore I'll go and fill a bond, and make a couple of our people put on their SAILING CLOATHS, and come and sign with her, though I do not think she has money left to pay for the bond, or make the fellows drink : but she has done pretty well already, that is the truth."

Saying this, he went out, and in a little time returned with my late mistress, and two of the fellows, the shabbiness of whose appearance had made his worship order them out of the lord's sight just before, now dressed out like reputable house-keepers, who gravely signed with my mistress, without ever asking
what ;

what ; and upon her returning a negative shrug, to a wink from the clerk, went out without a word.

The business was now over, and my late mistress dismissed to follow her occupation, and make up, by double diligence, for the misfortune of that morning, only with an assurance to the clerk, that she would remember his kindness, and be *punctual* for the future.

I was now entered into a service, where I had an opportunity of seeing into the whole mystery of justice ; but you must not expect that I should reveal all the secrets of so venerable a trade : though I may give a few general hints for your information, in so abstruse and intricate a science.

The affair of my late mistress was the last of that morning ; my worshipful master putting *me* into his purse, and going directly to dinner, which had *waited* for him some time. But, though his fare was good, his care for the public would not permit him to make long meals, or debauch away his time. After a short refreshment of only two hours, he returned to his office, where he reassumed his labours, in all the various branches of his extensive employment. —

The first thing he looked into was the *informations*, which the affair of my mistress had interrupted in the morning, as I told you before : when calling his people, one after another, before him, he went through them regularly, in this manner : “ *John Gibbet*, you here inform me that you have found out the person who took the gentleman’s hat, in the quarrel in *Chelsea* fields, last *Sunday* evening, which you think to make a robbery of : let me hear the circumstances of that affair, for you are so keen a blood-hound, when you get upon any scent, that you are for making every thing robbery, be the case what it will.”

“ Please your worship, (replied *Gibbet*, turning the *quid* in his cheek, and squirting out the juice) I do all things for the best, and that you know ; and that I have brought many things to bear, which no-body else would undertake, as witness that affair

on

on Shuter's-hill, that got you so much credit, and money too."—"Why, that's true, JOHN; but then YOU should remember also the cursed scrape you brought me into about the young fellow who wrote the threatening letter to the farmer, about burning his barns; you undertook to prove that too: but you know how you left me in the lurch, after I had gone such lengths, as bad like to have ruined me. Plain swearing will not always do, though never so home; you should remember that you should attend to circumstances also: but, as to this affair, let me bear what you can make of it."

"Your worship must know, that I, and two or three more of our people, having nothing to do, shammed a quarrel, in which a gentleman, who was coming by, lost his hat. It was a large hat, with a very broad gold lace, such as your foreigners wear; it was I that shoved off the hat, and seeing a shabby, idle-looking young fellow standing by, without one, I took it up, and asking him if it was his, reached it to him, and saw him make off with it directly. Now if this is not a plain robbery, I do not know what is! a fellow runs away with a gentleman's hat, who advertises it, with a reward for taking the thief, whom he will prosecute! now I have found out the fellow's haunts, for indeed I dogged him, and will have himself whenever you please, and can clinch the prosecution, by swearing that I saw him carry off the hat; and you know I need say no more, nor take any notice who gave it to him."

"Why, JOHN, there may be something in this affair. I like it very well, JOHN! and so, clerk, you may enter him on the list for next sessions. This affair has a good look; nor is there any thing unjust in it; for though you gave him the hat, as he knew it was not his own, and yet carried it off, he is guilty of the theft, and that is the same as robbery, in justice, though it may not in law; and justice is the thing to go by, with a safe conscience. And so you may go, JOHN. I will let you know when it is proper

proper to have him taken up, only have an eye to him, for fear any one else should snap him out of our hands.——*Who comes next?* RICHARD SLY, you say you have found out the haunts of young fellows that have begun to infect the streets for some nights past.”——“Aye, please your worship (says Sly, shrugging up his shoulders, and grinning) I have found them out to be sure; and well I might! for it was I first set them on the lay.”——“*How RICHARD! take care of what you say.*”——“Oh, your worship, never fear Dick Sly for a slippery trick! I know what I say very well: I have known for some time that these youths have been playing a small game, cribbing from the till, and building sconces, and such like tricks, that there was no taking hold of; I therefore thought it would be right to bring them to justice, at any rate, and so laid the plan for this gang, and entered them into the business myself, and now, whenever you have a mind to rub them, you need only take me up, and I can peach them all, which will be no bad affair, there are so many of them.”——“*Why, that is true, RICHARD; but they have done nothing yet that deserves so severe a remedy as the gallows! therefore let them alone; perhaps they may mend: or if they do not, it will be time enough to take them up when they deserve it more than now. To be sure, your peaching them, who first drew them in, is not so very just; but then the law will support you in it, and, while a man has the law on his side, he may laugh at the gallows. And so, RICHARD, have a good look out till these youths are ripe for TTBURN, and then your harvest will come!*”

It would be endless to go through this whole business particularly. Be it sufficient to say, that there was no breath of the laws, which some of his people did not give him an information of, and almost all, as accomplices, while his whole care was to consider which could turn most to his advantage, in the conviction, and to settle the evidence against them, so as it might be sure not to miscarry.

C H A P. IX.

An highwayman improperly taken, saves his life by losing his reason. Judicial sagacity and eloquence, triumphant over common sense, and matter of fact. This mystery explained.

W H I L E he was in the midst of this business, he was surprised with the news of an highwayman, that moment brought in by a gentleman who had taken him, in the very attempt of robbing him on Turnham Green. This threw the whole house into an uproar.—“*An highwayman taken, and by the very party!* (exclaimed the justice in an agony of rage and vexation) *This is most unfortunate; there is 40l. dead loss, beside the shame of it; how shall I support my consequence, if other people can serve the public without my assistance?*”

‘I wonder who it can be (said the clerk) I suppose the man on the white mare, or the mask, from Putney Common! but, whoever it is, something must be done! He must be saved this time, to save our credit, and we may have him the next, ourselves! Here they come: do you keep the gentleman in discourse while I speak to the prisoner, and see how he can come down. I shall readily give you your cue.’

Just then entered the gentleman with his prisoner, whom they directly knew to be an old offender, who had long baffled their pursuit: a circumstance that heightened the vexation of his being taken by another, and was not a little favourable to him at this time.

His worship received the gentleman most politely, and desired him to sit down a moment, till he should finish a letter he was writing to *the secretary of state*, and then he would attend to his business, ordering the

world, for I have dealt with her ever since I came to London ; but hunger and the cries of three starving children forced me to this ! Oh my children, my children !'———" Peace, woman ! all you can say signifies nothing ; you were taken in the fact, and to Newgate you shall go directly. And, as for your brats, it is better for them to die of hunger now, than to live to be hanged like their mother.'——

By this time the *mittimus* was ready, which he signed without the least hesitation or pity, and then hurried away to his supper, having almost fretted his bowels out, to think it was spoiled by waiting so long.

But, tho' the justice's compassion could not be moved by such a *poor* wretch, his clerk was not so inexorable, but yielded to the persuasion of an honest *tar*, who, seeing a croud at the door, had given six-pence to go in and see the *fun* ; and for two guineas, *which barely paid the fee*, ventured to make up the affair, and let her go about her business, *though he did not know the consequence, if it should come to his worship's knowledge*——Jack took no notice of what he said, but, taking the poor creature, who was just sinking under the agitations of fear, joy, and gratitude, by the hand, " Chear away, sister, (said he) chear away ; we'll bring up all this lee-way, next trip. Damn my eyes and limbs, if I'll see a brother seaman's family at short allowance, while I have a shilling ! Come, heave a-head ; I'll rig and victual you and your children, against your husband comes, to man you for a voyage home. I'll swing my hammock in the next birth, and you shall cook the kettle, while I stay a-shore."——Saying which words, he led her off in triumph.——This the clerk told his worship, when he came in to supper, after giving him one of the guineas, as his share of the composition.

I now thought the business of the day over, and was preparing to take a view of my new master's heart, while he and his clerk were enjoying their success over an hearty bottle. But I was prevented by an accident, which disturbed for a while, and had like to have entirely broken off the harmony between them ;

them : a dispute, like those between all conquerors, arising about the division of the spoil, and the merit in the acquisition of it.

‘ This will do (said his worship, clapping his hands a-kimbo, after a full glass) this will do ! what between the bawd in the morning, and the highway-man in the afternoon, we have made a noble day of it ! But what have you ordered about that fellow ? I hope you have taken care that we may have him ourselves next.’ ‘ Never fear (replied the clerk) I have done for him. I have sent people to lay all the roads he can go, from the inn where he ordered his horse ; and *Plausible Tom* is fixed there, to scrape an acquaintance with him, so that he cannot escape.’

‘ Aye, let Tom alone to manage him ; many a cunning fellow’s heart has that Tom crept into, till he has wheedled him to Tyburn ! Not a lawyer of them all has a smother tongue. But did not I improve the hint of the madness well ? how quietly the gudgeon swallowed it ! If I were to set about it, I believe in my soul I could have persuaded him out of his own senses, and made him think himself mad, as well as the highway-man ! ha ! ha ! ha ! Though you were not quite clear enough in your note ; you should have told me all the particulars ; I was often at a loss ; but upon the whole, I think I did pretty well, pretty well I think !’

‘ Why aye, you did so manage it pretty well, when I had given you the cue, and so might any one have done. But how would you have contrived to bring him off, if I had not made that hit !——’ *How !——* ‘ why easily enough !——I would have——’ But what have you done with the bank note ? let me see that !’

— ‘ The note ! it is safe enough. But you do not tell me, how you would have managed to have earn’d it ; I think you should do that before you ask for it.’

— ‘ How I would have earned it ? why pray, good Sir, do you know whom you talk to in this manner ?’

— ‘ Whom I talk to !——I talk to the worshipful justice, — whose betters I have talked to before now ; — and who would not have asked me that question some

‘ years ago, when he applied to me to instruct him in the business of his office!’—‘ *Insolence! instruct me! I’ll make you know, Sir, that I understand my business, without your instruction! I’ll take another clerk to-morrow.*’——‘ With all my heart, good master justice! with all my heart; and see who will be the loser by that. If you do not know it yet, you will soon see then, whether the business comes to the justice or his clerk; for I give you notice, that I shall take all *the people* with me; you shall have the credit of making up a new set for yourself, I assure you.’—‘ *Very fine! very fine treatment this!*’——‘ Why do you deserve it then, Sir, if you do not like it? I say very fine treatment too! that you should take upon you to undervalue my skill, and assume the credit of it to yourself; you, whom I first taught, and still support in your office, in despite of all your blunders!——As for the note, here it is, and here it shall be, till we have settled the account of the last sessions, when you were so clever upon me, sending me on a fool’s errand, out of the way, while you took up the reward. Perhaps you thought I did not see through your design, or that I was afraid to speak of it, but you were quite mistaken; I only waited till the remedy should come into my own hands, and, now it has, be assured I shall make use of it, whatever you may think, Sir: and farther let me tell you, that if you say much more, I will think of parting in earnest, if you do not think proper to come to a new agreement: for I see no reason why you should carry off two-thirds of the profit, only because you are *justice* indeed, though I do all the business!’

CHAP. XI.

The breach happily made up by the arrival of company. The evening concluded in character. His worship goes next morning to hear a charity-sermon, and from thence to eat a charity-feast, where CHRYSAL enters into a new service. Some account of the nature of a charity-feast.

MATTERS were now at such an height, that I every minute expected they would have proceeded from words to blows, when a pull at the bell brought them both to themselves in an instant.

‘Hah! that is true! this is quarter-night (said the justice) and here the ladies are come! Give me your hand: why should we fall out about our skill, while the business goes on well? here’s my service to you; and let there be no more of it.’——

“With all my heart (replied the clerk) but why will you urge me on thus, when you know that I cannot bear to have my skill called in question?”——

By this time the ladies entered, whom I directly saw to be the *commode* matrons, and compliant fair of his district, who came duly to compound with him, for the breach of those laws he was appointed to support.

The very mention of this scene sufficiently explains the nature of it, and makes a more particular description unnecessary. All parties behaved properly on the occasion. They paid their subsidies, for which he returned them very wholesome advice, to behave with diligence and discretion in their professions; and especially those who lived in his neighbourhood, he cautioned to avoid all riots, and causes of offence, which might bring his connivance and protection into suspicion; then relaxing from the severity of his morals, he gave up the rest of the night, and a good part of the next morning, to mirth and good-fellow-

him, will give you a sufficient insight into his character.

A gentleman, whom indiscretion and indolence of temper had involved in some pecuniary distresses, had the greater misfortune, some years ago, to be recommended to this person to borrow such a sum of money, as should extricate him from his immediate difficulties, on a mortgage of his estate.

As his security was good, his business was soon done; but the convenience of his estate to another which this person had lately purchased in his neighbourhood, and an acquaintance with the unwary easiness of his disposition, made him cast a wishful eye upon it, and form schemes for getting it absolutely into his possession.

At first he strove to tempt his indiscretion by the offer of more money to supply his pleasures; but finding that would not take, and that the sense of his former extravagance dwelt so strongly on him, as to give his mind a kind of turn to industry, did he know how to apply it, his ready genius struck out a method that he imagined could not fail of success.

He therefore cultivated an intimacy with the gentleman, in which, upon all occasions, he affected to boast of his own success in life, and to attribute it to his having always a command of money, to take the advantage of any bargain that might offer.

As this turn of conversation seemed to flow only from the fulness of his heart, and to be free from all design, it had the effect he proposed, and raised a desire in his friend, to follow a method which had been so successful with him. He therefore, one day, communicated to him a resolution, which he had formed of selling his estate, and applying the money to business; and desired his friend's assistance to execute his design. After an appearance of surprise, the scrivener testified his pleasure and approbation of his prudence, by the readiness with which he undertook to serve him.

The ease with which the first part of his scheme had succeeded, made him form further hopes, and think

think of getting the estate he desired, even at a cheaper rate than purchasing it.

After some time spent, as he said, in fruitless inquiries, for a purchaser, he most artfully drew his friend, to desire that he would buy it himself: at first he seemed to hesitate, but then, as it were yielding to the impulse of his friendship, he concluded a bargain for it, on terms evidently advantageous to the seller.

All things been agreed upon, the parties met to conclude the affair, when, the writings being read over, and the money lying on the table, while the scrivener told it, the gentleman executed the deeds of conveyance, and receipt, before proper witnesses, who withdrew as soon as he had signed them.

In the mean time the scrivener continued to tell the money, till a servant entered hastily with a letter as from a lord, who was one of his best clients, and desired to see him that moment. The difficulty this threw him into was soon solved, by his friend's compliance to defer his business for a few hours, as the lord's urgency would not admit the least delay. Accordingly, he put up both the deeds and money in all the apparent confusion of hurry, and went away to his lordship.

Next morning the gentleman called to receive the price of his estate, but his friend was not at home, nor to be spoken with in the afternoon, for his turn was now served, and he neither desired, nor perhaps thought it safe, to keep any farther acquaintance with him.

As such things might happen to a man in business, the gentleman took no notice of them, but quietly swallowed the same excuses for some days successively. At length his patience began to be exhausted, and his fears alarmed, at a behaviour so strange, and contrary to that height of intimacy that had been between them, even were there no business in the case——In this perplexity he went one morning, resolved not to quit the house till he should see him;

and when a message to that purpose was, after long attendance, complied with; upon a warm expostulation, he received for answer from his friend, that 'he had been of late too much engaged in affairs of consequence to attend compliments, and knew not any business he could have with him.'

'Not know my business, Sir, (replied the gentleman in astonishment) I come, Sir, for my money, and shall hereafter never trouble you more with business or compliment.'——'Your money, Sir! I do not understand you: pray, Sir; what money do you mean?'——'What money! the purchase money of my estate, Sir, which you were to have paid me above a week ago, when I signed the deeds of sale.'——'Poor gentleman; it is so: as I was informed, and always feared. He has lost his reason; and I should not seem much better, to trust myself longer with a man in his condition.'——'Take care, Sir; this is too tender a point to be trifled with: you almost make me mad!'——'Aye; there it is: he is mad, poor man: and is even sensible of it himself.'——'Death, Sir, do not dare to dally with me a moment longer! answer me directly! pay me my money; and not really provoke me to a madness, that may be fatal to us both.'——'Sir, your madness, or reason is nothing to me: however, I will answer you directly, that I owe you no money, and none will I pay you. As for the purchase money of your estate, your parting with which I see has turned your brain, when you come to yourself, you will recollect, that I paid you, when you executed the deeds of sale; or if you do not remember it, your own receipt, properly witnessed, will prove it, for me; and I desire no more: and therefore, Sir, let me have no further trouble with you, if you do not chuse to take up your lodgings in MÖORFIELDS.'

'This is too much; just Heaven! this is too much: too much for human patience to endure! or wait the laws delay for remedy! I will avenge myself, assert the cause of justice, and rid the groaning world

‘ world of such a monster !’ exclaimed the unhappy gentleman) now really irritated into the extremity of that phrenzy, which the other only wanted to impose on him, and drawing his sword, before the wretch could call for help, or take any method of defence, he plunged it through his body.

His shrieks soon alarmed his servants, who, rushing in, found him weltering in his blood, and the madman smiling, in the absence of frantic ecstasy, over him, and incapable of attention to any other circumstance, though some of them dragged him before a magistrate, while the rest were busied in procuring relief for their master.

The madman was committed to prison, to wait the event of the wound he had given, which Heaven, to let the measure of the scrivener’s iniquity be full, had directed to a part where it was not mortal.

In a word he recovered, though not to a sense of justice or humanity, but persisting in his iniquity, which now was sharpened by a spirit of revenge, for what he had endured, the first effort of his health was to have the unhappy sufferer confined in *Bedlam*, where he still languishes under all the horrors that attend a total loss of reason, without relief, or even compassion from his base undoer ; who this very morning, as he was stepping into his chariot, to come to this *charity feast*, spurned from him with his foot, and refused the smallest alms to the wretched wife of the ruined madman, who begs in the common streets, and was driven by misery and despair, to throw herself even at his feet to implore relief.

I see your abhorrence rise at such a monster, but how will wonder even heighten it, when I tell you that this oppressor has neither child nor kinsman, to inherit his wealth ; for he was himself a foundling, and reared at the public expence, without the knowledge or tenderness of a parent to soften his rugged soul, nor would the selfishness of his heart ever permit him to marry, for fear of the expence of a family ; but he is this moment meditating on some ostentatious scheme

scheme of charity, to the foundation of which, he designs to dedicate the wealth which he has amassed by such villainies.

C H A P. XIII.

Continued: The history of a general almoner. His method of making charity begin at home. He converts a noted barrow, but disappoints his designs, by too great a confidence in his own skill. The character of a clergyman.

MOVE your eye to the left, and view that demure-looking picture of devotion, who sits there in silence, lifting up his eyes to Heaven, and sighing in spirit, at the festivity and sensual conversation round him.

Who, that can see no deeper than outward appearances, would not think that man sincere in his professions of religion and virtue ? whereas in truth, he is the most abandoned contemner of both ; and deepens the dye of his blackest crimes by the most hardened hypocrisy, secretly living on the practice of those very vices, of which he professes the greatest abhorrence.

With all that consequence, which he assumes, in the direction of this charity, on the merit of the largeness of his subscriptions to it, in reality, he is but the dispenser of other people's benefactions, into whose good opinion he so insinuates himself, by his pretended piety, that they intrust their charity to his disposal, who always pays himself for his trouble, by subducting largely, from the sums confided to him. For, as real charity vaunteth not itself, they never divulge the secret, completely imposed on by his address, that never lets one half of his contributors know of the other ; by which management, as the sums he gives are always made public, for example and imitation, each thinks that he adds most liberally

to

to his own donation———But this is not the only method by which he turns his piety to advantage. The access which the reputation of it gains him, into almost every family, opens him an opportunity of carrying on the deepest intrigues, and becoming a pander for vices both natural and unnatural, which the interest of the parties concerned makes them still keep secret.———

As for the former, the mystery of that trade has been in part explained already; and the latter is too horrible for explanation. I shall therefore pass over these scenes, and conclude my account of this extraordinary personage, with one instance of his address, in finding out and managing the weak side of superstition and vice.

In the course of his love-negotiations, he had made an acquaintance with a woman who kept a public *bagnio*, or house of prostitution, which acquaintance mutual interest cemented into an intimacy. In this most infamous trade had this woman amassed considerable wealth, the disposal of which (after her death) took up much of her thoughts, in those moments, when the consequences of her debauched life forced her to think of dying.

As the secrets of their trade had removed every reserve from between them, she often used to consult him on this head; when he always comforted her with dissertations upon religion and virtue, *stripping them of the vain incumbrances of priest-craft, and bringing them back to their genuine principles of benevolence and charity.*

Frequent inculcation of this doctrine had the effect he designed; the matron was pleased with the thought of having all the benefit of religion, without the trouble of the practice, and immediately began to exercise her donations to public charities, which, as it was not quite so much in character for her to offer in person, while she continued her profession, and she saw no necessity, nor felt inclination to quit that, she always confided to the distribution of her spiritual guide.

Nor did his success stop here ; he improved his influence on her superstition so far, that he prevailed on her to compound with heaven for the vices of her life, by bequeathing the earnings of them to its use, after her death.

For this purpose, he himself drew her will, which pious application of her fortune set her conscience at ease ; and she continued her usual business to the hour of her death, which happened three years after, with such care and industry, that some instance of negligence, in one of her servants administering to the pleasures of her guests, gave her such uneasiness in the last moments, that, with her dying breath, she lamented the ruin her house must come to, after she should quit the care of it, for the joys of Heaven.

You must not think that his design extended no farther, than to prevail on her to make such a will ; he had drawn it himself ; as I have told you, and took care to word it in such a manner, as he thought should give him, under the appearance of her executor and trustee, as she designed him, a real property in her wealth ; as it was immediately to come into his hands, on her death, and there was no time appointed for the fulfilling of her pious intentions,

But here his sagacity disappointed itself : for neglecting to take proper advice, or afraid of making any person privy to his designs, he had committed such *material* errors in the *form* of his will, as gave room to a learned counsel to set it aside, in favour of the heir at law, her nephew, who, from cleaning shoes under a gate-way, was enriched with at least a third part of his aunt's fortune, which remained to him, after the costs of the suit, that had been carried on for him, *in forma pauperis*, while her executor had the vexation of disappointment, aggravated by a decree to *pay all the costs*.—This was a severe stroke : but it did not break his spirit, though it obliged him to return to his former occupation of an *almoner*, which you see he pursues with that attention, which always ensures success.

I see

I see you sink under the pain of finding the best actions debased, by springing from such motives : but be careful to avoid an error, fatally too prevalent, of concluding from the abuse, against the use of any thing that may, in its end, be conducive to good.

These instances I have given ; and I could add many more ; not to depreciate the custom of giving to public charities, which is the noblest use of wealth ; but to caution you against the dangerous error of thinking, that such giving alone, without reformation of life, and the active practice of the other virtues, can be acceptable in the sight of him to whom it is offered, or efficacious to procure his favour ; and to shew the absurd impiety of persisting in vice, with a vain hope of bribing Heaven with the wages of Hell.

But, to relieve your pain, behold that venerable person who sits opposite to him ; the serenity of whose looks shews the happiness of his mind. Read his heart, and you will not find one discontent or sorrow there, but what humanity imprints for the distresses of his fellow creatures, which his beneficence, his real charity, is for ever finding methods to relieve, not only by pecuniary benefactions, though to these is devoted the far greater part of his ample fortune, but also by his advice, instruction, and good offices, the judicious application, and sincerity of which makes them very rarely fail of success.—He is a real supporter of charity, in its most extensive sense ! his example giving a sanction, a seal of virtue, to every thing he appears in, which puts wicked wit out of countenance, and stops the tongue of calumny ; and is (even were it alone) sufficient to counterbalance all the instances, which could be brought against it. His long life, which has been extended by Heaven, as a blessing to mankind, has been a constant illustration of the religion he teaches ; not one instance of his actions ever contradicting his profession, as near as human weakness can act up to divine perfection.

Such is this clergyman ! such should all clergymen be, to preserve the purity, the dignity of a function, whose

whose rules are drawn from perfection, and calculated to prepare the human for a participation of the divine nature, to accomplish which greatest end, all profession, not enforced by practice, must be ineffectual.

To mention any one instance of his good works would be doing injustice to the rest, and contradicting the desire of his heart, which, next to doing good, is to conceal what he does; his actions being so far from ostentation, that to Heaven only, and the parties themselves, are they revealed; nor to these even is the hand that reaches them the blessing always known.

C H A P. XIV.

Continued: The history of a bear leader. His method of making his pupil's masters earn their money. The general consequences of close friendships between the different sexes. He modestly offers his pupil's mother a nut almost too hard for her liquorish tooth; but she swallows it whole, to save the trouble of mumbling, and meets a just return for her untimely passion.

OPPPOSITE to him, you see a man, whose rich dress and supercilious carriage give him the appearance of a superiority over all the rest of the company; but such artifices impose only upon the ignorant and vulgar: to a judicious eye they aggravate the defects they are meant to disguise; and the low-bred avaricious wretch appears doubly contemptible, through the unnatural veil of pride and munificence.

There is something so whimsically singular in the story of this person, that I will gratify your curiosity with a short sketch of it.

He was born in the lowest class of the people, in a poor village, in one of the most remote parts of the kingdom; but the delicacy of his constitution making
him

him unfit for a life of labour, the common lot of his condition, his poor parents denied themselves almost the necessaries of life to send him to school, to qualify him for some employment better suited to his natural imbecility. The master of the school, who was a person of discernment and good-nature, soon perceived that the weakness of his body was amply made up by the abilities of his mind, and took a pleasure in giving instruction which he saw received with advantage. Nor did he stop here; but, when his pupil had made the ordinary progress of the school, he used the persuasive argument of teaching him for nothing, and even supplying him with books at his own expence, to prevail upon his parents to let him pursue his studies.

When he had advanced by this assistance, considerably beyond the usual boundaries of school education, being not only critically skilled in the learned languages, but also well grounded in the principles of the liberal sciences, his kind master crowned the benefit he had conferred upon him, by recommending him warmly to a widow lady, of large fortune, to educate her only son, whom female fondness would not permit her to trust out of her sight at a public school.

In this employment he behaved himself with such circumspection and care (for the weakness of his constitution saved him from all danger of excess, and the horrors of returning to his former poverty and distress, fixed his attention, invariably, to every possible means of advancing his fortune) that he won the confidence of his pupil's mother so far, that she ventured to send her darling son to the university in his care; and when he had finished his studies there, with credit, gave him a genteel stipend, to accompany him in his travels to the different courts of Europe, to compleat an education so happily begun, and enable him to make a figure in life, suitable to the affluence of his fortune.

The unbounded confidence with which this trust was committed to him, gave him sufficient opportunities

nities of gratifying the ruling passions of his heart, vanity and avarice, as it enabled him to secrete, to his own use, as much as he pleased of his pupil's fortune, satisfied that his accounts would never be examined, and to acquire, late as it was, the ornamental parts of education, which his original poverty and the necessary gravity of his literary life and employment, had precluded him from.

Accordingly, as soon as he arrived in *Paris*, the first place where he designed to make any delay, he suffered himself to be prevailed upon by his pupil to remit something of the strictness of his authority, and, seemingly, winked at his plunging into all the levities and excesses of ungarded youth, that he might have the more convenient opportunity for executing his own schemes. Thus, while his abused charge threw away the time he ought to have spent in receiving profitable information and improvement, in idle expence and vicious pleasures, the prudent tutor took the advantage of his absence, to attend the masters he retained for him, and learn dancing, fencing, music, and all other accomplishments of polite education ; a conduct which he carefully observed, in all the different stages of their travels. But still his labour, as you see, was, for the most part in vain, the rust of his mean original being too strongly confirmed to be worn off by so late application, so that his awkward affectation only makes defects which would otherwise have passed unnoticed, become more visible, and exposes him to contempt and ridicule.

But eager as he was in these favourite pursuits, he did not let them divert his attention from the main point, of continuing to cultivate the good opinion and confidence of his pupil's mother, to whom he constantly wrote in such a strain of piety, and gave such pleasing accounts of her son's conduct, expatiating on his good qualities, and palliating his failings, with the tender titles of youthful levity, and the frailty of nature (for fear she should receive information of his excesses from any other person) that she

she thought herself happy, in having placed him under a man of such virtue and goodness; her opinion of which was not a little heightened by the care he took of his parents, to whom he constantly remitted, through her hands, such a portion of his stipend as enabled them to live with comfort; and with his former master he kept up a regular correspondence, informing him of every thing he saw in his travels, that he thought would be agreeable and entertaining to him, and expressing his gratitude for the friendship which had advanced him so happily in life.

When his pupil had finished his travels in this manner, they returned home, where the fond mother received them with the highest joy, her esteem for the tutor almost equalling her love for her son. But this natural affection did not long maintain the pre-eminence! Her established opinion of the understanding, learning, and virtue of the former, levelled the height from which difference of condition had made her look down upon him before, and she admitted him into all the intimacy of friendship. There is nothing more deceitful, than connections of this kind between the different sexes. Let them be formed with whatever resolutions they will, at first, nature will insensibly take the alarm, and force the execution of her most powerful laws.

This intimacy had not been long cultivated, before the lady began to see perfections in her new friend, which she had never perceived before, and to feel a pleasure in his conversation which her heart had long been a stranger to. She knew not how it was, but nothing pleased her except what he said, or did: Even her fondness for her son began to cool, and her eyes to open to faults in him, which she had always been blind to before, though he had never taken any pains to conceal them from her. This did not escape the penetration of her friend a moment, nor was his judgment at a loss how to improve it to the best advantage. He immediately began to assume a timid tenderness in his looks and manner, and took every occasion of displaying the genteel accomplishments
he

he had acquired in his travels, while her unhappy son, as if he had entered into the scheme against himself, seldom came near her, and, when he did, behaved with a careless indifference, scarce short of rudeness and insult.

Such a contrast was too striking to pass unnoticed : nor did her friend fail to aggravate the impressions of it, by doubling his assiduity and tender complaisance, whenever his former pupil withdrew, and lamenting the unhappy turn he had taken, in terms of the deepest concern, but without ever offering a word in his excuse.

— This subtle conduct had the desired effect : The love of the mother was entirely diverted from her son to her friend ; and, as the foolish fondness of her deceased husband, had left much the greater part of his large fortune in her power, the improvement of this change, was an object worthy of his highest attention. But still the difficulty upon both was how to open the affair ; for, powerful as the different motives that urged them to bring it to a conclusion were, a sense of the impropriety of such an action, made each equally at a loss how to mention it.

But here again the evil genius of the son prevailed, and he did that for them, which they knew not how to do themselves. For some of his friends, observing the intimacy between his mother and his former tutor, desired him to be upon his guard, and strive to prevent the consequences of it, by a change in his behaviour to her. Such prudent advice, if properly followed, might probaby have had effect. But, instead of that, he flew immediately to his mother, and indiscreetly charged her with a design of betraying the confidence of his father, and ruining him, to gratify a ridiculous passion for a mean, unworthy object : and then turning to him, who happened to be present, he told him sincerely, that, if he did not that instant quit his mother's house, he would treat him as the villainy of such a design deserved, in the next place he should ever meet him, and so flung out of the
room

room in the highest rage, leaving them staring at each other, and almost petrified with astonishment.

But a few moments restored them to themselves ! the affair was now revealed, and so the greatest difficulty over. " I wish," (said the tutor, as if he spoke to his former pupil, though he took care to wait till he heard him out of the house) " I wish no other person beside *me* had reason to fear your resentment ; or that I had no other obstacle but that, to prevent the happiness my heart languishes for."—— And then turning to the lady, as if he did not know that she had heard what he had said, " I am most unhappy, madam (proceeded he) to find myself the cause of your being treated in this manner, and shall immediately withdraw, to prevent a repetition of it ; as for me, since I am to lose the happiness of your conversation, it matters not what becomes of me."——Saying which, he made her a most respectful bow, and, with a look of the highest tenderness and grief, seemed to prepare to leave the room.

" Hold, Sir," (exclaimed the lady, the warmth of whose resentment, at her son's behaviour, made her the more readily melt at the distress of her lover) " Hold, Sir, what are you going to do ? Will you desert me in this danger and distress ?"——And then softening her voice and looks into the greatest tenderness, " I thought (continued she) I should never want a protector while my friend lived."——" Nor shall you, madam," (answered he, with an appearance of warmth that banished all reserve) " My life shall protect you from every danger and affront. But,——oh, that I had a tie to justify such an attachment to the world, which else will censure it severely."——And then, taking her hand, he bent his knee, and pressed it to his lips.

Such an act of gallantry was not to be resisted, in the condition she was then in ! she bent forward to meet him, and laying her head upon his bosom as he rose, " Let it be justified" (she murmured in a broken, faltering accent) " by every sacred tie of love and truth ;
" of

“ of honour and religion !” — This was all he wanted : He seized her in his arms, and pressing her to his breast, sealed the contract on her trembling, withered lips.

The impatient love-sick fair now thought every obstacle to her wishes removed, and therefore distantly proposed sending for a priest directly, to tie the sacred knot, and prevent any designs her undutiful son might form to disappoint her happiness. But her prudent lover was in no such haste ! He now had her secure, beyond danger of retreating ; but, as her person was not the only object of his desires, he wisely judged it best to refrain a few moments, from the possession of that, to secure the more solid enjoyment of her fortune, as he was not certain, but this fit of fondness might wear off, and her natural affection of her son return, when her untimely passion should be gratified. He therefore resolved to improve her present disposition beyond the danger of repentance, and sent for the priest directly, passing the intermediate moments, till his arrival, in the most passionate, endearing dalliance.

But, just as the blushing, bashful bride was going to approach the altar, he stopped short, as if upon a sudden thought, and turning to her, ‘ This, madam, secures our present happiness, (said he) but how are you to be revenged upon your base, ungrateful son ? What certainty have I, that a return of your former fondness for him may not sacrifice me to his implacable resentment ? Some settlement should first be made ; and then anxiety and fear won’t damp the ardour of our joys.’ — ‘ I understand you not’ (answered she, in confusion and astonishment) ‘ What settlement can you mean ? Do I not give you the possession of my fortune with myself ?’ — ‘ True, madam, replied he) you do ! And could I be sure of having them for ever, I should be satisfied ? But death may rob me of you, and then your fortune will descend to your ungracious son, while I am thrown upon the world, destitute of every means of self-defence and support.’ — ‘ And can

‘ can you doubt my love ?’ (added she, not a little surprised, and startled at his caution)——‘ I doubt it not ! nor would I doubt it ! (returned he) and therefore will remove all room for doubt.’——
‘ What must I settle then ? (said she) how much of my fortune will remove your fears, and satisfy your wishes ? Here take this paper, and write down your terms !——‘ That is soon done !’ said he, and, taking the paper, directly wrote the word ALL, and, reached it to her.)——It is not easy to describe her astonishment and indignation, at the assurance and unreasonableness of such a demand. ‘ What ! ALL !’ (said she, with evident emotion) ‘ Will no less do ? Is nothing to be left to my disposal ? This is too hard !’ The lover instantly perceived his ticklish situation ! However, he was resolved, to try the utmost, assured that, even if her resolution held, he was in no danger of losing her quite. ‘ Madam,’ (said he, throwing his arms around her, and embracing her tenderly) ‘ I give you myself, and all I have ; and I expect the like return : I pretend not to compare the value of the gifts ; but love is delicate, and will bare no abatement.’——

If the passions of youth are impetuous, those of old age are silly ! The ardour of this address, with shame of being refused upon any account, thus in the very crisis of her hopes, made her comply, and she betrayed the confidence of her husband, and signed away the inheritance of her child, to gratify a preposterous, untimely, ridiculous love.

The return she met with was just ! her new husband, now all his schemes were accomplished, scorned to preserve even the decency of appearance, but threw off the mask directly, and treated her with such indignity and contempt, that she broke from him in despair, in the first week of her marriage, and threw herself upon the mercy of her basely ruined son ; whose resentment was not proof to such a trial ; but, yielding to filial piety, he shared with her, the poor pittance which he happily had independent

ment of her, till she sunk under the weight of misfortune, shame, and remorse.

Nor did her husband treat his first benefactor or his parents better. With the former, he directly dropped all correspondence ; and, giving the latter an allowance of twenty pounds a year, just to keep them from starving, he positively forbid their ever letting him hear from them more, on the penalty of forfeiting that, and every other instance of his favour.

FAR from being satisfied with the success of his villainy, or enjoying the fortune he had so basely obtained; his whole life had been spent, as you see, in anxious attempts to hide the meanness of his original, under the splendour of his appearance ; and the iniquity by which he acquired his wealth, by vain ostentation of charity and munificence.

CH A P. XV.

Continued : Some reflections that may appear impertinent to many, and unprofitable to more, but still are neither improper nor unjust. The history of an honest attorney. More wonders ! the way of the world reversed. Right triumphant over might ; and gratitude shewn in high life.

MOVE your eye towards the lower end of the table, and behold that person, whose aspect and appearance command veneration and esteem. He was bred in a profession, the very name of which is become a reproach, from the abuse of unworthy professors. Nor can it be otherwise, while every low bred person, who is just able to give a son the first rudiments of education, and ambitious of seeing him in the character of a gentleman, is admitted to breed him an attorney ; and as soon as he has served a time, as to the most illiberal mechanic trade, to turn him loose upon the world, to live by the practice of the very crimes and iniquities, which his profession was originally instituted to suppress, without any fortune to save him from the necessity of having recourse to such

such base means ; and without being instructed in the principles of probity and virtue, to support him against the temptations of the many frauds and villainies, which his business brings him to the knowledge of : Nay, so far from giving any attention to this indispensable duty of forming the mind by proper instruction, such is the perverseness of man, that if a child betrays an early propensity to chicanery and fraud, by setting his play-fellows together by the ears, and cozening them of their toys, he is immediately marked for this profession, and, instead of being corrected for such a disposition, and having it nipped in the bud, is encouraged in it, by hearing it made the omen and ground of his future success in life, till it is confirmed beyond a sense of shame or remorse, and becomes the ruling principle of his life. The conduct, consequent to such education and principles, has brought the profession into so great disrepute, that scarce any person of character or fortune will breed a son to it ; by which means the evil is daily aggravated more and more, and threatens to become absolutely irremediable at last. For, at present, so many are the opportunities that tempt to iniquity in the practice, and so universal the reproach affixed to the very name of an attorney, that all regard to reputation, that powerful preservative of virtue, seems to be in vain, and it requires an uncommon rectitude of heart to support the conflict : But that there are some who are equal to this trial, and that the fault is not in the profession, but in the abuse of it, the person before us in an eminent instance.

A nobleman who died some time since without legitimate issue, thought proper to bequeath, not only his own great acquisitions, but also the immense possessions of his ancestors, to a spurious son, without ever considering whether there might not possibly remain some distant branches of his family, capable of inheriting what they have a just right and legal title to, though the direct line of it failed in himself. Accordingly the heir took possession of his adventitious fortune, and, as wealth hides every defect, entered

into alliance, and made connections with persons of the most exalted rank, whose friendship and interest; supported by the immense riches he possessed, seemed to hold every inquiry into the justice of his title to them in defiance.

But a generous heart is not easily terrified in a just cause! The person before us, by his knowledge in his profession, and the uprightness of his practice, had acquired a fortune, and established a character, that placed him above the reach of slander, and the frown of power. He had been born under the patronage of this nobleman's house, and in the course of his business, had happened to get some insight into the settlements of his family, by which he found that it was not in his power to alienate the acquisitions of his illustrious ancestors, and give them to a stranger to their blood, while any of their descendants were in being. Such an act of injustice, therefore, raised the indignation and pity of his honest, generous heart, and he resolved to set it aside, notwithstanding the trouble and expence that must necessarily attend such an attempt.

The greatest discouragement to this undertaking, was the difficulty of finding out, and ascertaining the real heir; for the family was apparently extinct. But upon examining into the many alliances it had formerly made, which his known attachment gave him an easy opportunity of doing, he found that, some generations before, a daughter had been married to a nobleman of a neighbouring dependent kingdom; the issue of which marriage, if any remained, was the true and only representative of this noble house.

Having made this discovery, he went directly over to that kingdom, where after a long and painful search, he had the mortification to find, that the family was reduced, by revolutions of government, and the calamity of the times, to two poor, low-bred, illiterate women, who had been married to mechanics of the meanest rank, and being left widows, and without children, now strove to procure a wretched subsistence, by joining their poor stocks to keep a
chand-

chandler's shop, in a city in the remotest part of the kingdom.

So melancholy an instance of the instability of human grandeur only raised his compassion, and confirmed his resolution to vindicate the blood of the illustrious patrons of his family, from such injustice and disgrace. Accordingly, he instantly relieved their immediate distresses, and, taking all the proper methods for ascertaining their descent, brought them over to this kingdom, lodged them in his own house, and treated them with the respect due to their noble blood and better hopes.

As soon as every thing was prepared for the great attempt, he regularly demanded a restitution of their right from the unjust possessor, and, upon his expected refusal, instituted a suit at law, for the recovery of it, in the prosecution of which, neither difficulties nor dangers, neither threats nor promises, could slacken his ardour, till he had obtained the justice he demanded for them. A detail of the proceedings, in such an affair, must be distressing to any human heart. It is sufficient to say, that every method which the art of man could invent to impose upon judgment, and defeat justice, was exerted against him, for several years, in hopes of exhausting his fortune, and wearing out the lives of his injured clients (the elder of whom actually did die during the suit) and so disappointing his hopes. But justice at length prevailed, and he recovered, for them, the inheritance of their ancestors, leaving their antagonist only the immediate acquisitions of his reputed father, which, large as they are, he eagerly labours to increase, by every artifice of sordid avarice.

As for the heiress, the exalted gratitude she shewed, proved *her* noble blood. As soon as she had executed all the forms of law necessary to give her an absolute power over her fortune, and justly paid the expense, and rewarded the trouble of recovering it, as every branch of her family was extinct, she thought it but justice to settle her great fortune upon the generous recoverer of it. Nor was she content with leav-

ing it to him, when she could no longer make use of it herself, but obliging him to quit the business of his profession, she gave the greater part of it into his immediate possession, and, retiring to one of the principal seats upon her estate, spent the remainder of her life in happiness and esteem; the goodness of her heart, and the true nobleness of her soul, drowning her want of early education, in the superior radiance of innate virtue.

The absolute possession of her entire fortune, which her death gave him much sooner than he wished, has made no alteration in the conduct of this worthy person, who invariably pursues the dictates of justice and benevolence in all his actions, making his wealth a blessing to all, whose wants and virtues marked them as objects worthy of his regard and assistance.

C H A P. XVI.

Continued : The happy fruits of unequal marriages. A short way to pay long debts. The pleasures of polite life. A bold stroke of female genius, triumphant over law and religion : An unlucky mistake brings an improper visitor into too genteel company.

IMMEDIATELY below him, you see one of those instances of inconsistency which diversify the motley character of man. In the deep-sunk lines of his face, you may read learning and intense thought, as the placid serenity of his eye, shews an heart warmed with piety and moral virtue; what pity, that a listless indolence of mind throws a shade over so bright a character, and, submission to the capricious yoke of female tyranny, makes him passively guilty of the very follies and vices most immediately opposite to his own virtue and good sense?

The pious care of a good father, had so improved the eminent abilities with which nature had blessed
this

this gentleman, by the most judicious education, that the promise of his youth gave hopes of his being an ornament and advantage to his age and country : but one indiscreet action overcast this pleasing prospect ; and, in its consequences, has brought him to be the insignificant thing you see.

This was a marriage of meer inclination, with a person who had neither fortune, beauty, nor merit, to justify his choice ; and who yet has taken the unjustifiable advantage of this indolence of his temper, to usurp as absolute an authority over him, as if she possessed them all in the most eminent degree, and conferred upon him the benefit and obligation she herself received.

This makes his life one scene of the most irreconcilable inconsistency, between the wisdom and virtue of the very few actions, in which he is admitted to follow the dictates of his own judgment, and the follies and vices, into which she wantonly leads him every moment of his life. When I say vices, I mean those of dissipation, luxury, and extravagance ; which, though the most injurious to society, and productive of the worst consequences to particulars, are yet too often looked upon in another light, and thought harmless at least, if not even commendable exertions of greatness, and generosity of spirit, and the proper use of affluence of fortune ; for, not content with the rational enjoyment of the fortune to which he raised her, in her proper sphere, she has assumed the absolute disposal of the whole, which she dissipates in every kind of fashionable folly and profusion, so as utterly to disable him from exerting the natural generosity and benevolence of his heart, in the extent and manner suited to his apparent wealth, and too often from discharging the moral obligations of honesty, in the payment of his just and necessary debts.

Such an ungrateful abuse of obligation and influence may appear strange to you, who have been so little conversant in the ways of man ; but, to a more extended view of life constant observation shews, that conferring a great benefit actually extinguishes grati-

tude, instead of raising it higher; and that the meaner the hands into which power is intrusted, the more exorbitant and tyrannical the use they make of it. Whether this arises from a consciousness of inability to pay so great a debt, and a consequent desire to cancel it, by an absolute breach that may, at the same time, also support the debtor's pride, and seem to hide the obligation, by an implied disavowal in the former case, and from a desire of returning the tyranny felt before, in the latter, would be a curious and not unprofitable disquisition, but shall be reserved to another place, where the occasion will illustrate it more forcibly; and only the justice of the observation, as to the present case in particular, proved by a few, out of innumerable instances of the same kind.

Of all the methods of dissipating wealth, and precipitating ruin, the most speedy and effectual is gaming. The present prevalence of the passion for this vice (for to call it by any other name would be a false tenderness) among all ranks and sexes, has been already often observed, as it is in the characteristic of the times. However, to soften the horror, with which the barefaced practice of it, by the fairer sex, must strike every rational mind, it is blended with matters of meer amusement, and represented only as an innocent method of relieving conversation, when a number of persons meet in public company, which must otherwise languish and grow tiresome, or else fall upon improper subjects. This ingenious expedient has given rise to those meetings, at the houses of the greatest fashion, which from the noise, bustle, and confusion inseparable from such crowds, are emphatically called *Routs*. In these the mistress of the house always precedes, and consequently, attendance at them is looked upon as a compliment peculiar to her, and in which her husband has no share. For this reason, the greater the crowd collected, the more important the entertainer appears, and therefore, no pains or expence is spared in inducing them to attend,
From

From the character already given of the wife of this gentleman, it may be concluded, that she exerted all her efforts, to make a figure, by the frequency and greatness of her own routs, and by the profusion with which she gamed away her money at those of others. However the mode was become so universal, and so eagerly pursued, that she soon found it was impossible for her to distinguish herself in the manner she desired, if she could not strike out some new way ; but in this she was not long at a loss, the boldness of her genius prompting her to try an expedient, which no one before her had dared to venture upon.

This was to fix her routs upon the day set apart, by laws human and divine, for the duties of religion, and which till then, had been held sacred to these alone, from every kind of business and recreation. So bold a stroke necessarily attracted the notice of the public, and the remissness of the legislature overlooking it, the crowds, who, from an insensibility to those duties were utterly at a loss how to get rid of so much time, gladly embraced such an opportunity, and flocked to her in numbers, that amply satisfied her ambition. Such success and impunity soon made her example imitated ; but as she had led the way, the merit of that secured her from being supplanted by any rival, and having her company decoyed from her.

The circumstances of her husband's birth, and the principles in which he had been educated, made him at first look upon such an insult upon religion, with the strongest horror : but she made light of his scruples, and over-ruled all his objections, with such an absolute authority, that, for peace sake, he was obliged to submit, and join in what he dared not contradict, till he has at length forfeited the acquaintance of every serious, rational, and religious person.

He was, at first, greatly affected at this falling off, and much distressed to think what it could proceed from, as he was not sensible of any deviation in his own sentiments, from the principles which had made his acquaintance sought by every man of sense and

virtue ; but an accident soon opened his eyes to the absurdity of his situation.

The acquaintance, upon which he justly set the greatest value, was with a prelate of distinguished merit and virtue, an intimate friend of his deceased father. With him he spent the happiest hours of his life ; and, in the wisdom and piety of his conversation, found relief for his sick heart, from the follies and riotous excesses which he was a slave to at home. Though he always met with the most benevolent and friendly reception from this worthy person, yet the coolness with which he found himself treated by some others, made his apprehension so ready to take alarm, that, upon his grace's not returning a visit or two with the exactest punctuality, either from sickness, or some necessary engagement, he could not help expressing his uneasiness, with such warmth, when he went to see him next, that his grace, who, though he despised ceremony, would not give pain or offence to any person, especially one for whom he had so sincere an esteem, accounted for his late omission, by giving the real reason of it, and told him that he would do himself the pleasure of going to see him any day when he might be sure of finding him at home.

This gentleman answered, that, if his grace would appoint any day agreeable and convenient to him, he should gladly break through all engagements, and attend to receive him. This was a strain of complaisance which the prelate would not agree to, but insisted upon knowing what day he was usually at home, when he would call upon him, in a friendly manner, without putting him to the trouble of waiting for him in particular.

The affectionate, sincere manner in which this was said, was so pleasing to the gentleman, that it put him entirely off his guard, and he answered eagerly, and without ever considering, that the next day was Sunday, when he was always at home. This was strictly true ; he was always at home on that day,
because

because it was his lady's for seeing company ; if he had in the least reflected on which, he would never have appointed his grace to come, as he was sensible, that he should for ever forfeit his acquaintance by it.

Though that was a day which the prelate dedicated to employments of a very different nature from paying complimentary visits, there was something in the earnestness of the manner in which the gentleman appointed it, that made him apprehend he had some secret uneasiness upon his mind, which he wanted to communicate for assistance or advice, wherefore he complied without hesitation, nor did the other ever recollect the impropriety of what he had done, till it was too late to be remedied.

For his grace going the next evening, as he had promised, was not a little surpris'd to find a croud of coaches before the door ; for he had never heard of, nor suspected the scene that was acting, but however, being informed that his friend was at home, he thought it best to proceed, and so, alighting from his chariot, was shewn up into a room, where there was a mixed multitude seriously engaged at cards.

The very mention of such a scene would have struck him with horror ; judge then what his sentiments must be at the sight ; and particularly to be betrayed to it as he imagined, on purpose to insult him, by a man whom he esteemed, and whose father he had sincerely loved. As soon as he had recovered himself from his astonishment, he directly turned about and departed, just as he was perceived by the master of the house, whose confusion at his own indiscretion, in appointing such a time, which he instantly recollected, is not to be described. He started from his chair, and exclaiming : ' Good God, what have I done ? '—would have followed him directly, if his lady, with whom he was playing, and who was just then *dealing*, had not stopped him, and insisted on knowing what was the matter.

' Good God, madam (said he, in the utmost confusion and distress) did not you see his grace come to the door this moment ? I was to pay him

‘ a visit yesterday, and unfortunately engaged him to return it this evening, without ever considering that it was *your night*.’— And is that all (answered she, who had gone on with her *deal*, and just turned up an *ace*) then pray sit still, and play your cards; you see *clubs are trumps*! his grace may come at a proper time, if he pleases!—

Great as the husband’s distress was, the accent with which these words were spoken, nailed him to his chair; so that he was forced to let his grace go home, and remain that night in an opinion so painful and injurious to him. But he laid not his head to rest, till he had written his grace a letter of apology for his mistake, which he candidly acknowledged, and conjured him to forgive, in the most earnest manner.

The imaginary insult, of being trepanned into such a scene, had at first provoked his grace beyond the usual evenness of his temper; but he had time to cool before he received the letter (for he never lay down in anger, nor rose but in charity with all mankind) and reading it dispassionately, was so moved at the situation into which he found his friend fallen, that all thoughts of personal resentment vanished, and he answered it with the greatest humanity and tenderness, drawing the folly and danger of such a complaisance in their proper strength, and urging his return to the practice of his own principles, with every argument of reason, virtue and religion, promising to renew his acquaintance, with the same, or greater intimacy than before, as soon as he should desist from such an impious profanation and abuse of a day made sacred, to piety and devotion, by every civil and religious law; till he should do which, it was inconsistent with his character and principles to keep up any farther intercourse with a person in such circumstances.

The justice of this reasoning was acknowledged by the person to whom it was addressed, and the loss which followed the neglect of it severely felt; but he wanted resolution to resume the authority, that
was

was necessary for putting it in execution, and so poorly submits against his better judgment, to all the impositions of a tyranny, which was first erected upon his folly, and still subsists by his indolence.

C H A P. XVII.

Continued : Confusion worse confounded, rout on rout : The transformation of a constable into a devil, introduces a story of the devil's terrifying a famous cardinal, by dancing in masquerade, and frightens a polite assembly into a fit of devotion, which lasts an whole night with most of them. A glimpse of the courage of a modern man of honour.

BUT, though such meetings as these are held in apparent defiance of the laws, you must not imagine that those who go to them are insensible of the impropriety, or unapprehensive of the danger of such a conduct. By danger, I mean the immediate one, from the secular power, for that of the divine wrath they never give themselves the trouble of thinking about.

Of this a remarkable instance happened at this place, not very long after the affair of his grace. A gentleman of humour, as well as reason, who was intimate in this gentleman's family, and had often strove in vain to convince his lady of the disagreeable consequences that might attend such an avowed disregard to decency, at least, resolved to take another method, and try what effect ridicule and shame might have, where every argument from reason had failed,

Accordingly, one night in the midst of the riot, he contrived to have it whispered in the company, that a neighbouring *constable*, remarkable for punishing every offence for which he did not receive a proper composition, intended to come with the churchwardens, and all the parish officers at his heels, and interrupt their diversion ; and dressing himself exactly
like

like the constable, whom he nearly resembled in size and figure, and buckling on a wooden leg, like him, in he stalks among them, just as the servant announced his coming, by the name of the constable, whom he personated.

It is impossible to describe the astonishment and confusion of the whole company at such an attack ! Tho' there were several present, whose rank placed them above his authority, surprise and consciousness of their guilt so far deprived them of all resolution and presence of mind, that they joined in the just fear of the rest, and attempted to make an ignominious escape with them. The candles were all instantly put out, the windows broke open, and stars and ribbons were seen among the croud that leaped into the court, and ran thro' the streets, without regarding dirt or cold, while the more timorous sex stood petrified with fear, uncertain which to face, shame or danger.

In the mean time, the pretended constable took the advantage to slip off his wooden leg, tye-wig, and long cloak, just as the servants had taken the alarm, and come in to see what was the matter, and so had an opportunity of enjoying the whole scene, without danger of being suspected for the author of it.

The first question which the lady of the house, whose active spirit first recovered itself, asked, was, What was become of the constable, and who let him in ? At the mention of a constable, the servants all stared, as not one of them knew any thing of him ; and the very servant who had announced his entrance, declared he had never heard a word of him, for as he had not told his office, not one of them had the least notion of such a person's presuming to come among them. But upon telling his name, and describing his appearance, their surprise was changed the other way ; they all remembered his entrance, but every one of them positively insisted that he had not gone back ; so that the question now was, What could possibly have become of him ? as his leaping
out

out of the window, as the others had gallantly done, was neither necessary, nor indeed possible for him to do, maimed as he was.

While they were all forming sagacious conjectures, on so strange and unaccountable an affair, the metamorphosed constable, who had joined in the conversation, said to an old lady, who seemed more strongly affected than any other of the company, that the oddness of this affair put him in mind of one not very unlike it in many circumstances, which he had read, in accounts of good authority, to have happened in *France*, during the minority of *Lewis XIV.*

This raised the curiosity of all that heard him, who immediately crowded round him, and desired him to tell it. At first he seemed rather unwilling, and very gravely prefaced his story, with declaring, that for his part he believed nothing of the matter, though he owned it was related by writers of undoubted veracity, and attested in a manner almost beyond any fact he had ever read in history. Having thus prepared them for something extraordinary, he proceeded thus: ‘ You know, Madam (addressing himself to the old lady, to whom he had first mentioned it, and who he knew plumed herself not a little upon her knowledge in *secret* history, every thing that bore the name of which she had read, and implicitly believed every word of) that, in the minority of *Lewis the Great, Mazarine*, who governed the kingdom, took every method of diverting the attention of the young monarch from state-affairs, by all kinds of pleasurable entertainment that could be devised.’—‘ True, Sir ;’ (answered the old lady, who could not possibly restrain her desire of shewing her knowledge) ‘ and that is said to have influenced the conduct of his future life, in that expensive pomp and vain magnificence, which attracted the admiration of foreigners, while it exhausted and ruined his subjects. Hem ! hem ! but I beg pardon, Sir ! pray don’t let me interrupt you.’—

‘ As.

' As this *Mazarine* was an *Italian*, you know,
 ' Madam (continued he, to which she assented with
 ' a nod, as she constantly did) it was natural for him
 ' to have a fondness for the entertainments of his
 ' own country ; he therefore introduced the *Italian*
 ' opera into *France*. The first time it was presented,
 ' one of the principal parts of the entertainment
 ' consisted of a comic dance that was performed by
 ' six of the nimblest caperers in all *Italy*. At first
 ' they went on expertly, and with great applause ;
 ' but immediately found themselves at a loss, and
 ' were unable to proceed any further, being put out
 ' by the intrusion of a strange dancer, who came
 ' among them no body could tell how, and discon-
 ' certed the entire scheme of their dance, which
 ' had been calculated only for their own number.
 ' This at length threw them into such confusion, that
 ' they were obliged to stand still ! when the manager
 ' of the entertainment coming to them, to see what
 ' was the matter, perceived the cause of their con-
 ' fusion, and obliged them all to unmask (for they
 ' were dressed exactly alike, and wore masks) that
 ' he might detect and seize the impertinent intru-
 ' der ; when, to his and the utter astonishment
 ' of every one present, he vanished as unaccount-
 ' ably as he had come, tho' the eyes of the whole
 ' house were upon him, and there appeared to be
 ' no more than the original number, and the same
 ' persons who began the dance. I believe, Madam,
 ' you may recollect the other circumstances of the
 ' story, which I do not chuse to mention, on this oc-
 ' casion ; they are told in the *secret memoirs* of car-
 ' dinal *Mazarine*.' — ' I do, Sir, (returned she,
 ' with great emotion) remember something of it.
 ' But really' — ' Dear Madam (interrupted another,
 ' whose curiosity was raised too high to bear a mo-
 ' ment's delay) pray let the gentleman proceed !
 ' When he has ended, if he omits any thing, you
 ' may then inform us farther ! Pray, Sir, do pro-
 ' ceed.' —

' Why

‘ Why really, Madam’, (continued he, under some apparent confusion) ‘ I am at a loss how to act, and had much rather be excused ; however, I must beg leave to observe, that, for my own part, I do not believe a single syllable of all the stories of ghosts, and apparitions, and devils, and such-like stuff, that ever were told ; though this story in particular is told in a manner, and confirmed with circumstances, not easy to be contradicted.’——

This solemn preface raised the curiosity of them all to a torture, and alarmed apprehensions, that would not admit of a moment’s suspense. ‘ Dear Sir, pray proceed.’ (echoed from an hundred mouths at once, as they pressed closer to him.) The gentleman bowed and continued ; ‘ The whole company was now thrown into a confusion as great as that of the dancers : they had all reckoned a seventh person, and the connoisseurs in particular, had observed that one of them had shewn a greater agility, and cut higher, than any one they had ever seen before, and indeed than they thought it possible for any human person to do.’ This hint alarmed the whole house, and it was immediately concluded, that the devil had maliciously joined in the dance, on purpose to spoil their sport : an opinion which one or two unlucky circumstances seemed to give weight to, which were, that all the dancers had been dressed like devils, the opera being, *The Fall of Man*, and the dance exhibited as a triumph of the devils, upon the occasion, and that it was acted on a *Sunday Evening*. Trifling as these circumstances really were, they threw the whole audience into a consternation ; some directly fancied the candles burnt blue, others, that the place smelt strong of sulphur ; and one, more impudently foolish than all the rest, insisted, that he had observed the *clown* foot ; but what is most surprising of all, was, that the cardinal, who could not be suspected of superstition, was so affected by it, that he ordered the house to be dismissed directly, and that opera never to be performed again, nor any other, on a *Sunday*, which

‘ which was observed during his life, and for some time after.’———

It is impossible for words to describe the situation of the company, at the conclusion of this story. At the mention of the candles burning blue, all turned their eyes about, and fancied the same; as to their smelling sulphur, it was more than imagination, the pretended constable having taken an opportunity, while they were all in confusion, to throw, unperceived, a composition which he had brought with him on purpose, into the fire, which had filled the room with a most sulphureous smell, and more than one of the company declared, *they thought* they saw a cloven foot, or something very like it, fly out of the window.

The scene was now changed to an appearance really frightful. Every lengthened visage was as pale as death, every haggard eye staring in wild affright. The old lady, to whom the tale had been particularly addressed, confirmed every syllable of it; and added many circumstances from secret histories, of her own immediate invention; and every one present had some similar story to tell in support of it: till they at length terrified one another to that degree, that they were afraid to look around, or even to raise their voices to bid their servants prepare for their departure.

The gentleman, pleased at the success of his artifice, resolved to improve it to the utmost, and take advantage of their present situation, to work them up to some action, that should make them ashamed, at least, ever to be guilty of the like profaneness of that sacred day again: “Defend us, heaven!” (exclaimed he, fixing his eyes with horror on one of the windows) “What can that be?” This completed their terror: they all believed the devil was returning to destroy them, for the boldest of them all had not the spirit to turn her eyes to see what he looked at, and joined most devoutly in his ejaculation to heaven for defence.

He saw this was the proper moment for what he intended, and so dropping suddenly upon his knees,
in

in which they all followed his example, he repeated aloud the confession in the service of the church, adding, with particular emphasis, to the sins of commission, this of breaking the Sabbath, and to those of omission, the neglect of the duties of religion, to which it was devoted ; and concluded with a solemn vow, never to be guilty of either again, if heaven would remit its wrath, and spare them for the present.

All the while he had been performing this ceremony, he had kept his eyes fixed upon the window, and, at the end of it, exclaimed in a rapture, " Our vows are heard ! it vanishes ! the danger is over !"—Upon which he arose, as did they all, and fell into a most serious and devout conversation, upon so signal an instance of divine favour and mercy, while their coaches and chairs were getting ready to carry them home, when they retired with thoughts very different from those which they usually brought from such places.

Though every lady in the company had been frightened into a fit of devotion, by what had happened, none suffered so severely by it as the lady of the house, who, notwithstanding the public contempt she shewed for religion, was so fearful of ghosts and hobgoblins, that after having persuaded her husband to lay out a large sum of money (much more than prudence would have permitted) in repairing and fitting up, in the modern taste, a beautiful antique castle that was upon his estate, upon hearing that a particular apartment of it was haunted by a spirit, quit-
ted it directly and never could be prevailed on to sleep a second night in it. As soon, therefore, as the company was all gone, and she left to her own meditations, her fears recurred so fast upon her, that she fell into fits, which seemed to threaten her with the total loss of her reason, raving of devils and damnation, and railing against cards, and Sabbath-breaking, with all the vehemence of a modern enthusiast, among his mad brethren in *Moorfields*. But this did not last long ! the gentleman, to avoid detection, had been obliged

exclamation : and to heighten the distress, they all got up at once, and, rushing together to raise the fallen pair, hindered each other so, that they lay struggling in no very agreeable situation, or decent posture on the floor ; for the cat, enraged at the injury she had received, exerted all her strength for revenge, and fixed her claws in the face and neck of her supposed enemy, growling with the most envenomed spite, which made the innocent author of her disaster roar, kick, and sprawl, with all her might, as she was unable to disengage herself from the claws of her furious adversary, or even rise from the ground where she lay.

At length, some of the company made a shift to rise, and part the combatants ; when the poor gentlewoman was hurried to her chair, with her face and neck all in a stream of blood, the attention of the company being entirely taken up with the fright of the lady of the house, for the danger of her favourite.

The spirit and strength which she had shewed in revenging of the injury she had received, was some consolation to her mistress, as it seemed to shew that she could not have been very much hurt ; but one of the company, happening to mention her condition, renewed her fright, and made her resolve instantly, to send for one of the most eminent male practitioners of the obstetric art, to inquire into the circumstances of her case, and administer any assistance that might be necessary, upon the unhappy occasion.

Accordingly, a servant was instantly dispatched, in the mistress's name to the doctor, who attended without a moment's delay, imagining, from the urgency of the message, that some lady of distinction might be taken ill in her house, as he knew the lady herself could have no occasion for him, and the footman could give him no farther information, than that some accident had happened in the company, of which there was the usual croud. As soon as he arrived, he was shewn directly into the drawing-room, whither the lady, with a few select friends, had retired,

tired, where one of them leading him up to her, and lifting up an handkerchief, that covered the poor dear creature in her lap, opened the case to him, for the mistress's grief was so great, that she was not able to speak.

It is impossible to describe the rage, into which this threw the doctor : he looked upon it as an insult not to be forgiven ; and, as he could not wreak his resentment upon ladies, by an act of violence upon their persons, resolved to shew it, by his treatment of the creature, for which they implored his assistance. Accordingly, he stooped very gravely, and taking it out of the mistress's lap, laid it on the ground, and, setting his heel upon its head, crushed it to death, before any one had time to interpose in its behalf ; then turning to the lady, whose astonishment was so great, that she had no power to speak, " There, madam ! " (said he) " your favourite is delivered from all danger of abortion ; but take care, how you provoke, another time, the resentment of a man, whom no-body provokes with impunity. " — Saying this, he turned about and marched away, leaving the whole company, and particularly the mistress of the innocent victim of his vengeance, in a condition not to be expressed : she wept, beat her breast, stamped with her foot upon the floor, and vowed the bitterest vengeance ; nor is it easy to say, how far her passion might have transported her, had not a gentleman entered the room that very moment, with a young owl in his hand, which he had taken out of the nest that morning.

The sovereign remedy for a woman's grief, for the loss of any favourite, whether a cat, a sparrow, or an husband, is a new one. The sight of the owl instantly struck her : it had such a gravity and wisdom in its looks, that she resolved to make it the confidant of all her secrets, and the only counsellor from whom she would take advice, that should contradict her inclinations. Accordingly, poor *Grimalkin* was ordered to be taken away, and the new favourite received in her place. This restored the general harmony and

good humour ; and the entertainment, that was designed to celebrate Mrs. Puss's restoration to her mistress's bosom, served for the reception of the stranger. However, though a new favourite consoled the mistress for the loss of the former, she did not neglect to pay proper respect to its remains : the body was carefully laid up till next morning, when an eminent undertaker was sent for, and orders given for her decent interment.

C H A P. XIX.

More happy fruits of female government. The history of an eminent patroness of polite arts. Her peculiar method of shewing a distinguished taste and judgment. An extraordinary charge in a bill at an inn.

TURN your eye now to the other side, and observe that superannuated figure of foppery, at the upper end of the table, who plumes himself like a peacock, upon the gaudiness of his dress, and gives his contribution with an ostentation, and affected dignity, that would disgrace a prince. He is another instance of the happy fruits of woman's government. With all the importance he assumes here, in his own house he is a perfect cypher, of no consequence in himself, but as he adds to that of his wife.

So insignificant a character may be thought incapable of affording, either instruction or improvement sufficient to reward the trouble of displaying it ; but then it introduces another, to which it serves as a shade to shew the glaring colours of it in a proper light, and illustrate the vanity, as the former did the vice, of female caprice and ambition.

He had the solid advantage of entering into life with a very affluent fortune ; but instead of making it a means of happiness to himself, and benefit to society, by a rational and benevolent use ; to gratify the
most

most absurd avarice, he gave up every enjoyment of it, by marrying an heiress, the known vanity, impetuosity, and extravagance of whose temper, so far over-balanced the greatness of her wealth, that no man of reason and spirit, who had any other possible way of earning a morsel of bread, would have linked his fate to her.

The consequence was just what he deserved. The moment he became her husband, she assumed the most absolute authority over him, and all he possessed, as if the words of their connection had been inverted, and he had made the covenant of duty and obedience to her; and instantly set up for the patroness of merit in all the fine arts and sciences, to shew her superiority of genius over the rest of her sex.

Such an ambition directly marked her out for a bubble to all the needy, sharpening adventurers, who, under the pretence of such merit, fly like locusts to this fantastic people, from every part of the globe, in swarms, that literally devour the fruits of the land in such a manner, as to starve the natives, who are engaged in the same pursuits, and thereby discourage and prevent their rising to that excellence, the want of which is objected to them.

For though there may not perhaps be any natural difference between the sexes in the abilities of mind necessary to form a proper judgment of any science, yet the female labours under such disadvantages from a wrong education, that it is next to impossible for a woman to exert the faculties of reason in any distinguished degree; the time, when the seeds of knowledge should be sown, being devoted to trifles or absurdities, that deserve a worse name, which by these means take such possession of the mind, as to influence the conduct of the whole life. Some rare instances indeed there are of women, who break thro' this oppression, and rise above the prejudices of such an education, to a degree of eminence equal to the foremost of the other sex; but this requires such an uncommon strength of genius, as is indulged to very few; and was by no means the lot of this person:

all her pretensions to taste and judgment, being founded on her ability to reward them liberally in others. But, even in this, her injudicious vanity has always marred the good effects of her generosity and wealth; for not being able herself to discern real merit, and disdaining to follow the opinions of others, for fear of passing unnoticed among the crowd, she blundered upon the most unlucky method of distinguishing herself, that ever entered into an human head; for, as if her opinion was of more weight than that of all the world beside, she sets up to contradict the voice of the public, and always patronizes those whom they reject and decry.

Such a conduct, as I said, naturally lays her open to the impositions of flattery and fraud: Though she professes a taste for all the finer arts, music is the particular object of her favour and encouragement: As soon as a new performer arrives, if he is in distress, as is almost always the case, he immediately waits upon this lady, to implore her patronage; this necessarily introduces a display of his abilities, which she never fails to reward munificently, and professes her approbation of, but cautiously, and in general terms only, that she may retract it afterwards, should the public unluckily join with her, for her opinion is always in the opposite scale to that of the rest of the world. But, if he is disapproved, she takes him under her immediate protection: she invites him constantly to her table, she supplies him with money, with the most boundless profusion, and makes parties among that croud of company, which her wealth and turn for expensive pleasure constantly collect about her, to support him against the favourites of the public: and to shew, that she does this merely from a spirit of contradiction, should the most eminent of these fall off, or be eclipsed by the superior merit of a rival, she instantly forgets the animosities with which she pursued his success, and receives him into her protection and patronage, admiring his grossest faults, and praising the very defects she decried before. While her gentle mate is obliged to submit to this dimpation
of

of his darling wealth, and to be the humble echo of her opinions, in all their various changes, without daring to interpose a word in vindication of his own judgment or authority ; but thinking himself happy in being permitted to make use of the pittances of his fortune, which he thus contributes to public charities, to give him an opportunity of assuming the momentary consequence you see.

The many impositions which she has suffered from these rapacious sycophants, would be sufficient to make any person see the folly of such a conduct, who had not wilfully resolved against conviction. I shall just mention one instance, for the grossness and singularity of it, and so conclude the disagreeable representation.

To shew her elegant taste in this most pleasant entertainment, and raise an opinion of her importance, in the polite world, among her tenants and neighbours in the country, whither she retires for the summer, she always takes with her some of her favourite performers, who cannot fail to please persons who never had an opportunity of hearing any better ; and sometimes even will condescend, upon very particular occasions, as when she gives public entertainments, to comply so far with the taste of others, as to send for some of those who are highest in general repute ; though her country seat is almost at the extremity of the kingdom ; which makes the expence of such a compliment very considerable, for she defrays all the charge of travelling, besides giving a very genteel gratification for the trouble.

Upon an occasion of this kind, some little time since, she sent for a musician of note, to conduct a concert, which she designed to give her neighbours, in the highest taste. The man, finding he had nothing to pay, an unlimited credit being established for him at every stage upon the road, travelled down in the highest luxury to her house, where his performance was also rewarded with a very handsome present. But, whether he thought it unequal to his merit and trouble, or imagining that he should never be sent for thither again, resolved to make the most of

the present opportunity ; upon his return he took up money at every inn he stopped at on the road, upon the credit given him, and, where he lay, constantly prevailed upon one of the compliant females, who attended, to sleep with him for a considerable gratification, which he also ordered to be charged to his bill, and left for this lady to pay.

Such an insult might be thought to merit her resentment ; but as the punishing of it would open scenes, which must lay her under a necessity of discontinuing her favourite practice of sending for such persons, and expose her extravagance and taste, to public ridicule and censure, she thought proper to over-look it as unnoticed, and pay the bills, without seeming to examine, into the particulars of them ; and to prevent the story's receiving credit, should it happen to be made known, continued to countenance the man, and even invited him into the country with her the next summer, when he played her many tricks of the same kind, finding he escaped so easily after this.

I have dwelt so long upon the character of this and the former lady, to save myself trouble upon other occasions, as their actions afford a general representation of female life.——I mean the lives of those females, who, looking upon themselves as raised above the rest of their sex, by rank or fortune, think it necessary to shew their superiority, by breaking through all the rules, which reason and religion have established for their conduct.

How prevailing the force of such examples is, the instances just given sufficiently shew. Indeed, such is the implicit adoration paid to wealth, such the reigning passion, for joining in what is called good company, and partaking of their luxurious entertainments, that let the rich and great propose any folly and vice, however gross and absurd, as the means of introduction to their tables and parties of pleasure, they will be sure of finding persons enough to comply with their humours. These instances are taken from the most licentious caprices, and absurd vanity and ambition.

ambition. The former admit of no excuse ; and though the latter may be less blameable in themselves, and even bear a kind of resemblance to virtues in many cases, the success is not much better, nor even sufficient to justify this ambition in females, to quit the subordinate sphere allotted them by nature, and strive to make a figure in the busier and more extensive province of man.

Nor is this the only useful instruction that may be drawn from a display of these characters. It shews also the ridiculous and unhappy situation into which man falls, when he poorly gives up the reins put into his hand by providence, and submits to the government of a woman, whom he was born to command.

CHAP. XX.

An irremediable defect in human policy. The history of a most eminent personage. A new way of paying the debts of guardianship. A daughter's disobedience in refusing to comply with more than paternal love. The hero of the tale extracts profit from charity, and asserts the rights of agency, in defiance of public opinion and shame.

TAKE notice of the person immediately below him, whom I have just given you an account of. By his large athletic make, nature seemed to design him for some of the most laborious employments in life ; but his genius led him to other pursuits, and made him depend upon the sharpness of his mind, rather than the strength of his body, for his support and advancement in the world.

The depravity of man makes many employments necessary in a community, for public safety and advantage, the execution of which is attended with so many circumstances of horror in the punishment of unhappy delinquents, that no man, who is not destitute

of that sympathetic tenderness which is the highest honour of his nature, can bear to undertake them.

This throws them upon persons, speculatively speaking, the most unfit for such offices; whose poverty obliges them to practise every iniquity of the profession into which they were first initiated by vice, and whose hearts are hardened by habit, against every sentiment of virtue and honour, every finer feeling of nature. Thus the hangman, whose crimes first reduced him to take up the horrid trade, continues it from distress, and puts to death wretched offenders, for facts which he is hourly guilty of himself, without compassion or remorse, till he is detected, and suffers the same punishment from another hand. But this is one of those defects of human policy, which no human art can remedy.

In an employment not very dissimilar in its nature, though dignified by a less opprobrious name, has this person displayed his abilities, for many years to the astonishment of all who have been witnesses of his exploits. There is a mystery in such scenes too horrid for representation; I shall therefore pass them over, and barely relate a few anecdotes of his private life, which will sufficiently enable you to form a judgment of his whole character.

A man who, from one of the poorest employments by which a wretched life can be honestly sustained, came unexpectedly to the possession of a considerable fortune, by the death of a relation, who would have suffered him to perish for want of a morsel of bread, had some way conceived such a confidence in this person, that upon his own death, in a very little time after his elevation, he entrusted his orphan daughter to his care, together with what he had been able to save for her, during his short possession of his estate, the inheritance of it passing away, for want of his having male issue, to another branch of the family.

During the minority of his ward, he took care to educate her according to the direction of her father, in a decent, but frugal manner, as the fortune she had a right to expect, was not sufficient to place her above
a necessity

a necessity of industry and œconomy ; but, upon her coming of age, he was obliged to act another part : He had spent the greater part of her fortune in his pleasures ; for, strange to think ! even he had a passion for the pleasures of polite life, and was admitted into the genteel company, to enjoy them, without any inquiry into his character or station, while he was able to bear the expence. Such a situation must have been distressing to any other man, but the business of his profession soon suggested a method of disengaging himself, which his extensive principles made no objection to his putting in practice.

On the day, before she was to receive from him the fortune, which was the whole foundation of her future hopes in life, he shewed no signs of uneasiness, but confidently gave her notice, that he designed to pay her the moment she was intitled to receive it, and even appointed the other trustees of the will to meet at his house, and be witnesses to his punctual execution of his trust. Such a conduct naturally gave satisfaction to every person concerned, and entirely removed some apprehensions which they had entertained before. But they soon found reason to change their sentiments again. For that very evening he took an occasion to go through a bye-street, just after it became dark, and when he thought himself in no danger of being taken notice of, where he rolled himself in the kennel, battered his head against the stones, as if he had received several severe strokes, and scattered some papers he had in his pocket for the purpose, about the street, and then, in that abused appearance, and with all the symptoms of affright and despair in his looks, ran into a neighbouring coffee-house, where he told the company, that he had been just knocked down, and robbed of a considerable sum of money, which he was to pay the next day.

Some of them instantly went to the place, in which he said this had happened, where they found his hat and wig, and the papers he had left for them, which at first gained credit to the story ; but when the general tenor of his character, and the circumstances of

his being to pay that sum the next day, came to be considered, the whole artifice was seen through, especially as he never offered to prove where he had received the money, nor gave any reason for his carrying such a sum about him, the very bulk and weight of which, (for he said it was all in specie, to prevent too particular an inquiry about bank-notes) must have been a trouble and incumbrance to him ; but barely alledged, that he had received it : and if any one expressed the least doubt of what he said, or desired to have these particulars better explained, he directly charged them with making insinuations injurious to his character and credit, which he threatened to vindicate by law.

Such a menace, from such a man, was not ineffectual ; The injured lady was absolutely deprived of every means of doing herself justice ; and, as the poor are very friendless, no unconcerned person cared to enter into a dispute with one of his known experience, and who was acquainted with methods of putting his menaces in execution, which the most innocent might not find it easy to guard against ; besides it was universally and well known, that, even if the whole affair could be detected, he was not able to make satisfaction. Thus every circumstance concurred to give success to his scheme, though not quite so smoothly as he could wish ; and the poor young lady, having no redress, was obliged to return to the low state from which she had so lately been raised, and in which she still lives, a life of servitude ; happy had she never been flattered with better hopes.

But, though he could escape the reach of man, divine justice was not to be defeated so, whose vengeance attacked him in so signal a manner, as plainly shewed the just retaliation of the unerring hand of Heaven.

Seared as his heart must be by such a life, to the more general feelings of humanity, nature was not quite debauched, and he felt the tenderness and fond anxiety of paternal love in all its force, for an only daughter,

daughter, on whose education, in all the polite accomplishments of the more exalted ranks of life, he spared neither pains nor expence, supporting and adorning her in the genteelest manner, and taking evident delight in lavishing, on such uses, all that he could acquire by every possible means.

Such a conduct, though carried to an excess, had something so amiable in it, that in some measure it palliated the blacker parts of his character, and even weakened the credit of many of the stories told of him. But just as he was beginning to enjoy the fruits of his care, by seeing his daughter's eminence in the accomplishment he had taken such pains to teach, universally acknowledged, an event happened, that not only deprived him of that pleasure, but also turned the merit of all his former fondness into the foulest reproach.

His daughter was observed, for some time, to bear the appearance of the most poignant distress. Whenever she was asked the cause of it, by any of her friends, she would melt into a flood of tears, nor would give any other answer, than that she was the most miserable of human beings. This raised a variety of conjectures, some of which were far from being advantageous to her. But at length the secret was revealed. She flew one day, in the utmost agony of distress, to a lady of her acquaintance, who had seemed to shew the liveliest sense of her grief, and begged her protection from the cruelty of her father, which, she said, was too great to be borne, ever since she had refused to gratify an impious passion which he had long entertained for her, and which had been the motive of all his care and expence in her education.

Such stories are so shocking to human nature that they are generally doubted; but his character gave such weight to any charge against him; that this was universally believed. At first he made some efforts to induce his daughter to return to him; but she was deaf to his solicitations, and, being destitute of every other means of support, threw herself upon
the

the favour of the public, and lives by her skill in the accomplishments, which he took so much pains to have her taught. This was not only a severe mortification to his pride, but also made him be looked upon with such horror and detestation, that he has been ever since secluded from the society of every person of virtue or reputation.

I see you wonder at the inconsistency of such a person's appearing in the situation you see him at present, contributing to a public charity for the relief of the calamities of the poor. To one who can look no farther into man, than as he appears at the present moment, such a conduct justly appears unaccountable ; but consider, that these are the only places now open for him to mix with persons of character and fortune : for institutions of this kind make no distinction of persons, but receive, indiscriminately, the benefactions of all who offer. Besides, a genius, so ready as his, can turn every action of life to advantage, and extract profit even from giving charity. One instance of this kind of address will prove the justice of this reflection, and shew that in every action of his life, he really preserves a consistency of character.

Some years ago, the sea broke over its banks, in a distant part of the kingdom, and not only laid the country waste for a great extent, but also threatened the ruin of the whole, if some means were not immediately applied to put a stop to it. Such an exigence required instant care ; the government sent workmen directly to repair the breach, who were obliged to struggle with all the severities of the season, in a most inhospitable climate, to effect their work, it being the depth of winter, and the danger admitting of no delay.

So severe a service naturally excited the compassion of this people, the most humane and generous under Heaven. Accordingly a public subscription was opened to buy warm cloathing for the labourers, thus employed for the advantage of the public, which met with such general approbation, that a fund sufficient

ficient for that purpose was immediately raised. This person, from the reason hinted above, was one of the first subscribers, and appeared most active in promoting the scheme, offering frequently to undertake the most troublesome part of the conducting of it : But some of them, who were acquainted with his character, absolutely refused to let him interfere, in any manner that should give him the least power over the fund. However, as they did not think proper to make the motives of this caution public, he took an opportunity, one day, when they were indispensably obliged to be absent, to renew his offer, which his assiduity and success in soliciting subscriptions gave such weight to, that it was received, and he was appointed to purchase and send down some particular articles, that appeared to be immediately wanted, to pay for which, five hundred pounds were directly given into his hands.

This was what he had all along laboured for ; accordingly, as soon as he received the money, he remitted of his assiduity, and came no more to their meetings, never taking the least care about the things, for the purchase of which it had been given to him. So flagrant an act of injustice raised the resentment of every one concerned ; but that he was prepared for, and despised ; and when they required him to return the money, he gave them a bill for his own trouble, in which he charged every step he had ever gone, to solicit and promote the subscription, and fees of agency for every shilling he had received and paid in the course of it, by which means he greatly over-balanced their demand.

Bare-faced as such an imposition was, they had no redress ; for he had carefully made his charge according to the rates of his profession ; and, though it had been always the intention of every one to bestow their labour as well as their money, without any lucrative view of return, yet, as he had never entered into an actual engagement to that effect there was now no possibility of defeating his charge.

Such

Such an attempt can never be made with success a second time, as the first instance raises a general alarm. However, he still persists to join in every thing of the kind that is proposed, in hopes of seizing some such lucky opportunity as he did before. But it is easy to foresee that he will be disappointed; for though he exerts himself so strenuously, and takes upon him to offer his advice and direction, as you see, the prejudice against him is so strong, that every thing he says is suspected of design, every thing he proposes rejected, even without examining. Nay so strong is the detestation of him grown, since this affair of his daughter, that some societies have refused him admission, and others even gone so far as to expel him, in the most ignominious manner, from among them.

C H A P. XXI.

The representation concluded with an eminent man-midwife. His motives for taking up that profession, with some unfortunate anecdotes of his practice.

I SAALL now present you with a character, the folly of which is a shade to its virtues, and shews them through a medium of ridicule and contempt, more humbling to human vanity, than the most atrocious vice.

Observe that skeleton, that figure of famine, who even after a feast looks as if he had fasted for a month, and was just ready to perish for want. This is another of the principal promoters, and, indeed, supporters of public charity, from the best of motives; his benefactions always flowing from the benevolence of his heart, though too often qualified in the manner, by circumstances that throw both the gift and giver into ridicule.

For such is the benevolence of his temper that, not satisfied with providing for the wants of the poor, he will see that the supplies which he bestows are
applied

applied in the manner he directs, which introduces him too familiarly into the domestic distresses of the unhappy, many of whom would rather perish for want, than make the circumstance of their wants known : nor is his fortune only devoted to these uses, his very personal service is always ready, particularly in some cases, where unfortunately, a motive of a very different nature from his real one is too liable to be mistaken for it, by the malignant temper of the times.

There is no situation of human distress that calls so strongly for compassion and relief as child-birth. How severe then must the case of those unhappy creatures be, who are left to struggle through such pangs, unassisted, unprovided with any of the comforts, so necessary to support nature in such a conflict.

A sense of this struck his humane heart ! He felt the distress, and liberally supplied the relief. Well had he stopped here ! but fearing that such relief should be misapplied, or insufficient, he would attend himself, to see that nothing was wanted ; and at length to make his assistance compleat, learned the *obstetric* art, and now necessarily has more business in it, as he pays for being employed, by the benefactions he bestows, than any one member of the profession.

Laudable as this care and the motive of it are, it would have been much better, had not the sanguineness of his temper hurried him so far ! had he been content to supply their wants, and let others, whose profession it more immediately is, administer relief, For now, what a field does it open for ill-natured ridicule, to see a man of his consequence descend to offices, in the ordinary acceptation of the world, so far beneath him ? how easy is it to say !, how easy to be believed, that idle curiosity, or some grosser motive, prompts to such uncommon assiduity ?

Nor is the evil of this indiscretion confined to him alone, it reflects a kind of ridicule upon the very virtue it would serve ; and makes less sanguine minds refrain from the good, for fear they should also share in the reproach.—For it is not sufficient for a man to have
the

the testimony of his own conscience for the rectitude of his intentions; there is also a debt of appearance due to the public, to avoid offence, and inculcate virtue by example.

One instance will illustrate this, and shew the inconveniencies of his inconsiderate zeal.

A poor woman applied to him for relief some time before the moment. According to his custom, he supplied her necessities, and took a direction where to call and see her. The woman, either mistaken herself, or tempted by distress to deceive him, told him a wrong time, which made him come too soon; and, as he always made her some charitable present whenever he came, she still found some complaints to induce him to repeat his visits.

At length, the frequency of his coming took the notice of the alley in which she lived, who could not conceive any honest business that a gentleman of his fine appearance could have with such a poor woman, in so obscure a place; and as such remarks are always improved, some *friend* hinted to the woman's husband, a labouring-man, who was out at his work all day, and therefore could not be witness of his disgrace, that his wife had many improper visitors come to her, and must certainly have taken to bad courses, to encourage such doings.

The cuckold in imagination went directly home, in the greatest rage at his dishonour; but the name of the visitor, and an assurance that there came no other, soon pacified him, especially as a ready thought struck him, that he might turn the good man's humanity to an advantage, of a nature very different from what he designed; for the fellow was well supplied with what is called *mother-wit* which want had sharpened, and freed from every restraint of honesty. He therefore sullenly told his wife, that it might be so as she said, but he would have a better proof than her word for it, and therefore she must let him see her visitor the next time he came, and, as she valued her life, assent to every thing which he, her husband, should do or say.

The

The readiness of her consent encouraged him to open his design to her, which her nuptial obedience and hopes of gain, made her not only give into, but she also improved the scheme to a certainty of success.

The husband accordingly, having prepared some of his associates, placed them properly, the next time the gentleman went to visit his wife, who immediately upon his coming into the room, began to *cry out*, and implore his assistance.

Though the business came a little inconveniently, upon him, as he was full dressed, he would not desert her in her distress, but directly set about giving her the necessary assistance, in the hurry of which, some unlucky stoop burst the string that tied his breeches behind, and down they fell to his heels.

Though this disaster disconcerted him a good deal, the cries of his patient would not give him time to adjust himself, but he was proceeding in his business, with the most anxious assiduity, when in rushed the husband, with a stroke that felled him, fettered as he was in his breeches to the ground.

The scene was now changed ! the woman no longer in labour, cried only for revenge *on the base man who attempted her virtue*, as the witnesses present attested, they had heard her before, and now caught him in the very fact ; which the posture he was in, and above all, the circumstance of his breeches, too strongly confirmed, to the crowd whom the noise had drawn together.

Terrified almost to death, at the threats of the enraged husband, who could hardly be held from taking personal vengeance that very moment, and sensible of the consequence, should public fame catch hold of such a tale, the poor *criminal* threw himself on his knees, and, convinced that all vindication of his innocence would be vain, sought only a composition for his offence.

This was just what the parties wanted ; but still to increase his terrors, and enhance the price of his escape, such difficulties were raised as made him glad to yield to any terms they could impose ; and accordingly

ingly, he not only purged himself of having done any actual dishonour to her husband, for the intention they would not admit him to controvert, but also made satisfaction to his repentment for the attempt, with 100*l*. for which as he had not such a sum immediately about him, he gave a draught on his banker, and waited in *dureffe*, till the arrival of it released him.

This misfortune made him more cautious for some time ; but he begins to forget it now, and goes on *with his business* as before. One thing indeed he takes sufficient care about, and that is, that the waist of his breeches is properly secured : for so strong is the impression, which that accident made upon him, that he never walks a dozen steps without pulling them up.

You see most of them begin to nod, I shall therefore draw the curtain here, and leave them to their nap, with this observation, that a few such examples as the clergyman, and many of the kind there are, and particularly eminent in this exalted virtue of charity, in both the sexes, are sufficient to take off the prejudice which the others must excite, and to preserve the proper respect to the principles they propose to imitation.

C H A P. XXII.

Some account of the officers of the charity. Their care of themselves. They fall out about the division of the spoil. A terrible uproar is appeased by a demand of general concern. The concise manner of passing public accounts. CHRYSAL changes his service.

WHEN I had taken a sufficient view of the governors, I had leisure to turn my observations to the servants of the society, whose behaviour raised an indignation too strong to be expressed by words.

If the governors feasted they paid for their feasting ; but the servants feasted no less, and were paid for it ! nor was this enormity confined to this day : their whole time was one continued scene of it, and much the greater part of the contributions of the public was pro-

prostituted to this abominable abuse : while the poor, for whose relief they were given, too often languished in want of the meanest necessaries, the fund being insufficient for their wants, and the luxury and wages of their servants.

I was diverted from these reflexions, by an uproar, in one of the private apartments of the house, where some of the superior servants had got together over a bottle of wine, to settle their respective dividends of the subscriptions of the day. I call them servants, for that is the proper appellation of all who serve for hire. As I was yet undisposed of, to any particular person, I had it in my power, as I have told you before, to range though the whole territories of the society, to which I belonged, and therefore flew to see what might be the cause of this riot, in so improper a place, where I was witness to such a scene, as almost transcends belief.

At the upper end of the table sat the *treasurer* (for it would be a reproach to the poorest society, to have fewer officers than the state) with his accounts before him. After a bumper, to the success of the charity, ' Mr. Steward,' said he, ' our subscriptions have been so good this year, that I think we may venture to enlarge our salaries, a little ; for last year they were really scarce worthy a gentleman's acceptance.'

' That is true' (replied the steward) ' and I believe we may enlarge the house allowance too, for, upon the present establishment, it is hardly enough for the days we meet here, and will not afford any thing to carry home, to entertain a friend with, as a gentleman would desire : It is but swelling some of the *sick articles*, which at present are scarce above the consumption. When I was overseer of the parish, we managed things better. We then lived like gentlemen : Nay I remember when I was churchwarden, that we spent a whole summer, jaunting about the country, in pursuit of a gentleman, who had a child sworn to him, for fifty shillings, which he had been ordered to pay, till the bill of our expences came to 15l. and yet nobody could

' could say against it : So that it is our own fault, if we do not live well.'

' Right' (joined the apothecary) ' nor was the appointment for medicines any way sufficient. Had half what the physicians prescribed been given, there would have been nothing to be got by the contract.'

' ———' How, Mr. Apothecary' (returned the cook, with a sneer) ' nothing to be got ! pray, was not all you got clear gain ? I am sure, from the benefit received by the patients, there did not appear to have been any thing above brick dust, or rotten-poft, in any of the stuffs they took.'

' Pray S—S—Sir,' (fluttered the apothecary, in a rage) ' wh—wh—what's that you say ; who m—m—made you a judge of medicines ?' —' Not you, I thank God, Sir,' (said the cook) ' as my health shews. But I have good reason for what I say ; for tho' I put double the quantity of meat in my broth, I could not prevent the people's dying, nor make the few who recovered, able to go out in twice the usual time.' ' S—S—Sir, 'tis all a d-d-damn'd lye, their d-d-dying was occasioned by the p—p—poorness of the b—b—broth, and the badness of their p—p—p—provisions, and not by the w—w—w—want of medicines ; and I'll p—p—p—prove it, Sir : and how you sup—p—p—ported your family on the m—m—meat that should have been d—d—dressed for the sick !' —' You'll prove it Sir ! Take care that you do ! Gentlemen ! take notice of what he says ! This is striking at my character ; and must affect my bread.'

' That is true, Mr. Cook' (said the secretary, who had been an attorney's clerk) ' and whatever strikes at a man's character, so as to affect his bread, is actionable.' —' B—b—but, Sir, he attacked my cha—cha—character first, and I'll b—b—bring my action too.' —' So you may, Sir,' (replied the lawyer) ' the action will be on both sides.—The dispute had hitherto been kept up with such heat, that the company could not interpose a word to pacify them, but the mention of the law made it every one's con-

cera

cern in a moment.—‘ Silence, Gentlemen,’ (said the treasurer, raising slowly his august bulk, and striking his hand upon the table) ‘ Silence I say, and let me hear no more of this brawling. Mr. Cook! Mr. Apothecary! what do you both mean? to discover the secrets of our society, and to blow us all up at once? You both heard me say, that every thing which was wrong should be adjusted! could you not wait for that, without falling into this indecent, this unprofitable wrangle? As for you, Mr. Secretary, the heaven of your profession will break out, it is sufficient to infect the whole mass! Is this your promise, your oath? To follow your business, and do as you are ordered quietly and implicitly, without meddling any farther, or perplexing us with the tricks of your former trade? But it was in vain to expect it. A lawyer can as well live without food, as without fomenting quarrels, and setting his neighbours together by the ears: Bring an action indeed! and so betray our mystery, to the impertinent remarks of counsellors, and the scoffs of templars and attorney’s clerks. Let me hear one word more of the kind, and this moment I declare off all connection, and leave every man to shift for himself. Our general oath of secrecy, attested under our hands, secures me from information, as it would invalidate the testimony of us all.’

With these words, he turned about, to leave the room, when the steward, catching him by the breast, pulled him into his chair, and holding him down, *by main force*, addressed him thus:——‘ Good God Sir! what do you mean! to take notice of the warmth of madmen, who know not what they say; you, Mr. Treasurer, have moved in a higher sphere of life, and ought to be above such things. *You* were not raised from cleaning the shoes of a pettifogging attorney, in whose drudgery you lost your ears! from being scullion in a nobleman’s kitchen, or servant to a mountebank, to dispense his packets to the mob; *you* were not raised, I say, from any of these stations to the rank of a gentleman, by this office, and

‘and should be above taking offence at the low-lived
 ‘behaviour of such creatures, who know no bet-
 ‘ter.’——‘Nor w—w—w—was a I full-handed
 ‘ten-times b—b—bankrupt,’ (interrupted the apo-
 thecary, as he would have done sooner, had rage
 left him power of utterance) ‘that b—b—being un-
 ‘able to get credit any l—l—l—longer, came from
 ‘cheating the p—p—p—public, to cheating the
 ‘p—p—p—poor! nor a c—c—c—cast off, worn out
 ‘p—p—p—pimping footman, whose dirty services
 ‘w—w—w—were rewarded with this place.’

This made the madness general, and they were
 just going to proceed to blows, when the porter en-
 tered hastily, and told them the committee were ad-
 journed to their chamber, and had sent for their ac-
 counts to sit upon directly.

This brought them all to their senses, and made
 them friends in a moment. ‘Gentlemen’ (said the
 treasurer) ‘we have been all too hot, all to blame;
 ‘but let there be no more of it! let us agree among
 ‘ourselves, and we may defy the world.’

Upon this a general shake of the hand put an end
 to the whole contest, and they proceeded to business,
 as if no such thing had ever happened, unanimous in
 their endeavours to cheat the public, and fatten on
 the spoils of the poor.

By that time the committee had smoked a pipe,
 and drank their coffee, the accounts were laid before
 them, over which they nodded a few moments, and
 then passed them without exception. The next thing
 was to pay the salaries of the officers, in which distri-
 bution it fell to my lot to be given to the chaplain.

End of the FIRST VOLUME.

CHRYSA L:
— OR, THE
A D V E N T U R E S
— OF A
G U I N E A.

Wherein are exhibited

VIEWS of several striking Scenes, with
curious and interesting ANECDOTES, of
the most noted Persons in every Rank of Life,
whose Hands it passed through, in AMERICA,
ENGLAND, HOLLAND, GERMANY, and POR-
TUGAL.

*Hold the Mirror up to Nature,
To shew Vice its own Image, Virtue his own Likeness,
And the very Age and Body of the Times
His Form and Pressure.*

SHAKESPEAR.

Qui capit, ille facit.

By an A D E P T.

The THIRD EDITION, greatly enlarged and corrected.

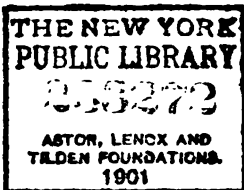
In FOUR VOLUMES.

VOL. II.

L O N D O N:

Printed for JOHN HILL in the Strand.

M, DCC, LXVII.



CONTENTS

THE

CONTENTS

OF THE

SECOND VOLUME.

BOOK THE FIRST.

CHAP. I.

S*SOME remarks on language. Character of CHRYSAL's new master. CHRYSAL attends his master's wife on a visit to a superior Lady. Polite reception.* Page 1.

CHAP. II.

A genteel evening. A dream, and a bett, and a family supper. Conjugal tenderness. The Bishop's dejection at the death of the Doctor, and danger of the Archbishop, is diverted by another dream. 5

CHAP. III.

A dissertation on dreaming. The dream pursued to the astonishment, and almost conversion of the Bishop's lady. Her veracity in recounting some circumstances relating to it. She and his Lordship persuade each other to dream that it is true. 11

CHAP. IV.

History of the dreamer. She loses her wager which she pays with pleasure. His Lordship waits upon her Grace. His knowledge of the world, promotes a noble A. 2.

CONTENTS.

noble instance of charity. CHRYSAL enters into the service of her Grace. Page 17

CHAP. V.

The Bishop obtains the honour of a private audience. His extensive charity. He makes her Grace his almoner, to relieve his fellow Protestants in GERMANY. He is strangely affected at the news of the Archbishop's recovery. Her Grace's character. 21

CHAP. VI.

The true use of court-favour. The biter bitten. An easy way to obtain a fine feather for a fool's cap. The insolence of office, in binding an house to be built, instead of an hen-coop; and spoiling her Grace's dairy. How to make the most of a common. A beau Lord beaten by a bailiff, for walking the fields in an undress. 24

CHAP. VII.

An odd visitor to a lady. The mystery of stock-jobbing. Charity begins at home. Her Grace's kind intentions for honest Aminadab. Another visitor. The worth of honour. The best salve for a broken character. 31

CHAP. VIII.

The Colonel puts the old soldier upon her Grace. Her rage and resentment fall upon her agent. Her judicious application of the Bishop's charity, with her tender concern for her friends abroad. 37

CHAP. IX.

CHRYSAL changes his service for that of an usual attendant upon the great. The history of the unfortunate clyste-pipe-maker, who was like to be hanged for

CONTENTS.

for dirtying his fingers. An humble imitation of high life. Another change brings CHRYSAL into the possession of a person of an extraordinary character. Conversation between him and a very noted person. Let those laugh that win. Page 41.

CHAP. X.

CHRYSAL's master starts at his own apparition. Interview between the Doctor, and a noted ballad-singer. The history of a famous ballad. All trades alike. 47.

CHAP. XI.

A venerable Matron compleats the company. The curtain lifted up, and several unexpected discoveries made. MOMUS plays successively upon Doctor HUNCH-BACK and Mother BRIMSTONE. After various disasters, the evening is concluded in character. 51.

CHAP. XII.

The Doctor pays a visit to an useful friend. The mystery of controversy. He waits upon her Grace with a pious exhortation for her friend. CHRYSAL enters into the service of her Grace. Her disappointment, in her visit to the prison. Her Grace's character. 62.

CHAP. XIII.

History of a Lady of fashion. Description of a rout. CHRYSAL changes his service for that of a lady of enterprize. A bold stroke for an husband. 67.

CHAP. XIV.

CHRYSAL, by a natural progression, comes into the possession of a knight of industry, who brings him to
A 3 an.

CONTENTS.

an horse-race, where he has an opportunity of seeing a noble jockey practice part of the mysterious science of the turf, with other common occurrences. Page 74

CHAP. XV.

CHRYSAI's master pays his court to a great person, who seems not much to relish his humour, and expresses some unfashionable sentiments concerning polite pleasures. In the course of a regular circulation, CHRYSAI comes into the possession of a minister of state, who refuses a friendly offer for very odd reasons. His strange notion of some affairs. 78

CHAP. XVI.

CHRYSAI's sentiments of his master's master, who gives a remarkable reason for his approbation of his minister's measures and manner of doing business. The minister's charge to a general, on appointing him to a command. CHRYSAI enters into the service of the general. Conflict between maternal tenderness and glory, in which the latter is triumphant. Strange advice from a mother to her son. 83

CHAP. XVII.

Another scene of tenderness. Love and honour in the old-fashioned, romantic style. CHRYSAI quits the service of the general, and after some few common changes, enters into that of honest Aminadab. Conclusion of Aminadab's agency for her Grace. 88

CHAP. XVIII.

They arrive at the HAGUE. Political conversation between a DUTCHMAN and a JEW. They differ in opinion. AMINADAB leaves his friend VAN HOGAN in great distress. 93

CHAP.

CONTENTS

CHAP. XIX.

AMINIDAB bids adieu to her Grace, and sails with his son for AFRICA. CHRYSAL remains with a DUTCH banker. The principles and conscience of a good DUTCHMAN. CHRYSAL is sent into GERMANY. His opinion of the DUTCH. Page 100.

CHAP. XX.

CHRYSAL's remarks on military glory in his journey. Two strange passengers taken into the boat. National prejudice and pride break out in persons not likely to be suspected for such passions. 104.

CHAP. XXI.

The history of the Bulgarian soldier. CHRYSAL is carried to his destined master. 110.

CHAP. XXII.

How CHRYSAL found his master employed. The grandeur and happiness of absolute power. His cares for the augmentation and support of his revenues. His rage at the insolence of liberty, punctuality to his engagements, and resolutions to maintain the consequence of his rank. 115.

CHAP. XXIII.

More cares of sovereignty, and consequences of grandeur. CHRYSAL is sent to market, where he is given to a Jew for bacon. 120.

CHAP. XXIV.

Comparison between two dealers in fish. The celebration of the PASSOVER in the traditional way, and the method of procuring (human) lambs explained. 123.

C O N T E N T S.

B O O K II.

C H A P. I.

THE rites are interrupted, and the victims changed. This cleared up without a miracle. The few survivors of the first fury brought to publick justice. Page 127

C H A P. II.

A breach of neutrality properly resented, brings CHRY-
SAL into a service which he had long been ambitious
of. How he found his new master employed. The
king of Bulgaria's reception of the humble magistrates.
His appropriation of money to his own use. His re-
fections on the fight of CHRYMAL. 131

C H A P. III.

The king takes a view of his camp in disguise. The
exalted pleasure he received in the various occurren-
ces of his walk. He gains a great victory. His
conduct in, and after the battle. 135

C H A P. IV.

The happy fruits of victory. CHRYMAL finds new rea-
son to admire his master. A stranger throws himself
at his feet to implore justice. The story of the stran-
ger. 139

C H A P. V.

The king sends for the general, and orders the stranger
to be confined till his arrival. Continuation of the
story of the stranger. A new trial of the king's for-
titude and activity of soul. 144

C H A P.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. VI.

Conclusion of the story of the stranger. His wife arrives and acquits the general. The king's speech to him, and generosity to the strangers. CHRYSAL changes his service, and goes with them. Some general remarks on the character of the king of BULGARIA, and the probable consequences of the war.

Page 147

CHAP. VII.

CHRYSAL arrives in VIENNA, where he meets an old acquaintance. The history of his master's brother. His mission, labours, and success in ENGLAND. He is sent to PERU. He disapproves of the precipitancy of the measures carried on there, and returns to EUROPE to prepare matters better.

153.

CHAP. VIII.

Continuation of the Jesuit's discourse. He shews the promising situation of his affairs at present. The concise method by which SPAIN and PORTUGAL, are to be brought into the war with ENGLAND. He proposes to his brother to join in the general, that he may accomplish his particular design.

157

CHAP. IX.

The Jesuit proceeds to shew the rise of the war in GERMANY, and explains the motives of the several parties engaged in it, as also of the neutrality observed by some particular states.

160.

CHAP. X.

Conclusion of the Jesuit's discourse. His systems of morality and religion. His brother yields to his arguments,

CONTENTS.

Adventures of his son. He enters into business at LISBON, in which CHRYSAL suffers a great misfortune. His ingratitude to his uncle justly rewarded. CHRYSAL enters into a new service. Page 215

CHAP. XXI.

An uncommon criminal appears at the tribunal of the holy office. A love scene in a strange place. The history of PHERON and ILISSA. 221

CHAP. XXII.

The love-adventure continued. The inquisitor visits PHERON, and obtains his consent. He employs an ENGLISH sailor, whom he sets at liberty, to assist him in his designs. 227

CHAP. XXIII.

The sailor goes to LONDON, buys a ship and returns to LISBON, where he takes his passengers on board. His behaviour on meeting a FRENCH ship. He lands his passengers at ALEXANDRIA, returns home and marries. CHRYSAL quits his service. 232

CHAP. XXIV.

CHRYSAL arrives in London, where he comes into the possession of a pawn-broker, by whom he is given to the author. A most unhappy instance of human infirmity. The conclusion. 237

CHRYSAL:

CHRYSA L:

OR, THE

A D V E N T U R E S

· O F A

G U I N E A.

BOOK THE FIRST.

C H A P. I.

Some remarks on language. Character of CHRYSA L's new master.. CHRYSA L attends his master's wife on a visit to a superior lady. Polite reception.

I HAVE often been apprehensive, that the manner in which I express myself, may lead you into some mistakes of my meaning ; the signification of words in the language of men, being so unsettled, that it is scarce possible to convey a determinate sense, without such a periphrasis, as would take up too much time in so complicated scenes as those I describe; for where different, or perhaps contrary meanings are signified by the same word, how easy is it for a mind, prone to error, to take a wrong one ?

VOL. II.

B

For

For instance, the character of a *good man* may be thought to be as safe from misapprehension from the immutability of the virtues, which constitute it, as any that can be attributed either by or to human frailty, and yet how variously, how contradictorily is it applied.

On the *Royal Exchange* he is a *good man*, who is worth ten thousand pounds, and pays his bills punctually, by whatever private and public frauds and injustice he has amassed that sum, and maintains his credit. At the politer end of the world, *goodness* assumes another appearance, and is attributed to him who entertains his company well, pays his play-debts, and supports his honour with his sword, tho' he is guilty of the basest breaches of every civil and moral virtue, and lives in professed violation of all laws, human and divine : while, in the strictness of truth, and propriety of expression, no greater abuse of words can be conceived, than that of prostituting this character on either, except it were in compliance with the modern modish way of speaking by contraries.

I do not give this as the only instance ! they are innumerable and occur in every moment's conversation. The horse that wins the match, goes *damn'd* fast ; as the one that loses goes *damn'd* slow. The weather in summer is *hell-fire* hot, in winter *hell-fire* cold.

Now what sense can the very *Devil* himself, to whom you refer all difficulties, make of such contradictions. Tho' indeed these particular phrases give him pleasure, as they shew the inclination which men have to his empire, by making the terrors of it familiar to their minds in their common conversation.

But I am not at leisure to prescribe rules for avoiding this confusion, one of the most extensive causes of human error. I shall only give you some caution to prevent your falling into it, in respect to what I say to you.

You are to observe then, that whenever I speak in the person of another, I always would be understood in the sense which that person would be understood in at that time, without any farther regard to moral, or physical

physical truth, or propriety of speech. But when I speak my own sentiments, (which indeed, I very rarely do) I shall always deliver them with perspicuity and precision, as far as the jargon I am obliged to use will allow, and would have my words taken in the sense, usually given to them, in the particular subject I may be then speaking of; as the barrenness of language has not been able to afford distinct terms to them all, but is forced to wrest known ones to different and often unknown meanings; a proof of the injustice of the general complaint against the verbosity of the moderns; whereas, if (by many) distinct words are meant, their fault is directly the reverse.

My new master was a person of some learning, and what was of more use, of thorough knowledge of the world: but wanting friends and interest, to advance him to those dignities which he thought due to his merit, he had solicited this place, in discharge of the duties of which he was indefatigably diligent, not merely for the paltry consideration of a poor salary, (for as he was not in the secret, he had no share of the spoils) tho' his circumstances and knowledge of the value of money could not let him refuse it, but to place his abilities in a more conspicuous light, where they might be taken notice of by his superiors.

As soon as he had received his stipend, he went home, where he found his wife dressed in all her best cloaths, and expecting him with the utmost impatience! 'My dear (said she) how could you stay abroad so late? I have been waiting for you above these two hours, and was, just going without seeing you.' *So late; my dear! it is scarcely six o'clock! But where are you going in such haste?*——To the Bishop's; the Rector of —— died of an apoplectick fit, as he was taking his nap after dinner this evening, and you know my intimacy with the Bishop's lady entitles me to ask any thing from her.——*But, child, this is not in her power to give, and even if it was, it is too much for a common acquaintance to expect!* 'This diffidence has been your ruin! You are always afraid of asking, as if there was ruin in being refused;

but that is not my case! *Ask and you shall have*, is my text! Now-a-days nothing is got without it.'—*Yes, child, but too frequent or improper asking brings contempt.*'—'The manner, the manner of asking is the thing! And you cannot think I want to be taught that now, after having lived so long among the Great? Often have I known a request, *properly* made, gain a man a place, for which he was never dreamed of! As to the greatness of this living, never mind that! the greater it is, the greater will be your obligation to the person who gets it for you! What money have you got about you? we shall make a party perhaps. And let me have the five hundred pound note; I may have occasion for that too, to make a bett."

"*There, my dear, is the money I received to-day! I'll step up for the note: but pray, my dearest, take care what you do! It is our all! And be sure you are not tempted to do any thing like simony! It is a great crime, and makes a man incapable of ever rising, if it is detected.*"—"And the fool, that is detected; deserves never to rise; You may call a thing by what nonsensical name you please; but if knowledge of the world were to prevent people's rising in it, I do not know who would be uppermost now-a-days! Bring me the note, and leave the rest to me. You shall know nothing of what I intend till it's done, and then the fault, if any, will be all mine!—Here, *Jane*, settle the furbellows of my scarf, and, *John*, call a chair to the door directly." "*Well, my dear, here is the note: I leave all to you! I do not desire to know what you intend: But remember, my dear, this note is our all!*" "Never fear! The chair is come, and I must lose no time! you will divert yourself with your children, or books, I suppose; or go to the coffee house. Perhaps I may not return till 'tis late." —*I wish you success, my dear, and pray be cautious.*

With these words the Doctor retired, but to which of the amusements his wife mentioned I cannot say, for he had given me to her, who carried me away with her to the Bishop's.

When

When she came there, the footman answered that it was not his lady's *night*, and she was not at home ; but my mistress had lived too long among the Great, to take his words in their literal meaning, but putting half a crown into his hand, told him she had some earnest business, and must see her. The doors instantly flew open, his lady was at home, and my mistress shewn up without any farther difficulty.

The Bishop's Lady was sitting at a snug *party*, with three or four select friends, and seemed not much pleased at the intrusion of my mistress, to whom she scarce deigned a nod ; but turning to the footman, ' I thought, *sirrah*,' (said she) ' that I was not to be at home this evening ! I suppose I shall have all the mob of the town let in upon me.'—" Dear madam," (replied my mistress) " the man is not to blame ! He told me that you were not at home ; but having some very earnest business, I made bold to break through your orders ; but I hope for your pardon, when you know the cause of my intrusion."—" O madam," (returned the Lady) ' you know I am always glad of your company, I only chide the fellow for not obeying my orders. Pray be seated, madam ; as soon as the *rubber* is up, I shall wait upon you.'—" Dear madam," (added my mistress) " you need not give yourself that trouble ; now I am with you, my business can wait your leisure."

CHAP. II.

A genteel evening. A dream and a bett, and a family supper. Conjugal tenderness. The Bishop's dejection at the Death of the Doctor, and danger of the Archbishop, is diverted by another dream.

WHEN the rubber was finished, my mistress was asked to *cut in*, one of the party being taken suddenly ill, which she did, and sat out the whole evening, her success at cards keeping up her spirits,

and giving her hopes of the like in the greater affair she came about ; but her patroness had very different fortune, having lost every rubber ; and what was still worse, several *by-betts*, which she made to bring herself home.

This put her into such a temper, that the moment the rest of the company was gone, she turned to my mistress, who saw them all out,—‘ And now, pray, madam, may I ask what was the great business that brought you here this evening ?’ (said she) ‘ Unlucky business it has been for me, I know ; for I have never held a card since you came : but I shall take care that rascal, who let you in, shall never serve me so again ! He shall strip and turn off, without his breakfast, the moment I am up in the morning.’—“ Dear madam,” (replied my mistress, unabashed, at such a salute) “ have patience a moment, and I hope to make you amends for all ! Will you please to sit down to one sober party of *picquet* ? You are always too *hard* for me, yet I’ll venture all my winnings, and perhaps what I have to say, in the mean time, may compensate for my intrusion.”

The lady could not imagine what she meant, but the thought of so good a match brought her a little to her temper, and though it was near ten o’clock, she sat down to cards with as much keenness, as if six hours drudging at them had only whetted her desire for play.

As soon as a *repique* or two had confirmed her good humour, my mistress says to her, ‘ Dear madam, that is right ! Have you heard of the sad accident that happened this evening ?’—“ Not I,” (replied the other) “ pray what was it ?”—“ Why poor Doctor — was taken shortly after dinner, and died in his chair !—“ *Aye then I suppose he had plum-porridge and over-eat himself !* and so burst a pudding, as we say to children, Ha, ha, ha !—Ha, ha, ha !”—‘ But pray, madam, have you any faith in dreams ? What do you think ? I dream’d last night that I saw you at court, on some great occasion, with just such a diamond necklace on, as the Countess’s, which you had bought
‘ with

‘ with five hundred pounds, that you won from me
 ‘ on a *bett* ; you laying that my husband would, and
 ‘ I that he would not, get the Doctor’s living ! Well,
 ‘ to be sure, there must be something more than or-
 ‘ dinary in it ; for can you believe it ? this very
 ‘ morning, I put a bank-note for five hundred pounds
 ‘ in my pocket, here it is ; though I did not think of
 ‘ the poor man’s death, till I heard it as I came by
 ‘ this evening, when my dream ran so strongly in my
 ‘ head, that I could not forbear breaking in upon you,
 ‘ a rudeness I should never have been guilty of on any
 ‘ other occasion.’—*Dear madam, you need make no apo-*
 ‘ *logy to me ! You know your company is always welcome.*
 ‘ *I am always at home to you !*’—‘ But, madam, what
 ‘ do you think of my dream !’—‘ *I do not know, I only*
 ‘ *wish it were to prove true ! For five hundred pounds*
 ‘ *could never come more seasonably.*’—‘ Then you must
 ‘ win it ; for my heart is set upon making the *bett*, and
 ‘ I assure you, I have such a regard for you, that I
 ‘ do not even wish you to lose ! and that is what few
 ‘ gamesters can say !’—‘ *You are a pleasant creature !*
 ‘ *but as for the BETT, it shall be upon condition, that*
 ‘ *my Lord is not under any engagement to the Minister,*
 ‘ *or her Grace, who got him his bishoprick. If he is*
 ‘ *disengaged, I will lay you, and you shall lose, my girl,*
 ‘ *if it was ten times as much, and there’s encouragement*
 ‘ *for you to hold. The bell rings ! Will you walk down,*
 ‘ *and take a bit of supper ? There is no body but my*
 ‘ *Lord and I ; but do not take the least notice of any thing*
 ‘ *about the matter, nor even seem to have heard of the*
 ‘ *Doctor’s death, should my Lord mention it ; but muster*
 ‘ *up all your spirits, and be as entertaining as you can,*
 ‘ *for I always work him up best, when he goes to bed*
 ‘ *in a good humour.*’

The picquet-match being thus at an end, I was paid away to the Bishop’s Lady, whose winnings and expectations sent her to supper in high spirits, where she found his Lordship already seated in a very thoughtful mood.

After the usual complimentary expletives, that usher in every polite conversation ; ‘ Pray, my Lord,’ (says

my new mistress to her husband) 'what will you eat ?
 ' Shall I help you to a bit of this fricasee ? I believe it
 ' is very good.'—' No, my dear, I thank you,' (re-
 ' plied his Lordship) ' I have not the least appetite !
 ' What is it, pray ?'—' Sweet-breads and cocks-combs,'
 (returned his lady) ' you used to like them, and they
 ' are very nice ! Or will you help yourself to a bit of
 ' that fowl before you ? something you must eat.'—
 ' No, my dear, I am obliged to your care, but I do not
 ' chuse any thing to-night ; I am not very well ! We all
 ' eat too much ! Repletion kills half the people of England !
 ' We eat too much !'—' You are going to be bipp'd, my
 ' dear. John, give your master a glass of Madeira. Fill
 ' the glass. Eating never hurt any one, who washed
 ' down his victuals with a glass of good wine ; horse-
 ' meals indeed, are enough to choak human creatures !
 ' So ; do not you find yourself better now ? Taste
 ' this fricasee ; you cannot think how good it is !'—
 ' Well you will have your way ! You make me do as you
 ' please, though never so contrary to my inclination ! Do
 ' you call this a fricasee ? I thought fricasees had spice
 ' put in them ! This is as insipid as chopp'd bay ! Lord
 ' deliver me from such cooks ! The badness of servants,
 ' in general, seems to be a judgment on the vices of the
 ' age !—' Well, my dear, taste that fowl, it looks
 ' like a good one, and the cook could not spoil that.
 ' Pray, madam, shall I trouble you to help his Lord-
 ' ship to a leg and a wing, and a bit of the breast.'—
 ' You give me too much ! I shall never be able to eat all
 ' this ! besides you know, my dear, I chuse a bit of the
 ' rump.'—' Eat that first, my dear, and then you shall
 ' have the rump ; but what has happened to make you
 ' so low spirited this evening ?—' O child, who can
 ' be other than low-spirited, when such instances of mor-
 ' tality happen before our eyes every hour ? Who can tell
 ' but the misfortune may be his own next moment ? There's
 ' Doctor —, poor man was taken off this evening, with-
 ' out a minute's warning to prepare for such a tremendous
 ' change, just after he had made an hearty dinner ! Here,
 ' John, take away my plate ; I will not eat a bit more,
 ' nor

‘*nor ever sleep after dinner again!*’——‘*And, John, give your master another bumper of Maderia; that was what the Doctor wanted; he eat a great deal, and did not allow himself any drink. Drink good wine, and never fear that eating will hurt you.——*

‘*Ab! but that was not the case of his Grace of—— who lies this moment in the agonies of death! his physicians left him two hours ago! The Lord prepare us all, and give us notice of his coming! He did not stint himself of wine; he took his bottle chearfully, good man!*’——

‘*Chearfully, did you say? You should have said sottishly; for he has done nothing but drink for these many years past! He has run into the opposite extrem from the Doctor, drinking too much, and not eating enough to support nature. And I hope you do not say has gone without warning at fourscore; he has had time enough to prepare: but why should these examples affect you particularly? You do not eat like the Doctor, nor drink like his Grace, and are young enough to be son to the youngest of them; why then should you fear their fate? Here, John, give me a-half pint glass full of Madeira, and reach me three or four of those jellies. Now, my dear, if you are afraid to eat or drink, sup this with a bit of bread, and I will answer for its agreeing with you.*’

My late mistress sat all this time at her supper, without being able to join in the conversation; but as soon as his Lordship’s taking the jellies made a pause in his Lady’s tenderness, she called for a glass of wine, and bowing to the Bishop, drank to him by the title of *his Grace* very gravely.

His Lordship stared, and his Lady started, while she finished her glass without any emotion, and seemed quite unconscious of having said any thing unusual or improper. This behaviour still embarrassed them more; when the Lady, unable to contain her surprise, ‘*Dear madam*’ (said she) ‘*what have you said? Or how came you to address my Lord by that title?*’ ‘*I hope, madam,*’ (replied the other) ‘*I have not said any thing improper! You really frighten me! I hope I have not been failing in my respect*

‘ of, or addressed his lordship by any improper title?’—
 ‘ I cannot say any improper one indeed !—but one that
 ‘ does not belong to him, at least as yet,’ (returned
 the Lady.)—‘ Dear madam, what do you mean ?
 ‘ Pray do not distress me ! but you must divert your-
 ‘ self surely ! It is not possible that I could fail in my
 ‘ respect to his *Grace* !’—‘ Ha, ha, ha ! There it is
 ‘ again ! Fail in your respect ! No. You only raised
 ‘ your respect too high ! You called him his *Grace*,
 ‘ that’s all.’—‘ And is that all ? Thank heaven that
 ‘ I did ! and long live his *Grace*, I say again,’ (said she
 dropping on her knees, and eagerly kissing his hand)
 ‘ long live your *Grace* ! There is, there must be truth
 ‘ in dreams, and infidels alone can doubt it.’

At the mention of dreams, the Bishop, who had
 hitherto continued to sup up his jelly, without seem-
 ing to take any notice of what they were saying, could
 not forbear shewing some emotion ; for he had the
 strongest faith in them, and always sanguinely defend-
 ed their credit, especially, since his present elevation
 had confirmed those of his grand-mother ; ‘ *What*
 ‘ *dreams ? pray, good madam.*’ (said he addressing my
 late mistress with a visible anxiety) ‘ *What dreams do*
 ‘ *you mean ? Those which were thought to have respect*
 ‘ *to me are understood to be already accomplished.*’ ‘ Please
 ‘ your *Grace*, (the impulse of the spirit is upon me,
 ‘ and I cannot call you by any other title !) ‘ Please
 ‘ your *Grace*, I say, I dream’d last night, as I told
 ‘ your Lady but just now, that I met her at court,
 ‘ on some very *great* occasion, as fine as hands cou’d
 ‘ make her, (I told her this just now, before I knew
 ‘ one syllable of his *Grace*’s death) and that she came
 ‘ up to me smiling, and thank’d me for the cause of
 ‘ her coming there, for it was I who had made you a
 ‘ great man !—Now what could this possibly mean,
 ‘ but what has happened here this moment, when by
 ‘ giving you this title first, (and Lord knows, I did it
 ‘ without the least design, or even being sensible of it,
 ‘ when I did it) I may in some manner be said to have
 ‘ made you the great man it belong’d to : let the
 ‘ world

‘ world say what they will, I do believe there is truth
‘ in dreams, and I think mine is *out* now.’

She had run on with this rant at such a rate, that it was impossible for the Bishop to interrupt her, even had he been so inclined ; but that was far from being the case : he heard her with attention, and what she said made such an impression on him, that he sat some time musing on it, after she had stopp’d, before he had power to speak a word.

As for his Lady, she at once took it to be all a fetch, calculated merely to forward the scheme of the wager about the Doctor’s living, and as such resolved to humour it, and not interrupt his meditations, but addressing herself to the other, ‘ Indeed, madam,’ (said she) ‘ I do not know what to say to this affair !
‘ When you told me your dream just now, I made
‘ nothing of it, but this account of his *Grace*’s death
‘ almost staggers me ! Well, if this succeeds, and
‘ who knows what may happen ? I shall ever hereafter have more faith in dreams !’

CHAP. III.

A dissertation on dreaming. The dream pursued to the astonishment, and almost conversion of the Bishop’s Lady. Her veracity in recounting some circumstances relating to it. She and his Lordship persuade each other to dream that it is true.

BY this time his Lordship had considered the matter, and addressing himself to the dreamer, ‘ Pray, madam (said he) what time had you this vision or dream ? In the night, or towards the morning ? ‘ *In the morning, my Lord*’ (replied she) ‘ *at the conclusion of my second sleep : and, indeed, it made such an impression upon my mind, that I could not go to sleep after : for it was not in the confusion of common dreams ! I saw every thing distinctly and regularly, as if I was in the very place ; and particularly, your Lady appeared as*
‘ *plainly*

by as four o'clock?—"Rather before it, my dear; and what makes me so positive about it is, that a little after she had finished her story, she happen'd to look at her watch, but it was down, and so she asked me what o'clock it was by mine, that she might set by it; and I remember it wanted exactly six minutes of four."—"Pray let me look at your watch; have you not altered it since?"—"No, my dear; but why do you ask?"—"Because it is nine minutes faster than mine, and it was just half an hour past four by his watch, as they told me, when he died, and his and mine were exactly together; so that the six minutes your watch wanted of four and the nine minutes it is faster than mine, make a quarter before four, which was three quarters before he died. This is most wonderful! for there could be no design nor art in it. This is most wonderful! But there have been many revelations made in dreams, even in our own times; as for instance, that in DRELINCOURT; for it could be no other than a dream; and that other of the great Duke of BUCKINGHAM's rise, and afterwards of his death, as it is most judiciously and faithfully represented by the Reverend Historian,* not to mention many more. As to the Doctor's living, my dear, I make you a compliment of it; you may give it to whom you please: though the curate is a very learned and good man, and has a large family; beside that he has been recommended to me by the whole parish, whom his long residence among them, for he has been there above thirty years, has made love and respect him as a father."—"Then let them provide for him like dutiful children. What assurance! to pretend to dictate to you, as if you were not the proper judge of such matters! if it was for no other reason I would not give it to him, to teach them their duty and distance another time."

"There may be something in that; I do not like such interfering in my conduct neither; and therefore you may give it to whom you please. And her husband is a man of learning and good character too, who will not discredit any preferment; but take care that you do not

* Echard.

do

do any thing improper. As to your wagers, there is no harm in that ; but even so, it should be kept a secret ; I must know nothing of the matter.—" I thank you, my dear Lord ; I shall be sure to observe your directions, and the accomplishment of this part of the dream I take as an happy presage of the rest ; but you must not be wanting to yourself ; you had better, I think, go to her Grace, and see what may offer to promote our hopes."—" *That is not a bad thought, my dear ; but it grows late ; in the morning we shall see what is to be done.*" Saying this, they withdrew, whither we must not follow them, for of the genial bed, ' with most mysterious reverence I deem.'

C H A P. IV.

History of the dreamer. She loses her wager, which she pays with pleasure. His Lordship waits upon her Grace. His knowledge of the world promotes a noble instance of charity. CHRYSAL enters into the service of her Grace.

I HAVE observed your surprize and admiration at the ready presence of mind and confidence of my late mistress, who could, in a moment, invent such a story, and persist in it so steadily, as not only to impose upon the Bishop's easy credulity, but even upon his wife also, who was, in a manner, in the secret of her design, but could not interrupt my story to satisfy it sooner, by giving you her history.

She was a distant relation to a noble Lord, on whom the extravagance of her father left her dependant. This occasioned her being taken into his family, where she lived several years as an humble companion to his Lady. As she was handsome, his Lordship had a mind, for a nearer relation with her, but an unfashionable virtue prevented her compliance, which turned his love into the strongest hatred, for fear she should inform his Lady, to whom she was not more agreeable, and upon the same account ; as her observing
temper

temper had given her an opportunity of seeing much more than her Ladyship desired to have her tell.

This made her situation very unhappy in the family, and inclined her to hearken to the addresses of the Chaplain, to whom his Lordship gave a small vicarage with her, as did his Lady five hundred pounds, that they might part decently, and not provoke her to speak. As for herself, you have seen that nature was liberal to her in the endowments of her mind, which the state she was bred in improved, or rather sharpened, into a thorough knowledge of the world, that enabled her to take the advantage of all its follies. But to return to the Bishop and his Lady. This affair had made such an impression on their minds, that they could dream of nothing else all night, but pomp and precedence, which effectually secured the grant in favour of my late mistress, from all danger of revocation.

They were scarce seated to breakfast, when word was brought them that she was below, upon which she was immediately invited up, her company being too agreeable to admit of any distance or reserve.

The compliments of the morning being paid on all sides, his Lordship with a look of great benevolence, asked her for her husband, and if he was at home; to which she answered that he was, and ready to pay his duty to his Lordship, if he had any commands to honour him with. 'None that will be disagreeable, I hope' (replied his Lordship) 'and if he is at leisure'— "At leisure, my lord!" (replied she in a kind of rapture, for a wink from the Lady had explained the matter to her) "he is, he must be at leisure! No business can interfere with his duty! I'll step for him this moment."—"You need not give yourself that trouble, madam," (returned his Lordship) '*John*, do you go, and tell Mr. ——— that I should be glad to speak with him. For, madam, I think I cannot do less than reward his learning, piety, and good life, with the *living* of the poor Doctor. It is what I have long resolved, tho' I never mentioned it before, because I would not torture him with expectations; and give it to him now thus early and

and *unasked* to spare his modesty, and save myself from the solicitations of others.'——'Long live, God bless your Grace!' (said she, throwing herself at his feet, and embracing his knees in extasy) for so I see it will be, every thing will come *out* just according to my dream! I could not forbear sending to the *late* Archbishop's just before I came here, and the porter (for I would not send a servant, for fear my known attachment to your Lordship should make it taken notice of) brought me word *that he was at peace*.—This completed the Bishop's faith, and prevented his sending to inquire, for the same delicate reasons that she gave.

'I must wish you joy, madam,' (said the Bishop's Lady) 'of this advance in your fortune! Though I am almost angry that my Lord did not let me into the secret. I have lost some hours happiness by his reserve; for I always make the happiness of my friends my own.'—'Dear madam, I thank you; on my knees I thank, I pray for you both! And give me leave, madam, to wish *YOU* joy of his LORDSHIP'S promotion, and of your just advance in rank, as well as of all the ornaments belonging to it!—'The necklace I suppose you mean? Ha, ha, ha!—'I do, indeed, dear madam, and of every other happiness that can attend so elevated a station.'

Her husband now entered in the utmost agitation of spirits, between hope and fear; for he was not a stranger to his wife's scheme (indeed he had suggested the first hint of the *bet* himself, but with an address that made her think it was her own, he spoke so distantly, (for he always preserved the appearance of character, even with her) and the ladies not thinking it proper to be present at the mysterious ceremony of the Bishop's signing the *collation*, which he did directly, to avoid giving offence, by refusing other applications, they withdrew, when my mistress was paid her *bet*, with as great pleasure, by the loser, as she felt in receiving it.

The *dream* being thus far happily accomplished, the successful dreamer and her husband went home in

in the highest joy, at being at length relieved from the anxiety of dependance, and the fears of want; while my Lord prepared to pay his duty at her *Grace's* levee, and see whether any thing should offer that might promote his part of it.

When he was ready to go, he called to his Lady, to receive her advice, and recollecting that he had forgot his purse, desired to borrow her's, in which I was; and thus I changed my service once more.

When his Lordship entered her *Grace's* levee, and had paid his most humble respects, he found the conversation turn on a melancholy accident that had lately happened to a village in his diocese, which was entirely burnt to the ground by an accidental fire. There were many circumstances so moving in the account of this misfortune as to raise the compassion of the whole company, and particularly of her *Grace*, who said, that she would most willingly contribute to the relief of their distress, but that unluckily she had not less than a bank note of twenty pounds about her.

All the company, *who knew the world*, understood her *Grace*, and dropped the subject; but my new master who had his knowledge of *mankind* mostly from *books*, was so far from taking the hint, that he thought he shewed his respect for his patroness, by offering to change her note, or lend her whatever money she wanted.

Her *Grace* was surpris'd, as the company were confounded, at the *ignorant insolence* of such an offer. However, as this was not an occasion for shewing her resentment, she coldly told him, she would trouble him for the change, and having received it, gave two guineas to the person who had mentioned the affair, and carelessly threw the rest, *among which I was*, into her pocket, not caring to pull out her purse, as it was full of money.

My late master, pleas'd with the thought of having ing been instrumental in so meritorious a benevolence; displayed his eloquence in thanks to her for her eminent charity to his poor flock, and then gave a guinea himself; (for respect to her *Grace* would not permit him

to

to exceed the half of her bounty,) as did the rest of the company, who all laughed in their sleeves, to think how my master had ruined himself with her *Grace*, by his blunder.

But his mind was too full of the dream to observe their looks, and he was so far from being sensible that he had done amiss, that when her *Grace* was going to retire, he boldly stepp'd up to her, and begg'd leave to speak a word or two with her in private.

Though the assurance of this request greatly aggravated his former offence, yet she could not decently refuse such a favour to his rank, and therefore slightly nodded to him to follow her.

C H A P. V.

The bishop obtains the honour of a private audience. His extensive charity. He makes her Grace his almoner, to relieve his fellow protestants in GERMANY. He is strangely affected at the news of the Archbishop's recovery. Her Grace's character.

THE great honour of this private audience, at first put him into some confusion, but recollecting the consequence at stake, he after much hesitation, made a shift to tell her, that, 'sensible of her *Grace's* great humanity and commiseration for the sufferings of the distressed, of which she had just given so noble an instance.'—"Pray, my lord, no compliments," (said her *Grace*, interrupting him, with a look and accent not very encouraging) "I am not at present at leisure for them, and if you have no other business"—'May it please your *Grace*,' (replied the bishop) 'your virtues are above compliment! and I come to give you an opportunity of exerting them, not solely to praise them.'—"I do not understand you, my Lord, and I am in some haste!"—"I most humbly beg your *Grace's* pardon, I shall not delay you long! to come then briefly to the purpose, I must inform your *Grace*, that out of the
'income

‘ income which it has pleased the divine Providence, through your *Grace’s* means, to give me, I have thought it my duty to lay by some little matter, to make a return with to the divine beneficence, in charity to his distressed creatures. Now, as your *Grace’s* kind interest was the means through which this ability was conferred upon me, I have made bold to trouble you with the distribution of my mite.’——
 “ *Me, my Lord ? You astonish me ! I cannot comprehend you !*”——‘ I beg your *Grace’s* indulgence for a moment. You will forgive this boldness, when you know the motive :——hem ! hem !

‘ The sufferings of my *Protestant* brethren in *Germany* (I say brethren, for men should know no distinction but religion) their sufferings, I say in this calamitous time of war and rapine, when the ambition of princes works the ruin of their people, has made such an impression upon my heart, that I come to offer this small matter to your *Grace*, to be applied to their relief, as your better knowledge shall see most proper : a trouble which I should not have presumed to give your *Grace*, did not I know that such works of charity are a pleasure to you ; and that the better information, which in your high rank you must necessarily have, will enable you to apply it more effectually to their relief than I, in the darkness and ignorance of my humble station, possibly can. I am almost ashamed of the smallness of the sum (it is but two thousand pounds) but it is all that I have yet been able to save ; though I hope to give a better account of my stewardship another time ; and that I shall be found not to have buried my talent, especially if it should please the Divine Providence to raise me to an higher station, and thereby put the means more liberally into my power.——

‘ I most humbly beg your *Grace’s* forgiveness of this intrusion on your time. I am, your *Grace’s* most humble servant.’——“ Stay, my Lord” (returned her *Grace*, with a look and accent softened into the most engaging affability) “ Pray do not go : I see
 ‘ you

'you so seldom, except *in the crowd*, that I cannot part with you so soon. I thank you for the confidence you place in me; and shall apply your charity to the best of my judgment. Poor people! they greatly want relief, and if the invincible fortitude of the *Bulgarian* monarch, does not extricate them soon, they will be entirely ruined. But every thing is to be hoped for, from such an hero!'

'You are very good to consider the distresses of the poor people! there are few now who think of any thing but themselves; so their appetites are satisfied, they have no feeling for what others suffer; but, my lord, is there any thing that I can serve you in? You may depend upon my Interest at all times.'—'I am much beholden to your Grace!' (replied his lordship, elevated at such an offer, and now secure as he thought of his hopes) 'I am much beholden to your Grace? I have had too much experience of your Grace's goodness to doubt it. Nothing, that I know of at present: if any thing should happen, I shall be most grateful to your Grace for your kind remembrance. We are all desirous of having our power to do good enlarged.'

"Yes, my Lord; all good men, like your Lordship, are. It is a duty to desire so. But, have you heard any thing of the archbishop of ——— lately?"—"Not very lately please your Grace."—"I believe that old man will never die! He was taken with a fit yesterday, and it was thought he would expire every moment. But he has got over it, and is abroad to-day as well as he has been for many years."—"In-d-e-e-d!"

"What is the matter, my Lord? something seems to ail you."—"A a-sud-den—f-aint-ness has—come-over me? I—must—beg—y—our Grace—'s—p-ar-don—I—m y—our—Grace—'s—m—most h-humble servant—; with which words he made a bad shift to crawl out muttering to himself—"O my money! my money! O this cursed dream; my money! my money!"

Her Grace looked earnestly after him for a few minutes, as if lost in thought, and then bursting into
a loud

a loud laughter, ' And is it so, my good lord ! does
' the wind sit that way ? Then I can account for
' your charity. Ha ! ha ! ha !—But you are disap-
' pointed this time, and I fear, will the next too,
' if you do not *bid* better. Two thousand for five
' thousand a year ! Is that your conscience ! But it
' will never do.'—

I was now at the summit of human grandeur, the favourite of the favourite of a mighty monarch. For curiosity tempted me to take a view of my new mistress's heart as she sat at her toilet ; I found myself established there without a rival, in the most absolute authority, every passion being subservient to my rule ; even the love of power, which had, in every other instance, disputed the empire with me, being *here* my most abject slave, and encouraged for no other reason than solely to promote my interest ; the mighty spirit of the immense mass of gold, which my mistress had accumulated, having taken entire possession of her soul.

CHAP. VI.

The true use of court favour. The Biter bitten. An easy way to obtain a fine feather for a fool's cap. The insulence of office, in hindering an house to be built, instead of a hen-coop ; and spoiling her Grace's dairy. How to make the most of a common : A Beau Lord beaten by a Bailiff, for walking the fields in an undress.

WHILE my late master retired to meditate on the exposition of dreams, and to please himself with the virtuous reflection of so signal an act of charity, her Grace sat down to her toilet, where I saw art triumph over the depredations of time, and create a beauty denied by nature.

When this serious work was so far compleated that she could attend to other business, one of her most favoured domesticks told her, that she had that very morning received an offer, from a man who kept a
noted

noted beer-house, and shuffle-board, for the place of tapster to the Lord-Mayor, which she was sure her Grace's interest would readily obtain. "Tapster ! (answered her Grace) what is the value of that place ? Reach me the list of employments, with their salaries and perquisites, out of that drawer ! Let me see : Tapster to the Lord Mayor ! aye, here it is ! Well, and pray what does he offer for it ?"— A thousand guineas, please your Grace (replied her woman) which I really think enough for it, considering every thing.—Do you indeed ! But I do not. Why, it is rated to me here, as worth five hundred pounds a year ; and is that worth no more than a thousand guineas ! does the fellow value his own life only at two years purchase ?—' Five hundred pounds a year ! How can that be ? The salary is no more than sixty ! there must be some mistake in your return.'—' The salary ! the salary signifies nothing ; it is the perquisites ! The perquisites are the thing ! Do you think any place is valued by the salary ? The perquisites of this place are very considerable. Let me see ! Why, he buys in all the beer and gin himself, for which he can charge what price he pleases ; and then his own account is taken for the quantity that is drank. Aye indeed ; there must be a mistake in my return to be sure ; but not of the kind you mean. The place is rated too low ; for, with such opportunities, it must be worth twice the sum ; and I shall enquire into that matter before I dispose of the place. : A thousand guineas, for such a place ! I wonder at the fellow's conscience to make such an offer !'—' All this is very true ; but then there are some circumstances that must be considered on the other hand too. You know the Lord Mayor's year is almost ended ; and then, who knows whether his successor will continue all the servants, or not. This one, it certainly is most likely he will not ; for as he is a known enemy to gambling, and has publicly declared that he will put the laws in execution against all such practices, it cannot be thought, that he will permit a

' fellow who has kept an house that has been so no-
 ' torious for it, and where so many men have been
 ' brought to the gallows, and their families to beg-
 ' gary, to hold a place of such profit under him;
 ' beside, he has people of his own to provide for,
 ' who have served his father and himself in such a
 ' manner, as to deserve his confidence and regard,
 ' so that every chance (to speak in his own way) is
 ' against this man, which is so well known, that no
 ' body else would bid for the thing at all; where-
 ' fore, if I may presume to speak my opinion, his
 ' offer should be immediately accepted.'—' There
 ' may be something in what you say: but then, if it
 ' was so very precarious a place, do you think some
 ' of his customers would not inform him of it! they
 ' certainly must know it.'—' Why, the very reason of
 ' my desiring your Grace to close with him directly
 ' is for fear they should tell him, as they undoubtedly
 ' would, if they suspected his intention, in the
 ' least; but he conceals it from them; for the prin-
 ' cipal motive of his quitting the business he is in,
 ' and seeking this place, is because the greatest part
 ' of his customers have got deeply into his debt,
 ' which he can never expect them to pay, while he
 ' continues his business; whereas he thinks, if he can
 ' get this place, it will be a good excuse for his
 ' calling in his money, and then the Lord Mayor's
 ' power will protect him from their resentments.
 ' This is the true secret of the matter; for if it was
 ' not on this account, he has a much better oppor-
 ' tunity of getting money where he is than in any
 ' place.'—' Well then, be it so! make the most you
 ' can of it; and I care not how soon the fellow is
 ' turned out after. What is the matter? what do
 ' you laugh at!'—' I beg your Grace's pardon, an
 ' odd thought just came into my head; but it does
 ' not signify.'—' What is it? Come, I must know it.'
 ' Why I am almost ashamed to mention it; though
 ' it is but a trifle neither, as such matters go now.
 ' Your Grace knows that my husband has a place
 ' under the Lord Mayor: Now it just came into my
 ' head,

‘ head, that when his Lordship comes to wait upon
 ‘ the King to be knighted, it would be no bad joke,
 ‘ if his majesty could be prevailed on to knight my
 ‘ husband also.’——‘ Ha ! ha ! ha ! And so Madam
 ‘ has a mind to be a Lady. Why with all my heart !
 ‘ There is no great matter in it, to be sure ; and I
 ‘ see no reason why you should not have that title as
 ‘ well as a chandler, or a shoemaker’s wife. Indeed
 ‘ the candidates for knighthood have run so very low
 ‘ of late, that a man of honour should be ashamed
 ‘ to accept of it. But that is no concern of mine !
 ‘ I get the money, and where I can do that, I care
 ‘ not if it was from Jack Ketch ; let others look to
 ‘ that. Well ; since you have taken a fancy to stick
 ‘ a fool’s feather in your cap, tell your good man,
 ‘ when he kneels by his master, at the important
 ‘ ceremony, not to be too hasty to rise, and I’ll take
 ‘ care your ambition shall be satisfied ; though I do
 ‘ not know what we must do then. Your *ladyship*
 ‘ will never condescend to put on my shoes, or take
 ‘ away the bed-pan ; so that I believe I must look
 ‘ out for another servant.’——‘ Your Grace is pleased
 ‘ to joke ; but you are very well convinced, that I
 ‘ have no ambition above your service ; and shall
 ‘ ever be proud to perform the meanest offices about
 ‘ you. Indeed, in this affair, I have more respect
 ‘ to your Grace’s honour, than to myself. While I
 ‘ wait upon you, (and I would not give up that to
 ‘ be made a Countess) I am but your servant, let me
 ‘ be called by what title I will ; but then I think it is
 ‘ not proper that you should be waited on by common
 ‘ servants, like any other person, of your *apparent*
 ‘ rank. As you are the fountain of all honour, and
 ‘ nobility, you should have nobles to attend you, as
 ‘ well as knights, if I could have my wish. And it
 ‘ was this tenderness of Your Grace’s honour, that
 ‘ made me so particularly affected at what happened
 ‘ yesterday !’——‘ Yesterday ! I do not understand
 ‘ you ! What happened yesterday ?’——‘ Your Grace
 ‘ may remember, that you were so kind some time
 ‘ ago as to obtain leave for me from the Lord of the

' Manor, to build a little poultry-house in a corner of
 ' yonder common-field. I accordingly set the masons
 ' at work, and liking the situation, thought it was
 ' no great trespass to enlarge the yard a little, and
 ' build a lodge, with a room or two where I could
 ' have my cloaths washed, and drink a dish of tea,
 ' with a friend at any time I might have a mind to be
 ' retired ; but behold, after the wall of the yard
 ' was built, and the lodge raised as high as the first
 ' story, the Bailiff of the manor happened to come
 ' by, and seeing what I intended, had the insolence
 ' to fly into a passion, and saying it was an encroach-
 ' ment beyond the leave I had obtained, obliged the
 ' workmen to pull down every stone they had laid,
 ' though I myself, on receiving notice of it, went
 ' there, and told him it was by your Grace's order,
 ' and for your own use, and alledged the expence
 ' you had been at ; but it was all to no purpose, for
 ' he would not leave the place, till his orders were
 ' executed : nor was this all ; he had the assu-
 ' rance also, to send me word this very morning,
 ' that he would distrain the cows, that you desired
 ' me to put to graze in that field, if I do not directly
 ' pay for their pasture, according to the rate he is
 ' pleased to charge ; which is more than I have been
 ' able to make of the milk ; though by your Grace's
 ' recommendation, I have had so good customers
 ' for it ; so that instead of the profit I expected to
 ' make for you, of your dairy, your Grace is like to
 ' be a loser.'—' Insolent unreasonable fellow ! Not
 ' to be content with his own extravagant profits,
 ' without hindering every body else of coming in for
 ' the least advantage with him : but he has neither
 ' shame, nor conscience, or else he would be satis-
 ' fied with plundering the ponds, and selling the fish,
 ' and hiring out the grafs as he does, without putting
 ' the parish to the expence of fencing the common,
 ' to prevent the people even from walking over the
 ' grafs ! But I may, some time or another, find a
 ' way to be even with him. He stands but badly in
 ' his master's favour, who despises such avarice, and
 ' would

‘ would turn him out of his place directly, but that
‘ unluckily he has it under his hand for life ; how-
‘ ever, I shall watch every opportunity to return him
‘ the compliment, that I can assure him. Let him
‘ take such liberties with his equals ! I’ll have him to
‘ know, that he shall treat me with more respect.’

‘ That is true ! Has your Grace heard, how cava-
‘ tierly he behaved lately to the young Lord ——— ?
‘ I forget his name. The great Beau that made such
‘ a noise, by dangling after the gentleman’s wife.’—
‘ I know whom you mean. No ! I have heard no-
‘ thing about him ; what has been the matter ?’
‘ Ha ! ha ! ha ! I do not believe I shall be able to
‘ tell it for laughing. Why, your Grace must know,
‘ that the Beau was walking one morning, in a very
‘ plain dress, across the upper part of the common,
‘ where happening to meet a farmer’s maid, going
‘ to drive home her cows, he entered into chat with
‘ her and prevailed upon her to quit the path, and
‘ walk with him into an unfrequented part of the
‘ field, where they sat down under a clump of trees,
‘ for the sake of a little very innocent conversation,
‘ to be sure. Well : they had not been there long,
‘ when one of the under-bailiffs, whom this insolent
‘ fellow keeps to watch the grass, seeing them go
‘ out of the road, followed them ; and coming upon
‘ them in a very unseasonable minute, not only in-
‘ terrupted their conversation, but also asked the
‘ Lord (whose quality he never suspected) in an im-
‘ perious manner, how he dared to trample the grass,
‘ and threatened to take him and his whore before a
‘ justice, and have them directly sent to Bridewell.
‘ This insult aggravated the offence of his intrusion,
‘ to such an height, that the Lord in a rage bade the
‘ scoundrel instantly get out of his sight, or he would
‘ break his head. Such words from a person of his
‘ appearance, raised the insolence of office so high,
‘ that the Bailiff, without any more ado, lifted his
‘ staff, and knocked his lordship down, where he
‘ belaboured him severely, repeating the word Scoun-
‘ drel, between every blow, till the poor battered

‘ Beau was in a most doleful plight, though he had often told him who he was, and roared out his quality, with all his might; but the enraged fellow either did not, or pretended that he did not believe him.

‘ When he had beaten him as much as he thought he could, without danger of the gallows, he dragged him along to the high-way, where fortunately a coach happened to come by, the owner of which knew his lordship, and took him up, ordering his servants to apprehend the Bailiff; but he was too nimble for them, and made his escape, and now, finding his mistake, and the danger into which he had fallen, he went directly to his master, and telling him the story, in the most favourable manner for himself, prevailed upon him, to promise to stand by him; particularly as he alledged that the affair had proceeded from his great care of his master’s grafts, which could never be kept, if he should be let to suffer for defending it.’

‘ In the mean time, the poor Lord was in so very bad a taking, that all the physicians and surgeons in town were gathered about him; by whose assistance he was confined to his bed, for near a week. As soon as he was permitted to speak and see his friends, he sent directly to the head Bailiff, to let him know how his man had used him; but all the satisfaction he could obtain, even when he went and applied in person, was to have the fellow removed to another part of the common; nor could he obtain this, till he declared that he would make his complaint directly to the Lord of the Manor, if he had not some redress: It is said, he talked of challenging him, but he is one of the grand jury, of the court-leet, and therefore cannot be called to an account that way.’



C H A P. VII.

An odd visitor to a Lady. The mystery of stock-jobbing. Charity begins at home. Her Grace's kind intentions for honest Aminadab. Another visitor. The worth of honour. The best salve for a broken character.

BY this time the mysteries of the toilet were over, and my mistress's face finished for the day, when a person entered to her, whose appearance was far from promising such an intimacy with a Lady of her rank.

The most shabby, squalid dress covered a distorted carcass, not much above four feet high, but so gross, that, laid upon his back, he would have cast a shadow nearly as long as when he stood upright. A deep olive complexion, an aquiline nose, and a mouth from ear to ear, fringed round with a greasy curled beard, made the beauty of his face correspond with the elegance of his figure.

This extraordinary person approached her Grace, without introduction or ceremony, and entering immediately upon business, told her, "that he came to know if she meant to *buy in* that day, for the report raised in the *Alley*, by *their* express from abroad, had given such a stroke to the funds, that they had tumbled to the ground; but would most certainly rise again the next day, as soon as the news, which had arrived that morning, should be known; which could not be kept a secret, as the people wanted something to keep up their spirits, among so many miscarriages, and divert them from making too close enquiries into the conduct of affairs."

"Why, my honest friend *Aminadab* (replied her Grace) I must be directed in these matters by you. If you think there is any thing to be got by

buying in to day, with all my heart: though I must own I cannot conceive why you should *sell out* the very last week, to *buy in* this."

"Ah! my lady (returned *Aminadab*) there is a mystery in all business, and in none greater than ours. The *Bulgarian King's* success last week raised people's spirits so high, that they thought the world was to be all their own, and therefore bought at any price. Now that was the time for a prudent person to *sell*, as I advised your *Grace*; which we had no sooner done, than instantly comes an express, (*of our own*) with an account that the enemy had turned upon him in their retreat, and entirely van-

quished the vanquishers:

"This news quite overthrew the spirits raised by the former, and made every one eager to sell out at any loss, for fear the enemy should *get wings and fly over*, to take all they had. Now as this was but a terror raised by ourselves, we take the advantage of it, and so buy in when others are selling out 20 per cent. cheaper than we ourselves sold out last week, when the madness bent the other way; and may perhaps *sell* again the next, when another packet shall set things right, and bring the people back to their senses. For the senses of the people of this country are as inconstant as the sea, depending intirely upon the winds that blow them news."

"But is it really possible that any people can be such fools?" "O, please your *Grace*, they are only too rich! They have more money than they know what to do with; that is all."—"Then *Aminadab* we will ease them of some of the burthen. But would it not be better to conceal this news for another day? might not that make them fall still lower?"—"But, my lady, the people want the good news."—"The people may hang themselves in despair, I care not, so I get money."—"The government, though"—"What is the government to me? I will get all I can, and then leave them to themselves, to sink or swim as they will; it is all one to me."—"That is true; your *Grace* says right. A people who do not know, or at least, will

will not follow their own interest, are not worthy any person's care, longer than while he can make something of them. But we must reserve that stroke for another time. This news has got into the offices, and nothing there is a secret you know. Besides the *Pannick* was too violent to last; it begins to wear off already: in another day they would recover their senses of themselves. I think, therefore, with your *Grace's* approbation, to *buy in* all I can to-day; without you had rather lay out your money in the supplies for the protestants of *Germany*." "With all my heart, if you can make as much of it that way as in the funds: but not otherwise. I would not lose one shilling for any people under heaven!"

"Your *Grace* has a just notion of the world, and of the value of money that governs it. Indeed, I must say, that the terms for these supplies are very unreasonable, considering how such things have been done, for some time past. It is expected that people should bring in their money, without any *premium*, or other advantage, than what was publicly calculated for, at the granting them. But these economists will find themselves mistaken. The world is wiser now-a-days, than to give up advantages which they have once got possession of. As to that affair, therefore, I should think it better to let it stand a little longer, 'till the necessity becomes more urgent, and then they will be glad to come into our terms, if it were not that the poor people may be ruined in the mean time; so that indeed I am at a loss what to advise your *Grace* to do in so nice an affair."

"Why let them be ruined then: it is not my fault; nor is it my business to save them; nor will I part with a shilling to do it. Besides, if they do suffer by the delay, those who gave them this supply to prevent their ruin, may give them another to repair it." — "I cannot but admire your *Grace's* judgment in all things. You are above the foolish weaknesses of nature, and have the noble resolution to see your own family perish, rather than injure your own interest, to

relieve them. I shall obey your Grace in all things. I go now to the *Alley*, where business will soon begin."—"Do, honest Aminadab, and fear not; though I could not procure an establishment for your whole nation, as I would have done, I certainly will for your family, and that is enough for you. Your son shall be made a BARONET at least; you have riches enough to support the title."

"Your Grace is very good; our people are all satisfied of your kind intentions; but, alas, that was a severe disappointment to us, after costing us so much money. The children of the Lord weep over it in their synagogues, and the daughters of Sion lament it in their songs; but my household shall rejoice in thy favour, and the labours of my life prove my gratitude for it."

Honest Aminadab was no sooner gone, than there entered an agent, seemingly of another nature, this dealing in honours as the other did in money, but the difference between them was only in appearance, the end of both being ultimately the same.

"May it please your Grace, (said he, advancing with due reverence and ceremony) I came to wait upon you, about that place in the ———; that gentleman will not, indeed cannot, give one shilling more for it."—"Then let the other have it; I will not lose five pence, much less five hundred pounds for him."—"But, please your Grace, you know what grounds he has to expect it on; besides your promise which cannot well be broken through, it was so positive."—"My promise was only conditional (in my own intention) that he should give me as much as another, and in no other sense will I keep it. As for his grounds of expectation, I regard them not: let him make the most of them where he can."—"Just as your Grace pleases; I only took the liberty of speaking my own opinion, but always in submission to your's. Not but I must own I am apprehensive of this gentleman's resentment, though not immediately for myself, so much as for your Grace's character, with which he may be provoked to make too

to free upon such an affair."—"Aye! that is liberty, your boasted English liberty, to speak disrespectfully of your superiors. But I despise whatever he can say; nor will I give up my own way, for fear of his impertinence."—"Very right: your Grace is very right. It were by no means fit that you should: but then it is to be considered, whether this breach of promise may not be attended with inconveniencies, that may overbalance the advantage, as it may make others afraid to deal with you another time."—"I will venture that none come to me but for their own advantage, and while they can find that, they will scarce stay away for punctilios. So let me hear no more of that, but close with the other directly."

Will not your Grace please to abate of your demand for that place in Ireland? I really fear you raise it too high."—"Not a shilling! I will not abate a shilling! Surely I ought to know the value of things in IRELAND by this time! I have had sufficient dealings there, to teach me; it has been my private purse for many years."—"But what I fear, is, that if your Grace does not fix upon some one directly, the lord deputy may, and that would disappoint you; for this place has ever been immediately in his gift, and it would reflect a kind of dishonour on him to give it up."—"Dishonour indeed! I am much concerned for his honour certainly! And as for his naming any one to contradict me, I believe he will be cautious how he does that. The example of his predecessor will teach him."—"However, if your Grace pleases, to prevent any disputes, I will wait on him, and tell him that you have a friend, whom you design to recommend."—"With all my heart; you may if you will. But as to the price, I will not abate one shilling, as I said before. Do not I know that places in that country are either mere pensions, without any thing to do; or even necessity of ever going there at all; or where that cannot be dispensed with, from the nature of the place, that no learning, no abilities are requisite. If it was here indeed, where knowledge in a profession is absolutely necessary to a place in it, there might

that matter, it is most certain that I did something like promise some such thing, but when I have told the whole affair honestly to her Grace, I am sure she will be above demanding it.'—"Sir" (said her Grace) "I do not desire to hear any thing more about it! and I must tell you that you have behaved like an old knave."—"Say an old soldier rather, madam, (replied he, with some warmth) the other is a term I am not used to."—"A nice distinction truly, and well worthy of a man of honour" (said the agent with a sneer.)—"Have a care, Sir, guard your expressions; my respect, my obligations to her Grace will make me bear any thing from her, but I must be so free as to tell you, that I have not the same sentiments for you."—"What are you going to make a riot in my apartments!"—"Not in the least, madam; my respect for your Grace is a sufficient security from that. I would only hint it to that gentleman, that he may not always have the protection of your Grace's presence; that is all, madam."—"You are a knavish old ruffian. But I shall take care that you do not come off so."—"As your Grace pleases for that. By the laws of my country I cannot lose my commission, while I do my duty, nor will my gracious master be influenced to do me wrong; though, in the multiplicity of greater affairs, my services, my hardships could not reach his eye. But as I would not bear the imputation of any crime, much less, so black ones, as dishonesty or ingratitude, you must give me leave to set this affair in a just light to your Grace now, especially as I may never have another opportunity of doing myself that justice.

* Enraged almost to desperation to find that thirty years service, the merits of which were often written in my blood, and stand recorded in these scars, were not sufficient to procure me the regular advances of my rank, without a merit of another nature, I resolved to quit the barren paths, which I had so long pursued in vain, and try those methods which I saw practised with success by others:

I there-

I therefore applied myself to your *Grace*, who seemed struck with my hardships, and promised me your favour; referring me, for more particular information, to this gentleman, who would have lowered my sense of your goodness, by loading it with terms, which were not in my power to fulfil.

‘Had your *Grace* mentioned them to me yourself, I should most certainly have owned my inability; but coming from him, I looked upon them as the *finesse* of his own art, which it was not unjustifiable to return with a *feint* of mine; and therefore I gave an equivocal acquiescence with his proposal, for he dares not say I made a particular or positive promise of any thing.

‘If I have done wrong in this I am mistaken, and sorry for it, but still it is not within the article of war, that makes an error in judgment criminal, because it was not against an enemy; but by all the rules of war, and that is my profession, and the only one that I have studied, it is allowable to oppose art to art, and try to foil the devil at his own weapons. This is what I have done; and the success of this stratagem, which has effected by a *Coup de Main* what I had been making regular advances to, so long in vain, proves the justness of my plan, and must extort your *Grace*’s approbation, when the passion raised by this gentleman’s mercenary influence shall cool.’

Saying thus, the veteran marched off in triumph, leaving my mistress and her agent staring at each other in the strongest surprize.

Her *Grace* found utterance first, and having no other object of her rage, turned all its violence upon her agent: ‘So then (said she) after all, I find the old ruffian has outwitted you, with a general promise, or no promise at all, it seems, for you did not dare to contradict him. I thought, sir, that I had cautioned you before, against this very thing, and given you positive orders to take nothing but the money. But you shall pay for your neglect & you shall make good the loss to me. As for the old

‘ old ruffian, I will speak to his general, and have him broke for a cheat. Talk to me of his services ! what are his services to me ; but I will have him broke ; his example shall terrify others from attempting to abuse me so again.’

‘ I wish it were proper or possible (replied her agent, as soon as want of breath made her stop) for your *Grace* to have him punished for his insolence ; but such a tongue as his might lay matters too open, if once set a-going, for you see he is not to be over-awed to any thing. As for his commission, there is no loss in it ; for it was ordered for him before I applied ; though I made him think it was obtained by your interest, to try what I could bring him to. Your *Grace* may be assured that I would not have taken any promise, had it been otherwise ; and I was just going to tell you this, when his coming prevented me.’——‘ It may be so (returned she ;) but I shall be better satisfied of it, before I give up your making good the loss.’

The agent was relieved from farther persecution for that time, by the entrance of a *messenger*, who was going to *Germany*, and called to know if her *Grace* had any commands for her friends there. ‘ None but my good wishes and prayers for their deliverance (replied she, with a deep drawn sigh) which are constantly offered up for them. I am sorry I am not able to send them any relief from myself ; but I have nothing in my power, no places, no opportunities of getting any thing : these few pieces’ (taking about a dozen guineas from her pocket, where she had thrown the bishop’s change of her note), ‘ are all at present in my possession ; give them to my dear mother, with my duty, and tell her I will send her the cloaths she wrote for as soon as possible ; and assure the rest of my friends of my constant attention to their interest.’



CHAP. IX.

CHRYSAI changes his service for that of an usual attendant upon the great. The history of the unfortunate glyster-pipe-maker, who was like to be hanged for dirtying his fingers. An humble imitation of high life. Another change brings CHRYSAI into the possession of a person of an extraordinary character. Conversation between him and a very noted person. Let those laugh that win.

I WAS by this time, so sick of *High Life*, that I was very glad of being one of the number her Grace gave to the *mistaken*. I saw no prospect of pleasure in such a service. He had no sooner received her Grace's commands, than he immediately went to the office for his dispatches, where he was sent on another errand, while they were getting ready.

This was to apprehend a poor wretch, who sold glyster-pipes about the streets, but being unable to get bread in his profession, had fallen upon a scheme, that he imagined might raise him to the notice of the world, in the light of a state criminal, and get his hunger well satisfied, while he should be an happy prisoner, for offences which he imagined could not be attended with any bad consequences.

Big with this project, he had entered into a correspondence with some person abroad, of equal consequence with himself, and to him communicated the *secret* intelligence which he daily picked up at coffee-houses, or found in the publick news-papers, which his great friend was to forward to some great person, in the service of the enemy.

He had long continued this trade unnoticed, as he thought, though all his letters had been opened at the post-office, but the stuff contained in them was thought below regard; so that he began to fear that
his

his scheme would turn to no account. But now some miscarriages in public affairs alarming the resentment of the people, and making it evident, that the secrets of the nation were betrayed, this insignificant creature was thought of, and ordered to be taken into custody.

Though this was the thing which he had always proposed by his undertaking ; to keep up the farce, he counterfeited the strongest terrors, and put on every appearance of conscious guilt so far that he had like to have over-acted his part, and fallen a sacrifice to the law, which he only meant to elude : a just judgment on the base depravity of soul, that could descend to so iniquitous a scheme, as to trifle with his sacred duty to his country, to support an anxious burthen some being.

For his counterfeited fears not only gave weight to the appearances, which were before so very strong against him, but also made it probable that he was guilty of more than he was at first even suspected of : this justified the prosecuting him with the utmost severity, and sacrificing him to the indignation of the people, who called aloud for satisfaction, to atone for their reproachful losses.

The criminal soon perceived his error, and would have recanted all he had said ; but this was not admitted him ; his own confessions had confirmed the charge against him, and he was given up to the laws ; to which, on the evidence of such strong appearances, though no intelligence could be proved against him, but what he shewed the public authority mentioned before for, his life was declared a forfeit.

But the contemptibility of his station and behaviour proved his safety, and mercy was extended to a wretch beneath vengeance, after he had saved the turn, and amused the people for his day.

I did not then stay in *England*, to see the event of this affair, but having learned it, since my return, I thought it better to conclude the story in this place together.

together, than to interrupt my narrative with it, at another time.

It would be doing injustice to my master, to imagine that he had profited so little, by his frequent intercourse with persons in genteel life, and particularly by her Grace's late example, as to think it necessary to apply the money, she had given him, to any other use than his own: accordingly, when he was setting out, he gave me to his wife, for the support of his family, in his absence.

But this spirited lady had a politer way of thinking, than to obey his directions, or deny herself any of the genteel pleasures of life, for the sake of such a mean domestick duty, as the care of a family. As soon therefore as his back was turned, she put on her hat and cardinal, and posted away to one of her most intimate acquaintances, a lady, who kept a chandler's shop in the neighbourhood, to advise with her about settling a party, at her house, for the next evening.

An affair of this importance required deliberation; accordingly after tea, they retired into the bed-chamber, the parlour they sat in being open to the shop, so that they were liable to be over-heard, by every one who should come in, and there, over a comfortable glass of *right Holland's*, fixed upon the company, and settled the ceremonial, and fare of the entertainment. This great business being dispatched, my mistress returned home, and getting a gentleman, who lodged in her house, at the expence of the state, to write cards for her, sent them by her husband's assistant to the company, to invite them to play a game of cards, and spend the next evening with her, and then proceed to put every thing in order, for their reception.

Her great anxiety, and the preparation she made, raised my curiosity not a little, to see the vanity and vice of the higher ranks of life mimicked, by such a set; but I was disappointed at that time, being paid away to a tavern-keeper, next morning, for wine and brandy, for the occasion.

My

My new master was a striking instance of the inconsistency of life, and the hypocrisy of the human heart: he had for many years kept one of the most notorious brothel-taverns in the town; but not content with this publick insult to the laws, in defiance of every sense of shame, he at the same time professed himself a reformer of religion; and while the grossest scenes of riot and debauchery were carrying on openly, in his house, was chaunting hymns, in a conventicle, and groaning in spirit, for the wickedness of the times, with a face as meagre, and mortified, as the picture of famine. I see you wonder at such a palpable contradiction, but that proceeds from ignorance of life, every view of which, shews instances as gross as this; the gaming devotee, the pensioned patriot, and the drunken priest, being equally offensive to common sense and reason. As for my master, he had as powerful motives for his conduct, as the greatest of them all. Poverty made him, in his early youth, turn pander, to such an house as he now kept, when the demure sanctity of his looks screened him so effectually from suspicion, that he was able to make acquaintances in families and accomplish seductions, which no other of his trade dare to attempt. By these means, he soon acquired a sum of money, sufficient to set up this house for himself; when his character immediately brought him into business that in a little time made his fortune; but for this success he was chiefly indebted to a master-stroke of superior genius; for having observed in the mystery of his profession, that there is no private sinner, like a public saint, as soon as he thus arose above the drudgery of business, and from porter became master of the tavern, he associated himself with a set of reformers, who went preaching up and down the town, at whose meetings he had an opportunity of finding out new faces, for his best customers, and making acquaintances with the leaders, who observing his discretion, soon admitted him into their mystery, and made his house the scene of their secret meetings, to settle their business, laughed at the follies they lived by, and practised

practised the vices, which they preached against. Such success might be thought to have satisfied his avarice; but the habit has taken such a hold of him that he cannot desist, and he now does, from inclination, what was at first the effect of necessity.

I should not have dwelt so long upon this character, but that it serves to explain the ways of the world, and prove the folly of an opinion, generally received among men, that they can change their course of life whenever they please; and as soon as their end is answered, and they have heaped up a fortune, by the iniquity of a profession, quit it at once, and live virtuously upon the earnings of vice.

The evening after I came into his possession, the high-priest of the conventicle called upon him, to spend an hour in spiritual conversation. After examining into his progress in grace, and the increase of his faith, and assurance of election (for such is the power of custom, and the pleasure of cheating the world, that they practise the art, even upon each other) he told him that he had a most particular occasion, for his most private room this evening. 'For,' (said he, shaking him by the hand) 'my friend, as I have found by experience, that the only way to foil the Devil, is at his own weapons, I have appointed *Momus* the ballad-singer, whose attack upon me has made such a noise, to meet me here this evening, and make up the affair over a glass of wine.'—'In truth' (answered my master, a good deal surprized) 'your reverence's meekness, and patience, must needs be very great, or you could not bear ever to mention him in any degree of christian charity, and benevolence, after so outrageous and gross an attack, as he has made upon you, without the least personal provocation; for what was it to him, what you said or did to the rest of the world; his morals or religion were in no danger: But you were born to be an example of the age, and a shining light, to guide the steps of the faithful.'

'A truce with this canting now, my friend,' (replied the Doctor) 'and let us talk a few words, like men of the world. Your proved fidelity and prudence

' dence making me not scruple to reveal the whole
 ' mystery of the ministry to you, I will let you into
 ' the secret of this affair. You must know then,
 ' that I have, for some time, perceived the humour
 ' of the people begin to waver greatly, and the fer-
 ' vency of their devotion, to cool, in spite of all I
 ' could do, to keep it up, by preaching, fasting,
 ' prayer and lamentation, by crying up my own pie-
 ' ty, and the wonderful effects of my spiritual labours;
 ' it was necessary therefore, to have recourse to some
 ' new expedient, to prevent their falling off, entirely ;
 ' and accordingly I pitched upon this, which has ex-
 ' ceeded my expectations ; for instead of making my
 ' people ashamed of coming to me, it has piqued their
 ' pride, and now they resolve to shew, that they scorn
 ' as much to be laughed, as preached, out of their
 ' own way. This, my friend, is the way of the
 ' world, which, since we cannot in reality mend, we
 ' must only strive to make the best of. If I could car-
 ' ry on my business, without this assistance, I most
 ' certainly would never have entered into such a con-
 ' federacy any more than you would keep a brothel,
 ' and entertain whores and rogues, if you could
 ' make equal profit, by any other company.

' I am much obliged to your reverence' (returned
 my master) ' for putting me in any degree of compa-
 ' rison with yourself ; but it is too great an honour !
 ' I act in a low sphere ; but still I have the pleasure
 ' to think, that even in my poor way, I contribute
 ' something towards your great work ; as there could
 ' not be so many converts to resort to you for spiritual
 ' comfort, if there were no places of this kind, to en-
 ' courage vice and debauchery. You see, Sir, that
 ' I enter into the spirit of your design, and deserve
 ' your confidence, by this return of mine. There
 ' are secrets in all professions, and as you have enter-
 ' ed into a league with your professed enemy, that
 ' you may be able to play into each other's hands, so
 ' I, notwithstanding the probity of my professions,
 ' have a private understanding, with all the ladies of
 ' pleasure who resort this house, who in return for
 ' their

‘their being brought into good company, never fail to enhance expence and countenance every imposition, of false measures, false charges, and a thousand others, by which a prudent man turns the folly of the world, to his own advantage. As to this confederacy between you and the ballad-singer, I own I never suspected the least of it; and indeed I still am at a loss, to think how you could bear the personal reflexions especially, which he has thrown upon you. What was the misfortune of your form to him, that he should call you Doctor *Hunchback*?’—‘Why that is true enough (answered the Doctor) ‘in that he exceeded my directions, and to call him to an account for it, is part of the business of this appointment.’ Every thing else was settled between us. We have hitherto met at our friend Mrs. *Brimstone*’s, who first negotiated the affair between us, and consented to take her share of the ridicule, to advance the common cause. She will be here to-night too, so that we shall have an agreeable set. I believe I hear him just come in. I directed him to inquire for number one; do you shew him into the private room, and when the coast is clear I’ll join you.’

~~CHRYSALE'S MASTER STARTS AT HIS OWN APPARITION.~~

C H A P. X.

CHRYSALE's master starts at his own apparition. Interview between the Doctor and a noted ballad-singer. The history of a famous ballad. All trades alike.

THE person, my master was sent to meet, had something so uncommon in his appearance, as instantly struck my attention. Every passion of the human heart was printed in his face so strongly, that he could at pleasure display it in all its force, while his every look and gesture turned some vice, or folly, into ridicule. ‘You inquire for number one, Sir! (said my master, bowing with the profoundest respect) ‘I do

‘do, Sir,’ (answered the other, returning his bow, assuming his look, and imitating his voice, in a manner that he would have extorted laughter from despair) ‘inquire for number one.’

Though my master was no stranger to his talents, which he had often seen him display at the expence of others, this personal application of them to himself, threw him into such confusion, that in spite of his long-practised assurance, a blush broke feebly through his unimpassioned lifeless face, and he had scarce power to shew him into the room. The Ballad-singer seeing that he had him at command, would not pursue his advantage any farther, at that time, for fear of frightening him away, but putting on the exact countenance, and mimicking the voice and manner of the Doctor, ‘I am come my friend and brother in the ‘Lord’ (said he) ‘to inquire into thy spiritual estate, ‘to give thee ghostly advice, and commune with thee ‘for a short space, for our mutual edification.’—The surprise and manner of this address, had such an effect upon my master, that he could not refrain bursting into laughter; and immediately recovered from the confusion, into which the ridicule of himself had thrown him.

They were scarce seated, when the Doctor entered, and addressing himself to the stranger, ‘I am glad ‘to see you, Sir, (said he, taking him by the hand) ‘and heartily congratulate you, on your success! you ‘see I was not mistaken in my judgment! I knew ‘what would take with the taste of the public? There ‘is nothing pleases them so much; as a little prophane-ness, and ridicule of Religion! a sting at the Clergy never fails to raise a laugh.’—‘I acknowledge ‘your judgment, Sir,’ (answered the other, raising up his shoulders, rolling his eyes, and echoing every cadence of the Doctor’s voice) ‘and thank you, for ‘your congratulation; but I must beg leave to differ ‘in opinion with you, as to the cause of my success, ‘for I have never had the least sting at the Clergy, ‘nor been guilty of prophane-ness, or ridiculing religion, in my ballad; the abuse of religion, by hypo-
crisy,

‘crisy, and making the profession of virtue a sanctimon for the practice of vice, where the objects of my satyr, and the reception it has met with from the public, shews that the people have a proper sense of such vices.’

The Doctor was so struck at the reflection of himself, when the other began to speak, that he started, in the utmost astonishment, and was unable to interrupt him, till he had finished his discourse, which else he certainly would have done; while my master stood almost convulsed with laughter. But his triumph was not long; for the ballad-singer, turning short upon him, and instantaneously assuming his cadaverous appearance, and bowing in the same manner, ‘and you, Sir,’ continued he, (addressing himself to him) ‘must have had ample experience, in the course of your business, that the taste of the town inclines quite another way, the most profligate in practice being the most pious in profession.’

This sudden transition from the Doctor, restored him to his spirits, who in his turn could not avoid pointing with his finger, and laughing most immoderately at the silly look of my master, though he was not quite so much abashed as he had been before.

As soon as the Doctor could speak, ‘However I may doubt your opinion,’ (said he to the Ballad-singer) ‘I acknowledge the irresistible force of your powers of ridicule, and beg a cessation of them, for a moment, till we talk of our business. I will not dispute about the cause of your success, but I think you need not have fallen upon my person. My professions and practice surely were enough, without your own exaggerations! Why then need you give me the opprobrious nick-name of *Hunchback*; which has spread so, that I shall never get rid of it? The very children haunt me with it, as I go along the streets.’

‘Good Heavens (answered the other) how subject are the wisest men to the weakness of vanity! I

' should have thought that you were long since proof
 ' to any thing the world could say of you, or you
 ' would have given up your trade before now. As
 ' to my calling you this name, you must know, that
 ' the whole success of our scheme depended upon it ;
 ' for if I had not turned the ridicule against your per-
 ' son, the taste of the public is so gross, that I might
 ' have laughed alone, at your opinions. But what
 ' success have you had ? Do you find your flock ga-
 ' ther upon this attack on their shepherd ?'—' Why
 ' pretty well' (replied the Doctor) ' pretty well. They
 ' seem to shew a proper sense of it. As for me, I
 ' appear affected at it in a very extraordinary manner,
 ' that is solely upon your account : and to convince
 ' them and all the world of the strength of my cha-
 ' rity, I design to-morrow, to offer up prayers for your
 ' conversion, as being in a dangerous state of salva-
 ' tion, and then, on the merit of that, to propose a
 ' subscription, for the relief of two or three families,
 ' whom your example has led into ruin.'—' Bravo,
 ' Doctor!' (interrupted the other) ' tell me of profane-
 ' ness again ! But I hope I am to have a share in the
 ' subscription, as it is to be proposed on my account ;
 ' at least, you will let me assist in the distribution of
 ' it.'—' Take care, my friend !' (returned the Doc-
 ' tor) ' another word of that kind, and I declare off
 ' the connection. I will have no body pry into my
 ' conduct, or interfere with my business ! I did not
 ' ask any part of your gains, though you got so
 ' much in every company where you sung your bal-
 ' lad ; nor did I speak a word in behalf of the other
 ' poor ballad-singers, you picked up about the streets,
 ' and set to sing for you, though the wretches com-
 ' plained that you starved them.'

The ballad-singer, perceiving that he had touched
 upon a tender point, thought proper to waive it,
 as he did not chuse to break off so advantageous a
 connection. ' As to that' (said he) ' I did but jest !
 ' I never interfere with any man's matters ! But
 ' that's

that's true! I have bad news to tell you! *The clerk of the parish* sent me word yesterday, that understanding I sung my ballad to a psalm-tune, he let me know that I must change my tune directly, or he would order the beadies to whip me out of the parish, if I ever presumed to sing there again; and to mend the matter, at the same time ordered me to make use of an old, black-guard tune which he sent me, the vulgar stupidity of which blunts the edge of the ridicule, which was never turned against the tune itself, but solely against the prostitution of it; which can never be so effectually attacked, as by repeating the manner, exactly, in which it is sung. But where is our friend *Brimstone*? I expected to have met her here.'

Just as he said this, my master was called out, where he found a venerable Matron, supported by two chairmen, who inquiring, in a feeble voice, for number *one*, he directly shewed her in to the company.



C H A P. XI.

A venerable Matron compleats the company. The curtain lifted up, and several unexpected discoveries made. MOMUS plays successively upon Doctor HUNCH-BACK and Mother BRIMSTONE. After various disasters, the evening is concluded in character.

THE Matron, whom my master was handing in to his friends, displayed one of those figures, which lose by the most forcible description. Her face, though broken by debauchery and disease, preserved the remains of a most pleasing sweetness and beauty; but her body was bloated by intemperance almost out of every resemblance of the human form. She wore on her head a richly laced cap, over which, half a dozen fine handkerchiefs almost concealed a piece of greasy

greasy flannel. Her gown, of the richest silk, flowed loosely round her, under a velvet cloak lined with ermin; while her legs and feet, swollen out of all shape, and too tender to bear any ligature, were wrapt up in flannels.

My master received this amiable creature from the chairmen, and stooping under as much as he was able to bear of the burthen of her body, assisted her to limp into the room. The contrast between her and the shabby skeleton her supporter was so strikingly ridiculous, that, the moment they appeared, *Momus* burst into an immoderate fit of laughter, and turning to the Doctor, (who was not much less affected, though practice had given him such a mastery over the muscles of his face, that they never betrayed the passions of his heart,) 'Behold, (said he) the blessed fruit of thy ministry, and rejoice! See how the spirit assisteth the flesh, to struggle with the infirmities of nature.'—And then, waddling up to her, in her own gait, 'Dear mother,' (addressing himself to her) 'give me your other arm; rest a little part of your weight, an hundred or two, upon me! Come! let me help you into that great chair!'—'Oh! oh! oh! my poor bones!' (exclaimed she) 'how you pull me along: you will tear me to pieces! oh! oh! oh!'—'Never fear, mother! never fear that!' (answered he) 'Crazy as your carcase is, it will stick a little longer together; your friends are not ready for you yet.'—'Go! go! you're a wicked creature, a profane wretch.'—'Dear Doctor! I thought I should never see you more; I had a sad night of it; a most sad one indeed. But the spirit comforted me. Oh, if it were not for the comforts of the spirit, there would be no bearing the pains of this life! I was purely when you left me: Your pious conversation had comforted my heart; and the sober bottle we cracked together, raised my spirits so, that I forgot all my pains. But I was not to be so happy long: Satan envied me, and threw temptation in my way!—This wicked imp, and half a dozen of his roaring

ing companions came in upon me, just as you went out at the back-door. Well! to be sure they have a great deal to answer for! I was just beginning to read the pious exhortation you left me, when in they came, snatched the book out of my hand, and, calling for the ladies, insisted on my sitting with them; so, as you know I always loved innocent mirth, I could not refuse: But, alas! I paid dearly for it this morning! My poor bones! and then my head! my poor head is quite gone, quite gone! I can bear nothing!—Oh what a difference there is between spending an evening in edifying conversation over a sober bottle, with a pious friend or two, and these ranting, riotous scenes! though they behaved so like gentlemen, and were so good company, that there was no leaving them: But it is all folly! all vanity! I am resolved I will leave it off: I will not follow it much longer, I am resolved: I'll wean myself from this world, and think of nothing but a new life. I hope the baronet won't use poor *Betsy* ill: I did not like his refusing to drink the ratifia. I should be ruined if any thing ailed her; she is more enquired for than all the ladies in the house.—And my Lord! He is sweet company. But it is a pity he is so wicked! He was going to burn my book of devout exercises; and then, that profane song of yours! what need he sing that! I wonder what pleasure people can find in profaneness! Where there is any enjoyment, it is another thing; but this is being wicked for wickedness sake. It is a great pity, for he is a very generous, fine gentleman! He gave *Poll* ten guineas this morning: He's very fond of *Poll*; he always has her, when *Betsy* is engaged. Oh! oh! shall I ever get rid of these pains! when shall I be happy in Heaven?—

While she was running on thus, the Doctor was busied in writing a letter to himself, as from a family in distress, for whom he intended to solicit a subscription, the next day, from his congregation; and my master was laying glasses on the table, and

drawing the corks out of several bottles, so that *Momus* alone attended to her; by the significant archness of whose look, it was easy to perceive, that he was laying up a fund for future entertainment, and would not have interrupted her, had she continued her discourse never so long; but the Doctor's turning to the bottle put a stop to her, and introduced a general conversation.

'I am sorry, my friend,' (said he, addressing himself to her) 'to hear you complain so. I left you in a blessed temperature of mind and body last night; but I much fear, that the intemperance you mentioned must have equally disturbed both. The most pious man knoweth not what folly he uttereth, when he is full of wine. A little is good, and rejoiceth the heart, but too much marreth the understanding, and letteth loose the secrets of the wise.' —As for that there, dear Doctor, never fear me: Since the blessed hour of my *call*, I have never disclosed one secret about the matter; I never mentioned a word of it.—But, Doctor, what did you do with the young lady whom you would see home last night? I would not refuse you, to be sure; but I hope you have not put any more idle notions in her head: She is very young, and likely to do a great deal of business, therefore her *call* need not come this great while; it will be time enough some years hence. I had a great deal of trouble to bring her too; and now if you have spoiled her, I shall have all the work to do over again. No body knows the trouble and expence I am at for the service of the public! No body knows! If it was not for me, gentlemen would be forced to take up with common servant-maids, and such low-lived creatures; but I provide gentlewomen for them; Ladies of birth and education; and yet I am not regarded! no body thanks me! This is poor encouragement, to serve the public, very poor indeed! But virtue is its own reward: That's my comfort. I do the best I can; and if I do not receive a proper return, that is not my fault!

'fault : Let the world answer for it. I do my part ;
'and so my mind is at ease.'

'That you do !' (said *Momus*, while she stopped to drink) 'that you do ! Your diligence never
'slackens. Come fill your glass. Here's to the re-
'formation of manners, a work that we all labour in
'alike.'—'By your leave, good Sir,' (interrupted the
Doctor, with a look and tone of offended import-
ance) 'not all alike I presume ! I believe you will
'allow that there is some difference between your
'profession and mine, at least.'—'So then' (answered
Momus) 'you are returning to the old point : I
'thought I had said enough to you on that head be-
'fore. Difference ! aye ! that there is indeed ; but
'perhaps you are not sensible in whose favour that
'difference is ! I sing a song that makes people
'laugh, and put vice and folly out of countenance,
'by shewing them in a ridiculous light ! and this on-
'ly for a trifling pittance of that money which they de-
'vote to mere pleasure ; but you, by drawing hor-
'rors that never existed out of your own imagina-
'tion, and preaching up doctrines impossible to prac-
'tice, frighten your poor deluded followers out of
'every enjoyment of their lives, and pillage them of
'the money, that should support their families, and
'pay their debts, under a pretence of imaginary cha-
'rities. This is the difference between us.'—'Good
'lack ! good lack !' (interrupted the sage Matron).
'how can people be such fools, as to fall out thus
'about nothing ? What signifies it, where the dif-
'ference lies, so you can both do your business ! It
'is just the same thing, as if my landlord here and I
'should enter into a dispute about the reputation of
'our houses. I thought I had made you both pro-
'mise never to mention this matter any more. Come,
'Doctor ! here is prosperity to all our business,
'without any such foolish distinctions.'—

The judgment of this mediation was too plain, to
admit of any dispute. The competitors filled their
glasses, and, shaking hands very cordially, drank
their friend's toast. 'Well now there is some plea-

'sure in this' (continued she ;) 'things are like to go on well, when all parties agree ; but when some people fall out—you know the rest of the saying. —But, my friend *Momus*, I have news for you ! That story of the young Lady, that you put in your ballad, has answered just as I said. The world thought it would blow me up ; but I knew better : I never had a greater run of company in my life, than to inquire into that affair ; and they all of the right sort, your secret, grave, old, rich culls, just fit to do business with. At first I always deny it, with the strongest oaths and imprecations, and rail at you for inventing such a scandalous story ; but afterwards, as if I am put off my guard, by the liquor, I seem to place a confidence in their professions of secrecy and friendship, and with many tears, own the whole ; that is so far as to my having the Lady in my power ; and then the consequence is, that they all intreat me to let them see her (that is, singly, for such chaps always come alone ; when such is the pleasure in debauching virtue, that, besides making me an handsome present for my kindness, they leave no temptation untried, to prevail upon the Lady, whom they generally take to themselves upon a genteel settlement ; by which means I have got a pretty sum, and have besides had an opportunity of providing, for near a dozen of my women, who were too well known, upon the town, to do any thing in the public way ; for this kind of customers have too great a regard for their characters, ever to mix in company that might undeceive them. So you see, Doctor, that I do not forget your instructions of doing all the good in my power ; and sure it is no small matter to rescue so many poor women, who were no longer capable of getting a genteel livelihood for themselves, from want and misery, and getting them a comfortable settlement for life ; so that they have nothing to do now, but attend to you, and make their peace with Heaven.—Come ! here's my service to you, my friend *Momus* ; and if you

‘ you can think of any story of me, that can serve
 ‘ your turn, and get off another ballad, never spare
 ‘ me : I’ll forgive you.’—‘ And so will I too’ (added
 the Doctor) ‘ though he should call me a worse name
 ‘ than *Hunch-back*. Let them laugh who win. While
 ‘ our railing at each other in public, answers our own
 ‘ ends, we were fools to drop it ; as to the deceit in
 ‘ it, it is a virtue ; for sure it is better to live thus in
 ‘ friendship and charity with all mankind, than to be
 ‘ the real enemies we seem ; and so, sir, here’s my
 ‘ hearty service to you. And let us pursue our works
 ‘ in concert, without any more of these broils. So let
 ‘ us drink about for an hour or two ; for I must
 ‘ leave you early, being obliged to write an exhorta-
 ‘ tion for the old dutchess, which I must carry her
 ‘ early in the morning, when she designs to visit her
 ‘ cousin the colonel, who is under sentence of death
 ‘ in Newgate for murder ; not that I think either
 ‘ that, or her preaching, will have any effect upon
 ‘ him ; but she will try ; and I do not care to diso-
 ‘ blige her, as she is not only a good subscriber upon
 ‘ all occasions, but also a credit to our conventicle,
 ‘ which would never have risen into such esteem
 ‘ with the people, if some persons of quality had not
 ‘ brought it into fashion.’——‘ Why aye ! to be sure
 ‘ there is a great deal in that’ (added the Matron,)
 ‘ fashion is a powerful thing. If it was not for that,
 ‘ I could never do the business I do. But since the
 ‘ nobility have made it the fashion to marry their
 ‘ mistresses, there is no great difficulty in bringing
 ‘ a private gentleman’s daughter into our way of
 ‘ life, as it gives her the only chance she can possibly
 ‘ have of making her fortune and becoming a Lady ;
 ‘ for as to the example of those few who married
 ‘ Ladies of virtue for mere love, it was too old-fashi-
 ‘ oned and romantic to have any influence. But that’s
 ‘ true, Doctor, I forgot to mention something to you
 ‘ last night, that has given me great concern ! How
 ‘ could you be so indiscreet, as to accompany that
 ‘ highwayman to Tyburn the other day ? And then
 ‘ to take his hand, and kiss it before all the people ?

‘Fie! it turns my stomach to think of it; I do not know how you can expect any lady will let you ever kiss her lips after such a filthy action. Besides, it is a scandal to all your congregation, that you should appear so familiar with such low-lived creatures, and seems a kind of encouragement to their crimes. If you had heard what remarks two or three Ladies, who called at my house yesterday evening, made upon it, I am sure you would never do it again.’—‘Go to, woman! go to!’ (answered the Doctor, with a contemptuous look) ‘take the beam out of thine own eye, before you find fault with the mote in your neighbour’s! What highway-man’s crimes are equal to yours! the greatest danger of scandal that I ever ran, has been in condescending to keep company with you: in that indeed I may be said, with too great an appearance of truth, to encourage the basest crimes.’

The Matron, who with all her prudence, was of a warm temper, could not brook such an insult as this, even from her spiritual guide; but, catching up her glass, in the fury of her rage, which had deprived her of the power of utterance, she flung it at his head, with all her strength, and with such an unlucky aim, that it felled him to the ground,—‘Woman!’ (sputtered she, as soon as her passion permitted her to articulate a word) ‘Woman! call your women about you! I scorn your words, you canting, hypocritical, vicious wretch, who, under the appearance of sanctity and religion, cheat the credulous fools that mind you: you condescend to keep me company! you! a creature who would never have been taken notice of, had it not been for me! Did I not point you out the persons proper for you to work upon! Was it not I that introduced you to those very people of quality, that now make you give yourself such airs? Were they not most of them my acquaintances, and even indebted to me for the rank they now enjoy? I’ll make you know yourself, you scoundrel! I will. I’ll expose you to the world, and then see who will go to your conventicle, or subscribe to
‘your

• your sham charities ! I'll make you know how to
• treat your superiors, for the future.'——

While the enraged Matron thus vented her fury, *Momus* and my master raised the Doctor from the ground, in a pickle not to be described. The glass had been thrown with such strength, that had not his skull been of a comfortable thickness, his labours would have been at an end ; however, it had made such a gash on his temple, that he was, in a moment, in a gore of blood. The sight of this terrified them all. The Matron fainted (or pretended to faint) away, my master ran to get a napkin to wipe off the blood, while *Momus* supported the Doctor in his chair ; but the first sight of the wound, convincing him that it was not dangerous, he resolved to improve the accident, to that diversion which was the great pursuit of his life.

• 'Good Heaven !' said he in a low voice, as if speaking to himself, and with all the appearance of distress) 'What will become of us all ! We shall all
• be ruined by this unfortunate affair, even if we
• escape the death which inevitably awaits the
• wretched Murderers.'—'O Sir !' (said the Doctor, alarmed almost to despair). 'what do you think ? Am
• I a dead man ? Speak, I conjure you, give me some
• hopes !'—'Alas ! my friend, I wish I could ; but I
• must not flatter a man in your condition. If you
• have any concerns in this life to settle, delay not a
• moment : This horrid fracture in your skull threatens immediate death. Heavens !' (stooping and pretending to look earnestly). 'How his brain works !'—
• 'O what shall I do !' (exclaimed the terrified wretch)
• 'I cannot die ! I am not fit to die ! Oh ! that I had
• followed some honest trade, and never taken to this
• of preaching !' I might then have earned honest
• bread, as my fore-fathers did, and escaped this miserable death, and the more horrid fate that awaits
• me. What shall I do ? What will become of me ?
• How can I even pray to that God, whom I have so
• often provoked by my hypocrisy and crimes !'—

My

My master, by this time, had wiped the wound, and seeing that though it bled so violently, from the number of little vessels that are in that part, there was no fracture of the skull, and therefore no danger in it, 'Be comforted, Sir,' (said he) 'you have time enough to prepare yourself for death: I'll ensure you from any danger this time.'—'How! my dearest, best friend!' (said the Doctor, catching his hand, and kissing it in extasy) 'Is my life safe? Is not the wound mortal?'—'Mortal! no! nor even dangerous; if the surgeons do not make it so! Give me leave to put a plaster to it, which I always have in readiness in the house, in case of accidents, as gentlemen often quarrel for their women in their ill-humor; and I'll engage that it shall give you no farther trouble. Many a guinea have I got by it; for when any such thing happens, I immediately slip on a full trimm'd suit, a big wig, and a sword, which a surgeon once pawned to me for a debt of two guineas, and up I go, do the job, take my fee, and come away as good a surgeon as the best: never fear, Sir, I'll ensure you from this scratch.'

The consolation which this news gave the Doctor, is not to be expressed! He hugged and kissed his dear friend, till he made him in as bloody a condition as himself, and, in the joy of his heart, even forgave the cause of his fears, who had all this time counterfeited a swoon. But *Momus*, who saw his sport with the Doctor thus cut short, soon brought her to herself; for, taking a glass of brandy, as if to hold to her nose, in the affected awkwardness of his hurry and confusion, he spilled it all over her face, and then taking a bit of burnt paper, to try what that would do, he designedly neglected to blow it out, and so holding it to her nose, set the brandy he had spilled upon her face on fire. This instantly awoke her from her swoon: She shrieked out, when he in the same affected confusion, flung the basin of bloody water, in which the Doctor's wound had been washed, full in her face. This indeed quenched the flame, but then it put her in a condition as dirty and disagreeable as that of my master

master or the Doctor; the consequence of which was, that the Doctor could not refrain from bursting out a laughing. 'Well, my friend,' said he (taking her by the hand) 'it is but just that you should share in the effects of your own rashness. But let there be no more of it. We have both been in fault perhaps; and so let us only be more cautious for the future. What I have suffered was done by design, and had like to have been attended with dreadful consequences; your's is all accidental and trifling.'

While the Doctor was thus piously making peace, my master was cleaning himself and setting the room to rights. *Momus* assisted the matron to cram half a dozen napkins down her bosom, to dry the water he had bathed her with, which he performed with so well-acted an anxiety and care, that even she was deceived, and attributed all that had happened to her, to his confusion; and being glad to get so well off an affair that might have ended so much worse, she complied with the Doctor's advances to a general reconciliation; and so all things were restored to their former harmony. As to the Doctor's wound, by a ready presence of mind, he found a way to make an advantage of it, by telling his congregation next day, that he had received it from some of *Momus's* gang, who had attempted to assassinate him, in revenge of the contempt into which he had brought their master.

Matters being thus happily settled, the rest of the night was devoted to mirth, and concluded with a song in character, by each of the company, of which *Momus's* was the most humorous, my master's the grotest, the Matron's the loosest, and the Doctor's the most daringly profane, perhaps to obliterate the remembrance of his late religious qualms. After this the company broke up, when the Doctor having occasion for some money early in the morning, borrowed a couple of pieces from my master, among which I was, who lent them very unwillingly, and then retired to bed to his bar-maid; for he had too genteel notions of life to marry.



CHAP. XII.

The Doctor pays a visit to an useful friend. The mystery of controversy. He waits upon her Grace with a pious exhortation, for her friend. CHRYSAL enters into the service of her Grace. Her disappointment in her visit to the prison. Her Grace's character.

THOUGH it was late when the company broke up, my new master, who never neglected business for pleasure, did not forget the *Exhortation*, which he was to carry to her Grace the next morning; not that he was at the trouble of composing it himself; his time was too precious to be employed so: the more important cares of his flock, which he could not entrust to any other; as visiting his great proteges, receiving and distributing charity, and his incessant exercise of all the sacerdotal functions, scarce allowed him time for the necessary refreshments of nature, and would have been deemed an intolerable burthen, had they been enjoined by the most express revelation of the divine will, though ambition, avarice, and the pleasure of deceit, made him undertake them voluntarily; but still, to secure to himself every degree of religious merit, he kept a most laborious author, a degraded clergyman, in constant employment, whose works he passed upon the public for his own, when he did not immediately direct them against himself.

To this learned person, therefore, he went, upon the present occasion, and having him called from a night-cellar, where he was holding forth on religion and politicks, to a company of chairmen, he told him his business, and desired him to set about it directly. 'Good God, Sir,' (said the author) 'this is a very unseasonable time to set me upon such a work. From five this morning, till eleven at night, have I laboured incessantly; and now when I have just stepped out to take a little necessary refreshment—' 'Refreshment!' (answered my master) 'Tell me not of refreshment.'

‘refreshment or any thing else ! Either do my business, or say you will not : I can get enough to undertake it, and gladly too, for less than I give you.’—‘That is impossible’ (replied the author) ‘if they are to live by it : I am sure what you give me scarce keeps me from starving.’—‘Starving !’ (returned my master) ‘So it appears indeed, when you this moment have been indulging in riot and luxury, and smell so strong of spirituous liquors, that it is offensive to sobriety to stand near you. I wonder you are not ashamed to be guilty of such intemperance ! It ill becomes a man of morality and religion.’—‘Sir, Sir !’ (interrupted the author, provoked beyond his patience) ‘Have some regard to truth and reason, in what you say ; and look at home before you accuse me of intemperance. I laboured the whole day, without any other refreshment, or sustenance, than a mouthful of bread and cheese, and a draught of small beer ; and now have had only a quarter of gin, in a pint of warm porter, to wash down half a pound of sausages, and you call this intemperance. If I may judge by appearances, you have not spent your evening on such fare.’—‘How I have spent my evening,’ (returned my master, who in spite of himself, felt the justice of the reproach) ‘is nothing to the purpose ! I am answerable for what I do ! But this manner of talking signifies nothing ; I must have this *Exhortation* by eight in the morning. It will not take you up much time : You are sufficiently practised in the style : the matter is of little consequence. If you chuse to drink a glass of wine, here is half a crown, which I make you a present of : I would by no means have you stinted of any thing that is proper.’—‘Sir,’ (answered the author) ‘I am much obliged to you ; I will take care that it shall be ready at the time. You are sensible that I never think much of any labour to serve you. I have finished all the pamphlets you ordered, about the ballad-singer’s affair : Here they are. This is a letter from you to him, that lays him flat : I have quoted half the fathers of the church against him !—

‘These

‘These two are letters to you upon the subject, one as from a great lord, the other from a reverend divine, setting forth the great benefits of your ministry, and expelling the profaneness and immorality of his ballad.’—‘This here is a silly vindication of his ballad, in a letter to the author, from one of his ranting companions; and this last is an address to the public against all those irreligious and profane amusements, of ballads, balls, routs, &c. This is a master-piece! You see it is as from myself, if you do not chuse to own it; though I do not know but it may have more weight with your enemies, if it appears as from another. So you see I have worked hard to-day; and now I believe we have done with Mr. *Momus*, and his ballad.’—‘Why aye! pretty well, I believe’ (said my master).—‘But hold, I have a thought just come into my head; You must know that the Parson of the Parish has sent for that reprobate, that *Momus*, and ordered him to alter the tune of his ballad, as it happened to have several of the same notes with the psalm tunes. Now, as this is known, what do you think of writing a letter to me, as from the parson, setting forth what he has done, and insinuating that it was by the direction of the squire? this will clinch the affair? After such an authority no one will dare to say a word in its behalf; beside, it will have a good look to be taken notice of by such people.’—‘That is true’ (answered the author) ‘it will so, and the Parson’s notice shall not be thrown away; I’ll do it, to-morrow morning; as soon as I send you the *Exhortation*.’—My master then wished him a good night, and left him to return to his company, while he himself went directly home, to prepare for the duties of the next day.

He had scarce slept off his debauch; when he was called to chaunt his matin song; after which he did not fail to display the wound in his temple, the occasion of which he promised to unfold to his congregation, in the evening. This he did to raise a curiosity that should gather his whole flock to hear so extraordinary an affair, as he designed to propose a subscription,

on,

on, when their passions should be warmed by such an horrid attempt upon their pastor.

By the time he had finished this first work of the day, the *Exhortation* was brought him from the author, with which he went directly to her Grace. He found her (unfashionably early as it was for a person of her rank to be even up,) dressed and waiting for him: 'Please your Grace (said he) here is the *Exhortation* your Grace desired of me; and I pray Heaven it may prove successful! I am afraid I have made your Grace wait, but I came the moment I had finished the first duties of the morning. If your Grace pleases, I will do myself the honour to accompany your Grace: Perhaps my personal *Exhortation* and prayer may have more effect: My ministry has often been blessed with astonishing success.'—'I am sensible of that, Doctor,' (answered her Grace;) 'but this unhappy man is of such a strange temper, that I apprehend he might be guilty of some act of rashness that might be dangerous to your person, if you were to go to him, without his consent; and that I am much afraid I shall hardly obtain. No longer ago than yesterday, near as the dreadful hour of his execution approaches, did I find him engaged at cards, with his goaler; and when I expostulated with him, on the danger of trifling away his few remaining moments, in so idle a manner (for I was apprehensive of exasperating him, if I spoke with greater severity) he only smiled, and answered me, with a passage out of some play.'—'Yes, please your Grace.' (replied my master with a lifted eye, and deep-fetched groan) 'Cards and plays are the bane of half the world: religion is quite neglected for them. The great work of reformation will never be compleated, till they are utterly abolished. As your Grace does not think it meet that I should visit this unfortunate gentleman, in person, I am obedient to your Grace's pleasure, however, I will offer up my prayers for him, and my spirit shall assist your Grace's pious endeavours!

'deavours ! Not that I fear what man can do unto me : the angel of the Lord watched over me, or the stroke that made this wound, had given me rest from my labours.'——

He then displayed the mark of mother *Brimstone's* rage, and told her Grace so moving and circumstantial a story of his having been way-laid, and attacked by some of *Memus's* riotous companions, that she implicitly believed him, and sympathized in his sufferings. He then gave her the *Exhortation*, which she was to deliver to her unfortunate cousin ; and seeing her uneasy at being obliged to wait till the bank should be open, to get money to distribute among the poor wretches in the prison, he accommodated her Grace with change for a twenty pound note, having (as he told her Grace) just so much about him, which he was carrying to relieve a poor industrious family, in great distress.

It was a great pleasure to me, that I changed my service upon this occasion, as I was heartily sick of my master ; though from a view I took of his heart, I saw that I had not been witness to half the mystery of his iniquity.

My new mistress went directly to the prison, to her cousin, where she had a sufficient opportunity for the exertion of her charity, among his unhappy fellow-prisoners while she waited for his rising, which was not till very late, as he had sat up the whole night before, at his beloved diversion of card-playing. When at length she got admittance to him, her reception was far from being worthy of the trouble she had taken, and the piety of her intentions. He asked her if she had procured him a pardon, and when she answered in the negative, and assured him that all such hopes were vain ; he then told her, that he would dispense with the continuance of her visit, and the repetition of any more, and in a manner forced her away, scarce permitting her to mention the motive of her coming, or to enforce the *Exhortation* of my late master, which she

she with difficulty perswaded him to take, tho' from the manner of his receiving it, there was little probability of his ever taking the trouble to read it.

My mistress, for I had the good fortune to remain in her possession, was so shocked at this insensibility, that she went directly home, and sought relief from the solid comforts of religion, pouring out her heart in unfeigned prayer for the conversion of him, and every other object of the divine displeasure; for tho' a misguided fervency of devotion had made her, in some measure, a dupe to the hypocritical zeal of my late master, nothing could lead her from the purest paths of true piety and virtue; nor did she suffer the extravagance of his pretended enthusiasm so far to blind her better judgment, as to make her avoid the entertainments frequented by persons of her sex and rank.



C H A P. XIII.

History of a lady of fashion. Description of a rout. CHRYSAL changes his service for that of a lady of enterprize. A bold stroke for an husband.

SHE accordingly went that afternoon to the house of a lady of quality, where a great concourse of the best company usually assembled on set invitations, to spend the evening, at the favourite amusement of cards. The lady of the house was one of those children of fortune, who rise by the means that ruin thousands. In her early youth she had sacrificed her virtue to vanity, and yielded to the loose desires of the nobleman she was now married to, over whom her humble obliging temper, and particularly her complaisant blindness to his other amours, gained her such an ascendancy, that in a fit of uncommon fondness he made her his wife. But the method he took to secure himself the ease and conveniencies he enjoyed with

for him, by the name of Mr. *Trueman*. Such a prospect of immediate success, made her blind to every appearance of deceit or danger, and accordingly she prepared to attend the appointment, with the most sanguine expectation.

But his lordship had prepared a reception for her, which she never suspected. A little before the time, he went to the tavern with the gentleman, and fixing upon a room in which there was a closet large enough for him and another nobleman, whom he took with him, left word that if any lady should enquire for Mr. *Trueman*, she should be told that he was above alone, and the gentleman called down to her. As they judged, her impatience brought her, rather before the time, when her imagined confederate shewing her up into the room, and placing her so, that every word she said might be heard in the closet, he enter'd into a conversation with her, on the subject of their meeting, in which he led her to repeat her whole proposal, and, by starting difficulties, to enforce it with every iniquitous argument in her power.

As soon as his lordship thought she had said enough, he issued from his concealment, and looking her full in the face, calmly thanked her for the care she was taking to preserve the noble family of his relation, which she had whimsically given as one of the reasons of her desiring this marriage. It is impossible to describe her situation, at the sight of this nobleman, whom she well knew, as well as his interest in defeating her design. Astonishment, shame, and confusion struck her motionless and dumb. She just was able to turn her eye to her betrayer, and then fell in a swoon upon the floor. Such distress naturally softened the resentment of the generous nobleman, to whom she had designed such an injury: he assisted to raise her from the ground, and having with difficulty brought her to herself, instead of aggravating her distress by reproaches, mildly advised her to desist from such unjustifiable schemes, and promised her that he would take no notice of what had happened, if she found her future conduct merited such tenderness.

This

This treatment had the wished effect. That false spirit which would have borne her up against any severity, sunk before such unexpected delicacy and compassion. She melted into a flood of tears; and unable to utter a word, fell upon her knees and kissed the hand of the nobleman, in a rapture not to be expressed; who immediately raised her from the ground, and telling her, that he imagin'd, it must be disagreeable to her to stay there any longer, ordered a chair, and handed her to it himself, with the utmost politeness and respect.

Her situation, when she got home, was truly pitiable. The assurance of her late hopes doubled the distress of her disappointment, and the fear of shame made the thought of her guilt intolerable. She cursed her own folly, the perfidy of her betrayer, and all the ways of faithless man; and in the agony of her grief resolved to leave this detested town next morning, and bury herself for ever from the world, in her country seat.

This resolution she held till next morning, when she actually set out for the country; but I have reason to believe it did not hold very long, as I have frequently seen her since, in all public places, as gay and unconcerned as ever. As for me; I was given to her coach-man, to pay the farrier, who took care of her horses; but he thought it more necessary to give me in payment of a debt of his own, to a man who kept a beer-house, who gave me to an attorney, to defend him against a prosecution, for entertaining a gang of street-robbers, and buying their booty. By the attorney I was given, in the course of business, to a knight of the post, whose evidence was to acquit the publican. From this conscientious person, as he was on his way to a country assizes, where the lives of many depended on his good-nature, I was taken by an highwayman, who lost me that evening to a nobleman at an horse-race.

CHRYSALE: Or, the

CH A P. XIV.

CHRYSALE, by a natural progression, comes into the possession of a knight of industry, who brings him to an horse-race, where he has an opportunity of seeing a noble jockey practice part of the mysterious science of the turf, with other common occurrences.

IN the three or four last changes of my service there was nothing remarkable. The progression was natural and the events common : but I must own I was a good deal surpris'd at several occurrences in my present station, which were, in the proper course of things, so strange and unaccountable, that the most whimsical devil could never have thought of them, without information.

The gentleman who had acquired me so easily on the road, and brought me to the meeting, was a native of a neighbouring nation, who on the credit of his skill, in the mysterious science of *chance*, supported by a good stock of assurance and personal courage, had come over to make his fortune, in which design he had really so far succeeded, that he had lived, for several years, in the highest life, and maintained the appearance of the estate he talk'd of in his own country, by the sole force of his genius, the fertility of which was not confin'd to one resource ; but when fortune frown'd upon his labours at play, was always ready to redress the effects of her malice, by the method in which I came into his possession.

The roads had been *bad* that morning, which kept him a little later than usual, so that company were at the *post*, when he join'd them. By their noise and appearance as we road up to them, I took them for a croud of their own servants ; their dress being exactly the undress uniform of that party-colour'd tribe ; and every voice being exerted with the same vehemence, and in the like style of oaths and imprecations, with

with which those gentry receive them, at the door of a play-house or palace, so that I scarce knew how to believe my senses, when I recognized the faces of several persons of the most elevated station and particularly, most of those among whom I had spent the evening, I described to you at the *club*; on my first coming to this part of the world.

As soon as the *bets* were made, and the noise began to subside a little, my master pressed through the mob of pick-pockets, bubbles, lords and jockies, and came up to the post, just as they were preparing to *start*, when calling to one of the grooms, 'Well, my lord,' (said he;) 'Well, Jack, (replied the other) 'where have you been all day?' This was all the discourse they had time for, the horses going off that moment: but on the strength of this, my master backed his lordship deeply.

It is impossible to describe to you, who have never seen any thing of the kind, a scene of such confusion as the field was during the running, the whole mob, high and low, riding headlong from place to place, and driving against each other, without any respect to rank, or regard to safety, and roaring out their bets, and shouting for joy, at every vicissitude in the running. At length the *heat* was ended, but so contrary to my master's expectation, that he lost, to a noble duke, who was in the secret, not only all the fruits of his morning's campaign, but a large sum besides, more than he was able to pay him.

This was a severe stroke. He rode directly up to the post, and addressing the same groom, just as he came out of the *scales*; 'Sblood, my lord,' (said he) 'how could you fling me so. I am quite broke up: his Grace has *touched* me for 500, and the devil of the thing is, that I have been so torn down by a *bad run* of late, that I am quite out of cash, and have not a shilling to pay him.'—'How could this be, (replied the groom) 'did I not give you the *word*? but you are such a careless son of a bitch.'—'The word with a vengeance,' (answered my master) 'you returned me *well*, but I have found it very ill.'—'Aye,

‘ I guessed it was so’ (added the groom) ‘ you were ignorant that we were *smoked*, and found it necessary to change the *lay*. Where the devil were you all this morning ? taking a ride—I suppose ; you will never leave off, till these rides bring you to a ride in a cart to *Tyburn* : but keep out of his Grace’s way till the horses start, and we will *bring you home*, I will engage. He thinks he has all the secret, but he is mistaken this bout, and shall pay for his entrance before we admit him to be *one of us*.’—This discourse passed as they were walking together to a booth, where the groom was to *rub*, and *settle* next heat.

You are surprized at this familiarity, between my master and the groom. When he first addressed him by the title of *My Lord*, I own I thought it no more than a *cant*, which in the freedom of this intercourse, where the lords and lacquies are upon a level, is common : but what was my astonishment at a nearer view, to see that he really was the thing he was called, and that a laudable ambition of excelling in every the meanest art, had induced him, and many others of his rank, who were riding against him, to take the place of their servants in this fatiguing and dangerous employment, ennobling, by this condescension, the most abject and vile offices, with the honours earned by the merit and virtues of their ancestors. Strange ambition ; at a time when the interest and glory of their country called for their assistance !

As soon as the noble groom and my master were alone ; ‘ Now, Jack, what think you of my little *stun-orse* ?’ (says his lordship.) ‘ You must know that I have *measur’d the foot* of them all, in this heat, and find that I have the *beels* by a *distance* at least : but the weights are above my *trim*. However, we have a remedy for that : look at this cap’ (taking one out of a chest, in which his running dress had been brought to the ground) ‘ this is a *leadén skull*, and weighs above two *stun* ; Put this on your head, the thickness of your own skull will prevent its giving you the head-ach : aye it fits you very well. Now I will

‘ I will wear this to the post, and just before we start, complain that my cap is too wide, and borrow your’s to ride in, and then when I alight at the *scales*, after the heat is over, I will pull off your’s, as if to wipe my face, and give it to you to hold, who can return this, to weigh in, and as I wear the same trusses, stuffed with handkerchiefs, in which I carried the weight last heat, they will never suspect us.—Ha, Jack, what say you to this ? match me this, among all your *Hibernian* tricks if you can. Go your way : double with his Grace, and *lay* all you can, I’ll go with you ; but be sure to meet me at the post before, and at the scales after the heat, and not to blow the business, by being in too great an hurry.’

I see you wonder how his lordship should put such confidence in my master, as he seemed to know him so well ; but the truth was, my master’s character for courage was so well established, that it bore him through things every day of his life, unconvicted at least, if not unsuspected, for which a more timorous villain would have been pilloried, and this made the other think him the safest person to entrust with the execution of such a scheme, as no one would dare to attempt examining the cap, or preventing his reaching it to his lordship.—The *finesse* succeeded ; his lordship *beat every tail hollow* ; and my master not only *cleared* with his Grace, but also won considerably for himself, and his confederate beside. Things were carried on in the same genteel manner, for the remainder of the meeting, at which there was a vast concourse of the best company, the weather being very delicate, the turf in choice order, and the sport very fine, and so fair that *the knowing ones were all taken in* ; and to make the pleasure compleat, though the croud was so great, there was no unlucky accident happened, except to two of the noble grooms, one of whom was borne down in the *crossing*, by the superior strength of a servant, who rode against him, and *slipped* his shoulder ; and the other broke his neck, by his horse’s falling in the running.

It was on a sporting bet, on one of the bye matches, that I was lost that evening, to the nobleman, as I said, in whose possession I happened to remain to the end of the meeting. The next morning, after my new master's return to London, he went to pay his court to the heir of the crown, who was then at one of his country seats.

~~XX~~

C H A P. XV.

CHRYSAI's master pays his court to a great person, who seems not much to relish his humour, and expresses some unfashionable sentiments concerning polite pleasures. In the course of a regular circulation, CHRYSAI comes into the possession of a minister of state, who refuses a friendly offer for very odd reasons. His strange notion of some affairs.

SOME publick occasion had brought a concourse, more than usual in those retirements, to pay their duty to the prince that morning. As my master was one of the last who came, as soon as his devoirs were ended, some of the company accidentally asked him, what had kept him so late ; on which, with an easy air of pleasantry, he answered aloud, that ' He had been detained by a very whimsical affair: a certain nobleman, (said he) went into company last night, so immensely drunk, that having set in to play, and lost five thousand pounds, he quite forgot it this morning, and refused to pay the money, till some person of honour, who was unconcerned in the matter, should vouch his having lost it fairly, on which it was referred to me, and forry I am that I was qualified to give it against him.'—' How, my lord, by being a person of honour !' says the gentleman he spoke to—' No,' (replied my master, with a significant smile) ' not so neither, but by being unconcerned in winning it :—And then turning short to another, ' But have you heard the news, my lord ? (said he.) ' Mr.

‘Mr. — caught his wife yesterday taking a serious walk in Kennington gardens, with the gentleman whom we all know to be forbad her keeping company with, some time ago.’—A smile of general approbation encouraged him so much, that he concluded with saying, ‘he wished he had himself been the happy delinquent so taken, as he doubted not but the gravest bishop on the bench would, were he to speak his mind honestly.’

The prince had heard him without interruption ; but as soon as he had ended, turning to a nobleman ; who stood near him, ‘there can be no greater insult said he, with a determined look and solemn accent) to a person who is appointed to put the laws of a country in execution, than for any one to boast of a breach of those, in his presence. For my part, if I am ever called by Providence to that station, it is my invariable resolution, that no man, how exalted soever in rank, who lives in open violation of any law, human or divine, shall ever hold employment under me, or receive countenance from me.’

This rebuke damped my master’s spirits, as it struck a reverential awe into all present. He hung down his head, and in a few moments withdrew, quite abashed. But he soon recovered, and to silence the jests of his companions, and shew that he was not to be brow-beat out of his own way, he made one with them to spend the evening at a brothel tavern, where he gave me to a pimp, who gave me to a whore, who gave me to a bully, who gave me to a pawn-broker, who gave me to a beau, who gave me to a tavern-keeper, who paid me into the bank, from whence I was sent, in the change of a note, to the first minister of state.

The notion I had hitherto entertained of human politics, made me enter into this service with reluctance ; but my prejudice was soon removed. My new master was just coming from his closet when I was delivered to him ; he stopped to count the money, then putting it into his purse, and turning to a clerk, who followed him with a huge bag of papers in his hand, — ‘I must have all these finished against morning,’ (said he)

he) 'that I may be able to read them over, before they are signed. I know they are a great many, but the business requires dispatch; and diligence and method overcome the greatest difficulties.'—Saying this he went into his drawing-room, which was filled with several of the most eminent members of the community, who came, some to consult, some to advise, (for he refused not the advice of the meanest) and all to congratulate him on the success of his measures—When the business and formality of this scene were over, the company withdrew, all but one gentleman, who desired some private conversation with my master. As soon as they were alone; 'I have done myself the honour to wait upon you this morning,' (said the gentleman) 'to inform you that there is a vacancy in my borough, and to know whom you would have me return; for as I see that all your measures are evidently calculated for the good of your country, I am determined to support you.'

'I am much obliged to you for your good opinion,' (answered my master) 'but I am resolved never to interfere in matters of this nature, nor to attempt influencing the election or vote of any person, by any other means than reason: all therefore that I have to ask is, that you will return an honest man; while he approves of my conduct he will certainly support me, and no longer do I wish to be supported.'

'What, sir!' (replied the gentleman in astonishment) 'not desire to have your friends returned! Why, sir, is it possible that you can be a stranger to the intrigues that are forming against you, by a faction, who, when they had reduced the state to a mere wreck, like a cowardly, mutinous crew, flew in the face of their master, took the boat and made their escape to shore; and now, when you have not only brought her safe into harbour, but also fitted her out for another voyage, with every prospect of success, are caballing to undermine and turn you away from the helm: not that they even pretend to arraign your conduct or skill, but just that they may

‘ may have ~~the~~ pillaging the fruits of your labours.
 ‘ As this, sir, is notoriously the case, you must excuse the warmth of my honest zeal when I tell you, that I think you must be guilty of very strange, very blameable remissness, if you neglect any possible method of disappointing their pernicious designs.’

‘ My friend,’ (returned my master) ‘ I am too sensible of the truth of all you say, but hope there is no necessity for my having recourse to methods which my soul disapproves. Without the assistance of any such, did I (to pursue your mode of speech) first point out to our master, and the rest of the ship’s company, the errors in their steering, the rocks they were ready to run upon, and the way to avoid them. Without any such, did I take the helm in that dangerous time, when they fled from the wreck, and work’d her out of the breakers they left her among ; and without any such, will I support my place at the helm, or resign it, for in my opinion, no end can justify improper means.

‘ Shall I own to you, my friend, that your offer gives me pain. Do not mistake me ; I am sincerely oblig’d to you for that good opinion which dictated it to your honest heart ; but the truth is, that any member of the community’s having the power of making such an offer, proves such a degeneracy in our constitution, as threatens its overthrow in the end. A parliament should be a representative of the people ; but how can it be said to be that, if the people are not at liberty to chuse whom they please to represent them ? beside, such a manner of *nominating* disappoints the end, as well as it destroys the essence of a parliament, as it is too probable that the nominator shall stipulate conditions with *his* member, that may not only take away his power of voting according to the dictates of his judgment and conscience, but also enjoin such as may be directly opposite to both, and injurious, if not destructive, to that country, which he thus *nominally* represents. A parliament therefore to be *free* should be *freely* chosen, no man having it in his power to do more

' than give his own vote ; and such a parliament, to
 ' keep up to the excellence of its nature in its first in-
 ' stitution, should not continue longer than one sessi-
 ' on ; but a new one be call'd as often as the occasi-
 ' ons of the state should require it, once in every year
 ' at least, for so often does the interest of a nation de-
 ' mand, that its guardians should meet. Such a par-
 ' liament, sensible of the shortness of the duration,
 ' and nature of the tenure of their power, would take
 ' care never to act against the interest of their consti-
 ' tuents ; or if human frailty should err, their time
 ' would be too short to establish the evil, and as it
 ' would be impossible for them to be chosen again,
 ' the next parliament would remedy the mischief.—
 ' Such should a British parliament be ! such I hope it
 ' will be ! It is every honest Briton's duty to hope so ;
 ' and not only that, but to endeavour to make it so ;
 ' nor shall any act of mine ever seem to countenance a
 ' practice, that contradicts this principle. By speak-
 ' ing and acting in strict conformity to the dictates of
 ' my judgment and conscience, have I hitherto suc-
 ' ceeded, contrary to the apprehensions of many,
 ' beyond the expectations of all ; and the same means
 ' and none other will I ever pursue.'—' Heaven bless
 ' your pious intentions ;' (said the gentleman, taking
 his hand and kissing it in a rapture, tears of joy run-
 ning down his face) ' heaven will bless them : happy
 ' sovereign in such a servant ; happy Britain in such
 ' a guardian.'—Saying this, he took his leave of my
 master, who went directly to wait upon his.



C H A P. XVI.

CHRYSAL's sentiments of his master's master, who gives a remarkable reason for his approbation of his minister's measures and manner of doing business. The minister's charge to a general, on appointing him to a command. CHRYSAL enters into the service of the general. Conflict between maternal tenderness and glory, in which the latter is triumphant. Strange advice from a mother to her son.

THE first view of this august person struck me with a reverence, which I had never felt for man before. Man may be deceived in the looks of man ; but we see through all disguise, and read the real character, in the heart. Honest, benevolent, and humane, the social virtues brightened the royal in his breast.—‘ Sire,’ (said my master, addressing him, with the most respectful sincerity) ‘ here are the dispatches which you order’d me to draw up yesterday : since I had the honour of your commands then, I have received some farther intelligence, that confirms the justice of your resolutions. Disappointed, but not deterred by the repulse which they justly met with from you, those people have the confidence to make a new attempt, and think to obtain by menaces, what was refused to their entreaties ; but the event will convince them, that it is more difficult to a generous mind, to deny the suppliant, than repulse the insolent. Strong in the natural strength of your dominions, and stronger in the love of your people, you are able to assert your own cause, against all the powers of the world, on that element which nature has pointed out for the scene of your triumphs ; nor will you permit any other to interfere with you on it. All you require is a neutrality, where you are entitled to assistance. This shews your confidence in your own strength, and

‘ and your contempt of them. But even this contempt
 ‘ will not overlook any disrespect to yourself, any
 ‘ partiality to your enemies. Let them either behave
 ‘ themselves as friends, or profess themselves foes.—
 ‘ This choice is indifferent to you. As to their com-
 ‘ plaints, their own unjust actions are the cause of
 ‘ them, and when this is removed, they will cease of
 ‘ course. ‘Till then to seek a remission of the punish-
 ‘ ment, and still persist in the crime, is an insult upon
 ‘ justice and mercy ; and for their menaces, they are
 ‘ beneath the notice of an answer.’

‘ Be it so,’ (replied the reverend Monarch, the in-
 dignation of his honest heart, flashing from his eyes ;)
 ‘ be it so : you speak the sentiments of my soul.’—
 Then turning to a favoured subject, who stood near
 him, ‘ It is a pleasure to me to transact business, with
 ‘ this man,’ (continued he ;) ‘ he makes me understand
 ‘ him, and does not perplex my soul, with a vain
 ‘ maze of timorous wiles, but speaks and acts with
 ‘ open honesty and boldness.’—The honour of this
 testimony warmed the heart of my master with a joy,
 that overpaid his labours, and added new fire to the
 assiduity of his soul. As soon as he went home, he
 found a person waiting for him, whom he had appoint-
 ed to meet him, on an affair of the greatest impor-
 tance.—‘ I have sent for you, my friend,’ (said my
 master) ‘ on an occasion, which, I am sensible, will
 ‘ give joy to your heart. You are to command a se-
 ‘ parate body of troops, which have been sent to pro-
 ‘ secute this necessary and just war in *America*. I
 ‘ need not put myself, nor you, to the pain of repeat-
 ‘ ing the causes of the shameful inactivity, to give it
 ‘ no severer name, by which this war has been drawn
 ‘ into such a length ; you know, and will avoid them.
 ‘ You will not wear out opportunity, in making un-
 ‘ necessary preparations for improbable occasions :
 ‘ you will not damp the ardour of your soldiers by
 ‘ delay, nor prolong a burthensome war to enrich
 ‘ yourself, with the spoils of your country. You are
 ‘ young, active, and brave : such a commander only
 ‘ do British soldiers want, to lead them to victory :
 ‘ You

‘ You have no senior, no superior here, to restrain the efforts of your spirit, by timid caution ; at the same time, that your judgment will supply the place of experience, and prevent your falling into the misfortunes, which self-sufficient brutal rashness has made so fatal to others. Your instructions are comprized in a few words,—make the best use your judgment shall direct you, of the forces entrusted to your command, to defend the property, and avenge the wrongs of your fellow-subjects ; and to vindicate the honour of this abused nation.—I know whom I speak to, and therefore I say no more : proceed, my friend, my soldier, answer my expectations, and you will fulfil the wishes of your country.’—Saying thus he embraced him tenderly, and as he went with him to the door, happening to look into the street, he saw a number of disabled soldiers, who had placed themselves before his window, to solicit relief for their miseries.—‘ O, my friend,’ (continued he; grasping his hand) ‘ behold those victims of the unjust ambition of that enemy, against whom you go ; and let the sight add the wings of an eagle to your haste, to tear down a power, which has been thus fatal to so many of your brave countrymen, to prevent any more from suffering the like evils, from the same cause.’ *‘ The man who does not use, to the best advantage, the means entrusted to him by his country, to destroy its enemies, is guilty of all the evils, which those enemies may afterwards do to his country.’*—‘ Shall I beg a favour of my friend ? distribute this money,’ (giving him an handful of guineas) ‘ among those men, as from yourself. If it is not enough to give each a guinea, I will be your debtor for what is wanting ; if it is more, keep the residue in your hands, to apply to the same use on the first occasion you meet. This much will relieve their real wants, and more might only tempt them to excess. The invidiousness of my station, makes it improper

‘improper for me to do even an act of virtue, which may be mistaken for ostentation. Adieu, my friend, heaven guard you in the day of battle, and guide your sword to victory.’

I here omitted the service of this great man, the instances of whose conduct, which I have given, make any farther character of him unnecessary.

The regard with which the minister had addressed himself to my present master, raised my curiosity to take an immediate view of his heart, as I knew not but I might leave his possession directly: but my fears were agreeably disappointed; for the number of guineas, given to him by my master, exceeding that of the objects to whom we were to be distributed, it fell to my lot to remain a little longer with him.

The honour of his new command, and the confidence with which it was entrusted to him, warmed his heart with the most exalted joy. He executed his charitable commission, and then went directly home, where bending his knee, to his beloved mother, and kissing her hand in rapture, ‘O, madam,’ (said he) ‘congratulate your happy son: My prayers at length are heard, and I am blessed with an opportunity of proving to the world, my attachment to the service, my ardour for the glory of my country: I am honoured with a separate command, in America, where heaven fires my soul with an assurance, that I shall have the happiness of crushing the injurious power of our enemies, in the very place where it first attacked my country; where it has too long triumphed in its wrongs.’

‘Heaven blefs my son,’ (replied the matron, as soon as a gush of tears of joy and tenderness permitted her to speak) ‘heaven guard my son; and blefs his pious hopes. Let me only live to see him return with the honour of having done his duty, and I shall die contented. But why do I say this, as if my heart felt a doubt for him? *my* son will never fail to do his duty, he will never fall from the paths of honour, however dangerous, nor seek to colour over with specious arguments the loss of his honour.

‘He

‘ He will not make his mother ashamed of having borne him, nor bring her grey hairs with disgrace and sorrow to the grave. I know the instructions which have formed his youth, I know the principles of his heart, I know my own blood better.—But, O my son, remember also, that prudence distinguishes true courage from rashness: that your country has now a peculiar interest in your life, and that you betray its trust, if you lose it by any unnecessary boldness. Remember your aged mother, who hangs weeping over her grave, ’till you return. Remember your———

‘ O, my mother, no more! recal not ideas, which my present situation requires me to forget. Fear not, your son will not be a disgrace to the honest race from which he is sprung. He will do his duty as a soldier, a British soldier, and as a man, sensible of the obligations of reason and religion. Whether I shall ever have the happiness of kissing this hand again, is only known to heaven; but it is in my power to promise, that the name of your son shall never raise a blush in the face of his mother, nor his actions require the palliation of excuse from his friends. If life is to be short, let it be well filled: one day of glory is better than an age of idleness, or dishonour. Adieu, my mother; your blessing is a shield to the head, a support to the soul of your son; one tender parting more, and then my heart must be resigned to other cares.’—‘ Heaven bless! heaven guard my son!’ and then, as he went from her, ‘ O glory! what a tribute dost thou exact from wretched mortals!’

My master paused a moment to wipe away the pious tear, which filial duty owed to such a parting, and then hastened to another scene of equal tenderness.

Mutual merit had improved the instinctive liking of youth, between my master and a young lady, whose elevated rank and large fortune were her least recommendations, into the strongest attachment of real love. As reason could make no objection on either
side,

side, parental approbation gave its sanction to their happy choice, and had encouraged virgin timidity to appoint the day, that was to seal their bliss. Hard task upon a favourite lover, to communicate to the chosen of his soul, the order, which was to damp rising expectation, by this delay ; and tear him from the instant hope of that happiness, which he had so long been suing for. But honour, and the service of his country, demanded this fiery trial, to prepare him for that height of glory, to which his soul aspired.



CHAP. XVII.

Another scene of tenderness. Love and honour in the old-fashioned, romantic style. CHRYSAL quits the service of the general, and after some few common changes, enters into that of honest Aminadab. Conclusion of Aminadab's agency for her Grace.

AS soon as he had recovered from the softness, into which his mother's tenderness had melted him, he went directly to his mistress. She received him with the freedom proper, in their present situation, but soon perceived an alteration in his countenance, that shewed her, his heart was not at ease. This alarmed her tender fears : ' What,' (said she, looking earnestly at him) ' can make a troubled gloom overcast that face, where hope and happiness have, for some time, brightened every smile. Can any thing have happened to disturb the prospect so pleasing to us ! Can you feel a grief that you think me unworthy, or unable to share with you ? it must be so : that faint, that laboured smile, betrays the sickness of your heart.'

' O dearest wish of that heart,' (replied he, taking her hand, and kissing it in extasy) ' how shall I merit such perfection ! It is impossible : I am unworthy : but let my soul thank heaven for blessing it, with this opportunity, of rising nearer to a level with
' your

'your virtues; an hope that will soften the severity of absence, and make the delay of happiness seem shorter.'

'*What canst thou mean?*' (said she, a jealous doubt alarming her delicacy)—'*Delay! I understand thee not—I urge not.*'——'Mistake not, O my love, the inconsistencies which anguish extorts from my bleeding heart.—How can I say it!—Our happiness is delayed,—delayed but to be more exalted.—Honour, the service of my country calls.'—'*And am I to be left?*'—'But for a time, a little time, the pain of which shall be overpaid, by the joy of meeting, never to part again.—O spare my heart, restrain those tears; I am not worthy, I am not proof to such a trial.—The interest, the glory of my country demand my service, and my gracious master has honoured me with a station, in which my endeavours may be effectual, to accomplish his commands—nay, must be effectual, where love urges duty, where you are the inestimable reward.'—'*If that reward is all you seek, why do you fly from it?*'—'*My fortune is amply sufficient! Quit then the dangerous paths of ambition, and let us retire, and seek true happiness in content.*'——'O spare my struggling heart; what can I, shall I do!—The trial is too great for human fortitude! Assist me, glory! help, O my country! support me through this conflict, and I shall triumph over every other difficulty and danger. I go, my love, but to deserve thee.'—'Go! go! and heaven guide and guard your steps!' (waving her hand, and turning from him to hide her tears) '*I shall no longer struggle with the sacred impulse, that leads you on to glory.*'—Then turning to him, '*But remember how you leave me!—Think what I feel till you return! What I must be, should—*' The horror of this thought made her unable to say more: he flew into her arms, and mingling his tears with hers, as her head reclined upon his bosom, in the tenderness of a chaste embrace, '*This is too much!*' (said he) '*this is too much!*'—I never can repay this excess of goodness.'—Then breaking from her arms, in a kind of enthu-

enthusiasm—'Heaven gives my soul' (continued he) 'this foretaste of happiness, as an earnest of success: I go to certain victory: the prayers of angels must prevail.'—Saying these words, he rushed out of the room, leaving her half dead with grief. Nor was he in a much happier state: the thought of parting from her damping the ardour, that had enabled him to give that proof of his resolution, and obliging nature to pay the tribute of a flood of tears, to such a sacrifice.

But glory and the interest of his country soon dissipated this cloud; and his mind, freed from the dread of such painful scenes of tenderness, resumed its wonted vigour, and entered upon the cares of his great undertaking, with the most indefatigable assiduity. But I continued not in his possession to see the effects of these cares; such objects as I was designed for, occurred too frequently, to the first of whom it fell to my lot to be given. I told you, that I took a view of his heart. Never was honour more firmly established, on the principles of virtue, than there. To select any one instance would be injustice to the rest. All was uniformly great and good.

My next master was one of the pillars of military glory, who had contributed a leg, an arm, and the scalp of his head, to raise the trophies of the *French* in *America*. Though he was destitute of almost every comfort, which nature really stands in need of, his first care, on the acquisition of such a treasure, as I was to him, was to gratify the artificial wants of luxury. He went directly to a gin-shop, where he *changed* me for a quatern of that liquid fire; the taste of which was too pleasing to his palate, and the warmth too comfortable to his heart, for him to be satisfied with so little. Quatern followed quatern, till every sense was intoxicated, and he fell *dead drunk* on the floor, when his good-natured host had him kindly laid, to sleep off his debauch, on the next dunghill, first taking care to prevent his fellow inhabitants of the streets from robbing him of the rest of his treasure, by picking his pocket of it himself.—The scenes I saw in this service, were all of the same kind, but I was soon

soon relieved from the pain of them, my master giving me, as a present, to an officer of the customs, that very night.—By this faithful steward of the publick, I was next morning given by the factor to a gang of smugglers, to be laid out for him in *Flanders* lace, whither he was just going, on the affairs of his profession. With this industrious trader I went as far as *Harwich*, where, while they waited for the tide, he lost me at a game of cribbage, to a person who was going over with him.

My new master was *bonest Aminadab*, her Grace's agent, whom I have mentioned to you before. As soon as they had done playing, my master took a walk upon the beach with a person, who strongly resembled him, and whom I found to be his son. 'I wish,' (said the father) 'that we were safe at our journey's end; for though I have planned matters so well, that I think there can be no danger, the immense consequence at stake must make me anxious.'—'I do not understand you,' (replied the son) 'I thought this was but such a journey, as I have often known you take, and that you were going no farther than *Holland*, on some business of her Grace's'—'She thinks so indeed,' (returned the father) 'nor would I have her think otherwise as yet: but I do not design ever to see her face more. I am now, my son, arrived at the height of my wishes, being possessed of wealth, beyond my most sanguine hopes. For you must know, that having gained the confidence of this woman, by many services, I at length suggested it to her, that the best way for her to make the most profit of the great wealth she has amassed, would be to send it to *Holland*, by some trusty person, who should bring it over again from thence, to save appearances, and subscribe it here, in some fictitious name, to the supplies given for the defence of *Germany*, now that her's, and the intrigues of some other great persons, had baffled the schemes of œconomy, which the managers had attempted in vain to establish, and obliged them to come into our own terms.—She took the hint, for it

' it was a most plausible one, and immediately insisted that I should negotiate the affair for her, giving me one hundred thousand pounds for that purpose.'

' This was what I wanted, and had been always scheming for, having ever remitted my money, as fast as I could make any, into *Holland*, that I might be able to seize such an happy opportunity as this at a moment's warning.'—' *But you cannot think, father, of staying in HOLLAND. You will be immediately pursued thither.*'—' In *Holland* fool! no, nor in the smoke of *Europe* at all! I design to set out for *Africa*, without a moment's loss; and hope to be far enough out of her reach, or that of any Christian power, before she can suspect any thing of my flight. And it will heighten the pleasure of my success, to think, that while I am sailing to a land of circumcision, she will sit in anxious expectation of my return.'

' *But, father, is it not injustice to deceive her confidence, and rob her of so great a sum of money?*'

' Injustice, fool! injustice to a christian? Say such another word and I discard you, disclaim you for ever! thy converse with these *Gentiles* has debauched thy faith. What do we mix with them; what do we serve them; what do we bear their abominations, their insults for, but to make our own advantage of them? Fools! vain presumptuous fools! to imagine that any benefits, any gratitude can bind us to them; or change the innate hatred of our souls, to a sect, that has been the cause of our dispersion and ruin. But, to silence thy weak scruples about injustice, with a word, have I not the authority of our holy Scripture, the example of our great prophet *Moses* himself, for what I do, who borrowed the wealth of the *Egyptians* without a design of ever returning them, to pay the children of *Israel*, for the labours they had been put to by their oppressors, and enrich them when they should arrive at the land of promise?—And is not this my case? have I not laboured hourly for this Gentile woman without payment! Did she not join to defraud our people

‘ple of a greater sum than this, to which my mite was added too, under the pretence of procuring us a settlement ! and did she not refuse to return it, when the attempt failed of success. What then is this, but a just retaliation ? a fulfilling of our law, that says, *An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth ?* And do I not want her wealth to make my settlement happy, in the land of my fore-fathers ?’—The son had too high a reverence for the judgment of his father, to offer any reply, but yielded to the conviction of arguments so conclusive. By this time the wind and tide served for us ; we arrived in *Holland* without any thing remarkable, except I should take notice to you of the sordid hypocrisy of my master as such, who, not to violate the customs of his race, made a pretence of poverty, to get his passage without expence.



C H A P. XVIII.

They arrive at the HAGUE. Political conversation between a DUTCHMAN and a JEW. They differ in opinion. AMINADAB leaves his friend VAN HOGAN in great distress.

AS soon as we arrived at the *Hague*, my master sent his son to prepare for their immediate departure, while he went himself, for a moment, to speak to one of the principal members of the states.

There was little ceremony between a Dutchman and a Jew, but entering directly upon business, ‘My friend *Aminadab*,’ (said his *mightiness*) ‘I am glad to see you ; I hope you have brought us good news ; and that there is a stop put to the insolence of those *English* pirates, who, in a manner, block up our ports, and have almost ruined our trade.’

‘ Really,

‘ afraid those means are out of your power ; you
 ‘ were then really *mighty states*, respectable for your
 ‘ power, and dreadful for your valour : but the case
 ‘ is now altered, I need not say how.’

‘ *Ingrateful ENGLISH ! to forget how we rescued*
 ‘ *them from popery and slavery, but the other day ; bad*
 ‘ *it not been for us they would, at best, have been but*
 ‘ *slaves to FRANCE.*’

‘ The very charge they make against you, who,
 ‘ they say, could never have resisted the power of
 ‘ Spain, or establish your liberties, if their queen
 ‘ Elizabeth had not hearkened to the cries of *your*
 ‘ *poor distressed states*. As for the affair you mention,
 ‘ though they do not deny the benefit, they take off
 ‘ from the obligation, by attributing it to self-interest-
 ‘ ed motives ; as they say you were convinced, that
 ‘ if any thing happened to them, you must sink of
 ‘ course : beside, that you have been amply paid for
 ‘ this, by the immense expence of blood and treasure
 ‘ with which they established your barrier, in the late
 ‘ wars, which they evidently entered into on your
 ‘ accounts, to the neglect of their own interest.’

‘ In a word, my friend, there is so much truth in
 ‘ what they say, that I would not advise you to insist
 ‘ upon these points any more.—‘ *Confound the points !*
 ‘ *and the memories that rip them up so ! What shall we*
 ‘ *do ? I myself lost a ship last week worth fifty thousand*
 ‘ *ducats ; though all the precautions possible were taken ;*
 ‘ *as sending her papers by another ship, supplying her with*
 ‘ *false bills of lading, false clearances, false consign-*
 ‘ *ments ; in short, every thing that human art could*
 ‘ *devise.*’

‘ And I know she was as well sworn for, to prevent
 ‘ her being condemned, as human conscience could
 ‘ swear ; but nothing could elude the captors, or de-
 ‘ ceive or influence the judges ; but was she not en-
 ‘ fured ?’

‘ ‘ *Not a ducat ; there is nothing to be got by ensuring,*
 ‘ *except the ships are to be cast away : O my ship ! my*
 ‘ *ship ! I will have war.*—‘ And then all your ships
 ‘ go at once.—‘ *I am distracted ; what shall we do ?*’

‘ My

‘ My friend, the best, the only advice I can give you, is to put a stop to this trade, and open your eyes to your true interest. I hate the *English*, as much as you possibly can ; but that should not make me ruin myself to be revenged on them : they are your only natural allies ; they first delivered, they still sustain you ; nor can you support the very name of an independent state without them. Provoke them not, therefore, too far ; I wonder how they have borne so much already ; preserve a fair neutrality ; they despise your assistance, and desire no more : nor by your avarice force them to measures, that must end in your ruin. If you break with them, whom will you apply to ? The *French* have given you many proofs, that they wait only for an opportunity to enslave you : *Spain* has at length learned its own interest, and will not break with the only power, whose friendship can be of real service to it : and this very war gives a sufficient demonstration of *Austrian* faith and gratitude.

‘ This is the obvious situation of things, and must strike a person at the first view : but a moment’s thought will shew them, even in a stronger light. For to grant that *France* and *Austria* both may be sincere in their professions to you ; does not reason shew you the imprudence of trusting to promises which it is more than probable they will not be able to perform. For if you will but divest yourself of passion and prejudice for a moment, you will see that the measures entered upon, and the means used to carry them on, by the *English* at this time, must, in all human appearance, disappoint the schemes of their enemies, and retort upon their own heads, the ruin they meditated for others. Indeed the prospect is such, that it is impossible to say where things will end : every interior fund is exhausted ; every external resource cut off ; their own trade is absolutely ruined ? the treasures of *Spain*, which supplied them in their last wars, are no longer at their command ; so that I can foresee nothing less than their becom-

Vol. II. F ing

ing bankrupts, not only to themselves, but also to every foreign state, and individual, whose avarice of present gain has made them supply their wants.

Nor is this distress the effect of chance, or of an unfortunate campaign, which the success of another, or some lucky hit, may restore. It is the natural consequence of a system of measures, plann'd with judgment, and prosecuted with vigour, by a minister who will not fail to improve it to the most solid advantage. And this I say, not solely from my own opinion. You know I have had connections with persons able to give me the best information, by the assistance of which I have traced the progress of these affairs with astonishment: and therefore, as *England* has thus at length shewn a superiority in council, the usual resource of patching up a good peace, at the end of an unsuccessful war, seems also to be precluded from them.

As for the house of *Austria*, it has ever been a dead weight upon its friends, though its insatuated ingratitude to *England*, which had been in a manner its sole support, for near a century, will probably prevent any other state from undertaking such a burthen, so that it must sink back, into its original obscurity and barbarism.

Thus you see, my friend, that depending upon *France* is leaning on a broken reed, and trusting to *Austria*, going for shelter under a falling wall: what then can you do if the *English* should take offence at your behaviour, and exert that power which is in their hands, to punish your avaricious partiality to their enemies?

Your power is, in every instance, contemptible; your navy is gone absolutely to decay; your land forces are filled with old men and children; your officers, who might have served you, have been obliged to enter into other services for bread, to make room for ignorant, indolent, pusillanimous burghers, who barter their votes for such a share of the spoils of the publick. Your finances are in the lowest state of embarrassment; your publick spirit, your valour,

your

' your virtue, all swallowed up by selfishness, and
' sordid love of gain ; every thing in the situation
' that seems to invite ruin, if it is not speedily prevent-
' ed ; and that can possibly be done no other way,
' than as I have mentioned ; for, as I have said, and
' must again repeat, things are now on a footing there
' that you do not seem to be properly aware of.
' The people are sensible of their own strength ; their
' governors exert it properly, and there is a mutual
' confidence between them, that in a manner ensures
' success to their attempts. Consider this fair, this
' friendly representation of real facts, and you will
' soon see the improbability of their bearing with you
' any longer ; or suffering you to defeat the end of
' their military efforts, by carrying on the trade of
' their enemies, and so enabling them to continue the
' war.'

' *Is it come to this ? Are the friends on whom we de-
' pended most turned against us ? Are you an advocate
' for our enemies, and would persuade us to give up the
' most advantageous branch of trade we have ?*

' Why will you let your passion blind you thus ? I
' have told you before, and I repeat it again, that of
' all christians I hate the *English* most, because they
' resemble us least ; as I love the *Dutch* most, as you
' come nearest to ourselves, both in practice and pro-
' fession. But *my* passions never blind *me* ! and there-
' fore I speak the dictates of reason ; I plead not for
' them, nor will I flatter you.'

' *Notwithstanding all their boasted power, we have
' one stroke left to humble them ; and will make it direct-
' ly ; we will draw all our money out of their funds.*

' Will you so ; at a third part loss ? O, *Moses* !
' what fools are those christians ? Do you not see
' that even this stroke, as you call it, is guarded
' against ? that, apprehensive of such an attempt,
' they have lowered the particular funds, in which
' your money chiefly lies, so far that the loss of, sel-
' ling out now would be intolerable. And whose is
' this money which you would draw out ? the proper-

'ty of private people : absurd thought ! if it was the money of the publick, it would not be strange to see it sacrificed to private interest ; but there is no instance in all your story of private property being given up voluntarily for the redress of publick wrongs.

'Friend *Hogan*, I am in haste ; my affairs call me elsewhere ; when I shall see you again is uncertain ; but my regard would not permit me to miss this opportunity of giving you my advice, which I know to be of importance to you. I can no longer undertake your affairs in *London* ; nor would I have another amuse you, with hopes that must deceive you in the end : while it was in my power to serve you I did ; I abused their confidence ; I betrayed their secrets to you : but I can do it no longer ; nor can any other to effect. Measures, as well as men, are changed.—Adieu.'

With these words my master went to seek his son, leaving his friend *Van Hogan* in the highest distraction, between the opposite impulses of the strongest passions that could agitate his soul, avarice and fear.

CEASE TO READ AND GO TO THE NEXT PAGE

CH A P. XIX.

AMINADAB bids adieu to her Grace, and sails with his son for AFRICA. CHRYSALE remains with a DUTCH banker. The principles and conscience of a good DUTCHMAN. CHRYSALE is sent into GERMANY. His opinion of the DUTCH.

THE young *Israelite* met his father punctually, and gave him such an account of his preparations for their flight, that *Aminadab* blessed the God of his fathers, and to compleat the fulness of his harvest with whatever gleanings he could pick up, he went directly among his *Dutch* friends, and in pious imitation of the example he had quoted before, borrowed, if not *jewels of gold and jewels of silver*, as much

much coined gold and silver as he could, and then going with his son to the sea side, they embarked for their native country, in all the exultation of successful villainy.

But I went not with them; my *British* shape being of more value in *Europe* than where he was going, my master left me with his banker, in exchange for the more fashionable coin of *Spain*, which neighbourhood made better known there. My *Hebrew* master had scarce left the banker, into whose hands he had given me, when came his *Belgick* friend *Van Hogan*, all aghast at the news he had received from him, and something else which had come to his knowledge since.

‘O, *Mynbeer*!’ (said he) ‘we are all blown up and undone! the flood is pouring in upon us.’—‘What is the matter now, *Mynbeer*,’ (replied the banker) ‘that throws you into this strange consternation? the worms have not destroyed the dams; nor an earthquake swallowed up the *Spice Islands*.’

‘Worse, worse, if possible, than even these! Those stubborn, proud, self-sufficient *ENGLISH* have refused to release our ships, that were taken carrying ammunition and provisions to their enemies, so that we are like not only to lose those ships, but also the advantage of the trade for the future. What can be done, to divert this blow?’—‘Really, *Mynbeer*, I cannot tell; the case is bad enough to be sure; but it is no more than was to be expected; it was not to be thought that they should always remain such passive fools, as tamely to look on, while we supplied their enemies with necessities to carry on the war against them, without endeavouring to put a stop to us.’

‘Death! I am almost mad to hear you talk thus! but say what you will, my *PROVINCE* shall never bear it! Why I have received advice this minute, that our ships which were freighted for their enemies will be condemned; and that they are as little moved at our menaces, as they were at our entreaties. If this continues we shall not have a ship left in the *TEXEL*.’—‘Nay mine shall escape, I’m resolved.’—‘What will you do to save ’em?’—‘Not run them into the danger, *Mynbeer*.’——‘How, give up the trade?’—‘Most certainly;

'certainly ; since it cannot be carried on with safety
 'any longer ; and glad that I have come off so well.'
 —' *I do not understand you !* '—' You are too warm,
 'Mynbeer ; too sanguine in the pursuit of your pro-
 'jects ; while the surprise or fright of the late mana-
 'gers in *England*, gave me reason to think that they
 'would not venture to interrupt us, I carried on as
 'large a trader in this way, as any other : but as
 'soon as I saw the people recover their senses, and
 'the reins put into other hands, I made a timely re-
 'treat with what I had acquired.'—' *And what do*
 '*you intend to do now ?* '—' Keep fair with those
 'whom I can get nothing by breaking with, and
 'throw my business into another channel ; by which
 'management I have already succeeded so far, that
 'I have got the *British* remittances to the parties en-
 'gaged in the present war.'—' *Why, there may be*
 '*something in this ; and if one scheme fails, I believe,*
 '*I will even follow your example.* '—' And pray
 'what is that, Mynbeer ? '—' No more than the old cry
 'of piracy ; but this is so laid that it can hardly fail of
 'success : we have bribed the captain of an *English*
 'privateer to rifle a ship, that we prepare properly for the
 'purpose, and then to come into the way of one of our men
 'of war, which is to take him and bring him in, where
 'he is to insult the government, and vindicate his outrages
 'on the pretence of authority.'

'And pray, Mynbeer, what can you propose from
 'all this, beside having the foolish villain hanged ?

' *Why the English, in detestation of such villainy,*
 '*will give up the point of searching our ships, when they*
 '*see their authority abused in such a manner, and so we*
 '*shall gain our end that way ; or if they do not, our own*
 '*people will be so enraged at the insult and injustice (as*
 '*they will believe) of their proceeding, that they will im-*
 '*mediately declare war against them, and so we shall ob-*
 '*tain it the other. The pirate, when he has served our*
 '*turn, we are to let escape ; and it will be no great loss to*
 '*the world if half a score of his crew are hanged.*'

'A very just and publick spirited scheme indeed !
 'to hang wretches for a crime you hire them to
 'commit

commit, and engage your country in a war that must be its ruin, to support your pretensions to an unjustifiable trade.

'*Mynbeer Van Hogan*, I am a Dutchman as well as you, and attached to my interest, as every Dutchman is; but that is, when my interest is not destructive of itself in the end, as I must tell you, I think your present scheme is, in which I will be no farther concerned, than to try to prevent the evil consequences of it to the state: the rest may lie upon your own head.

'Any thing in the way of trade, my conscience complies with without scruple; I can take every oath that every officer of the customs in *Europe* can impose, and not think myself bound by any of them, farther than they agree with my interest; I can supply the enemies of my country with arms, to fight against ourselves provided they pay a price extraordinary, that will defray my taxes toward the support of the war: I can receive circumcission, stroke down my beard, and swear by *Mahomet*, to avoid a tax at *Seyrna*; I can trample upon the cross, deny *Christ*, and call myself a *Dutchman*, to obtain leave to trade in *Japan*; but I will not cut the dykes to drown a rat at home.

'I am not at leisure to say more on this subject, as I am this minute going to remit a subsidy to one of the *German* princes, whom *England* keeps in pay, to fight for their own preservation, from the same principles, that it has long fought our battles, and would again, if we did not provoke it too far. And when this is done, I am to meet the *French* ambassador, to settle terms with him, for remitting the money, that is to pay the army, which fights against the allies of *England*. So that you see I am engaged, as you may be, if your warmth, unnatural to the cool temper of our country, will let you open your eyes to your true interest.'

Mynbeer Van Hogan departed, rather silenced than satisfied, with the reasoning of my master, who sat down to negotiate the hire of a principality, with as

much unconcern, as he would that of a turnip field ; and bought and sold the inhabitants with as great indifference, as he would have bargained for a cask of herrings ; in which service it fell to my lot to be employed.

Greatly as I must have edified by the examples and principles, mercantile, moral, civil, and religious, of my late master, I must own, there was something so grossly reprobate to every sense of real virtue, even in him, that I was pleased to leave him, and indeed, to be candid, the country in general : where the very profession of virtue was despised, their only pretension to it, being the absence of one vice, hypocrisy, which they rejected, as an unnecessary incumbrance, and acted their grossest enormities, without reserve or appearance of shame.

I now entered on the great theatre of the world, where the sovereign actors gave a dignity to the scenes ; and the concerns of individuals were overwhelmed, and lost, in the confusion of nations.



C H A P. XX.

CHRYSAL's remarks on military glory on his journey. Two strange passengers taken into the boat. National prejudices and pride break out in persons not likely to be suspected for such passions.

WHILE I was travelling to my destined master I had frequent opportunities of seeing the fruits of military glory, in the misery of the people, and desolation of the countries through which I went.

Such scenes as these cannot be made known by description to an inhabitant of this happy island, whose situation defends it from the sudden inroads of foreign enemies, as its natural naval strength does from the more deliberate devastations of regular invasion ; and the

the excellency of its laws, from the yet severer outrages of arbitrary power.

But amid all this happiness, such is the insatiate ingratitude of the human heart, that not content with these blessings, you are ever complaining, ever grasping at more, till, in the end, you lose the enjoyment of what you possess, insensible that your severest want would be abundance to millions, who dare not even utter a complaint.

It has been said, that there is a certain degree of madness requisite to make a great man; that is, to enable humanity to conquer its first principle of self-preservation, to slight the most terrifying dangers, and seek the most severe evils that interrupt its pursuit of an imaginary good.

The lust of power, and the intoxication of glory, may seem to animate the great to this contradiction of nature, but madness alone can support the mass of mankind through it, who are insensible to these fantastick motives, or at least cannot delude themselves with the faintest hope of ever obtaining them.

Of this I saw many instances in my journey through the countries, that were the scene of the present war; but one more particularly that happened in one of the *Dutch* travelling boats, early in our journey, made the strongest impression on me, and deserves relation most.—There had been an obstinate battle fought some time before between the parties then at war, in which the loss was so severe, and so equal on both sides, that as soon as night covered their retreat, each withdrew, concluding itself vanquished, though next morning, when they came to a better knowledge of each other's situation, they both claimed the victory, while neither thought proper to return to the charge to assert that claim.

This uncertainty aggravated the misery of the unhappy wretches, who were left wounded on the field of battle, as it prevented their receiving relief, either from friend or enemy. However, as this dreadful scene was acted in the neighbourhood of a neutral city, as soon as the first terrors of it were a little

cooled, the common feelings of humanity moved some of the inhabitants to go and try to relieve as many of the deserted sufferers, as had not perished for want of more timely assistance, without distinction, or respect to any party.

Two of those victims of ambition, who had been enemies in the day of battle, but had since founded a friendship on their common calamity, having been supported by the same charity, and cured of their wounds in the same bed, were now striving to get the mangled remains of their mutilated carcasses, carried like other worn-out instruments of the war, to their respective countries. In their journey they happened to be brought to the water-side, where we had just taken boat, where they begged in the most moving terms to be admitted, but were absolutely refused, till one of the passengers, an *English* gentleman, took compassion on their distress, and paid their fare.

We were all seated in the equality usual in such vehicles, in which, as in the grave, all conditions are thrown promiscuously together, when the conversation happening to turn upon the war, which then reigned in most parts of Europe, and every one speaking variously, as prejudice or opinion dictated, the Englishman chanced to say, that he thought such a combination of the greatest powers of Europe, as, at that time, laboured to oppress the King of *Bulgaria*, was, to divest it of the intricacies of ambition, and bring politicks to the rule of reason and justice, the most injurious, and even base abuse of power, that could be instanced in the christian history; and he hoped, and indeed doubted not, but that glorious prince, and the bravery and attachment of his subjects to his cause, that is, really to their own cause, would rise superior to all the attempts of his enemies, and retort upon them the stroke which they had perfidiously aimed at his ruin, to their dishonour and confusion.

The rage into which this reflection, so injurious to the glory of the *Grand Monarque*, threw one of the passengers, who thought it levelled particularly at him, though

though no names had been mentioned, was so great that he could not suppress it, till the gentleman should conclude; but interrupting him, without the least respect to his personal obligation, for he was one of the two whom I mentioned, to have been admitted into the boat on his charity; 'What do you mean, sir,' (said he) 'by saying that this war will end in the dishonour of the king of *France*? Was not his motive for entering into it the most disinterested and glorious? to support the rights of sovereignty, and bring vassals to a proper sense of duty and obedience? And has not the success been answerable to the greatness of his designs? Have not his forces been every where victorious by land and sea.'

The tone of voice with which these words were spoken, drew the eyes of all present upon the speaker, a little old withered creature, who wanted both his legs, and scarce seemed to have skin enough, not to say flesh, to cover the remainder of his shattered bones, and keep them together. But his spirit supplied all these advantages, and enabled him to raise himself upon his stumps, and cast a look of the most ferocious rage around him, as if he meant to destroy whoever dared to dispute his words.

But his triumph was not long; his fellow-traveller immediately taking him up with equal fury, 'How,' (said he) 'the army of *France* ever victorious over *Bulgaria*; what assurance can dictate such a falsehood? Where have they obtained one victory? where have they escaped defeat, except when the superiority of their numbers has exceeded all proportion! and even then their slain have generally equalled the whole amount of the forces, whom they fought with? what armies have they lost already? how few of those which remain will ever return to their native home, even in the wretched condition that you do.'

These last words raised a general laugh at the person who spoke them, he being, if possible, in a more maimed and helpless condition, than the one to whom they

they were addressed, having lost both his arms, and one of his eyes.

He perceived the motive of their mirth, and submitting to the rebuke with a manly fortitude of mind, 'I see, gentlemen' (said he) 'that you laugh at my mentioning the wretchedness of any other living creature with contempt, who am such a sufferer myself but what absurdities will not passion hurry men into? and how could human patience bear to hear this *Frenchman* boast of the victories of his monarch, whose forces I myself have assisted to rout, at every place where I have ever met them.'

'You rout the forces of my master!' (replied the other) 'my master's forces would eat up all your master's subjects for a breakfast.'—'I do not deny their number nor their appetites,' (returned the *Bulgarian*) 'they leave sufficient evidence of both where-ever they go: cruelty and rapine lead forth their armies; famine and desolation mark their marches. Shake not your head at me, nor lift your hand, as you regard your life; else, loth as I am to make misery ridiculous, by a quarrel between two such wretches as we are, though I have not an hand to strike, with my foot will I spurn out your life, and trample on your-carcafs.'

'*Morbieu! compare the mighty MONARQUE of FRANCE with a little GERMAN king.*'

You mistake me greatly; I never meant to compare them: the greatness of your monarch I do not deny, were it not abused to purposes that make it a dishonour to *him*, and a misfortune to his subjects; whereas our sovereign is the father of his people, and never exerts his power, but to their advantage.'

'Gentlemen, you must forgive my warmth; any thing against myself I can despise; but my king, my father, I cannot, I will not hear spoken of with disrespect, while I have a voice left to assert his cause: I have fought for him; I have fought with him; for *he* does not sit rioting in the debaucheries of a court, while his subjects are encountering hard-
ships

ships and dangers to gratify his vanity or revenge. His quarrels are the quarrels of his people ; and he fights their battles with them ; and the only regret I feel for the loss of my limbs is, that I can employ them no longer in his service, for which I would lay down my life this minute with joy, could it gain him the least advantage, or was necessary to prove my attachment to him.

But since I can no longer have the happiness of being of service to him, all I have now to do is, to retire to my native country, where his paternal care has made such a provision for my wants, that I shall wear out my days in content, without ever having my prayers for his welfare, and success, disturbed by one repining wish, one just complaint.

But ask this vain-glorious knight-errant if he can say so ? Did he fight for the preservation of his family, his country, and his religion, as I did ? Did he fight under the conduct of his sovereign, who personally provided for the necessities, the comforts of his men, as I did ? Is he sure of a peaceful retreat at home, safe from the additional distress of want, as I am ?

Not at all ; he fought for he knew not what, he knew not whom. At a distance from his king, who was insensible of his dangers, and revelled in delicacies, while his subjects, the victims of his ambition, were destitute of the common indispensable necessities of nature : nor has he any other hope of prolonging his miserable days when he gets home, but the wretch's last resource of begging, in a country so exhausted by the vain tyranny of his master, that charity is almost an ineffectual virtue, for want of means for its exertion.—All present were struck with the force with which the soldier delivered his sentiments, nor did his antagonist attempt any reply ; but opening their common wallet, in which the *Bulgarian* carried all their wealth, he took out what belonged to himself, saying with a sneer, " that since his feet were so good, he might hereafter use them instead of hands, for he would feed him no longer."

This

This poor spirited sarcasm was received by the person to whom it was applied, with a smile of disdain, though it raised the idle laughter of the greater part present. But the *Englishman* received it in another manner, for drawing out his purse, he took twenty ducats, and putting them himself into the pocket of the *Bulgarian*; "Accept of these, my brother soldier (said he) to make your journey into your native country more convenient, where you cannot meet more tender regard from your sovereign and country, than your sensible attachment to them merits. As far as I shall go your way I will take care of you myself, and that will defray the expence of the rest of your journey with comfort."



C H A P. XXI.

The history of the Bulgarian soldier. CHRYSA L is carried to his destined master.

THE *Bulgarian* was unable to express his gratitude for this charity; the manner of presenting which doubled the obligation of it. But the big tear that stole in silence down his manly cheek, as he bowed his head to his benefactor, spoke it with a more affecting eloquence than any words could do; and influenced every person present so much in his favour, as to make them vie in offering him their assistance.

As soon as he recovered utterance, 'Such (said he) is the noble benevolence that distinguishes the sons of liberty! such the generosity of heart, that always extends the ready hand of a *Briton*, with relief to the distressed. May heaven preserve to your happy nation the blessings which enable it to exert its virtues, to make them a blessing to all who want their assistance. And though envy may malign, and ingratitude return benefits with evil, beneficence finds its reward in its own exertion, in the certainty
of

of a retribution from those treasures which never fail.

The turn of this soldier's discourse, and particularly the last part of it, seemed so much above his present appearance, that it raised a curiosity in his benefactor to ask him, 'If he had been bred to arms, or how long he had professed the military life, and in what station.'

'O, sir,' (replied he with a sigh, that seemed to tear his heart) 'your question recalls to my memory, scenes that I would willingly forget for ever, and obliges me to relate such things as would draw tears from *Tartars*, *Pandours*, or the crueller soldiers of the king of *France*.—I was not bred to arms, nor have I followed the military profession long, or in any other rank than that which rage and despair first placed me in, when I offered myself to my sovereign to repel the invaders, and revenge the desolation of my bleeding country. My unhappy story is no more than this.

'I am a native of *Bulgaria*, the son of a minister of the gospel, who observing a desire of knowledge in my youth, encouraged and improved it, by his own precepts and example, and led my studious mind through the sublimest paths of science.

'As soon as he saw my resolutions sufficiently established to be proof against the levity of youth, and temptations of sense, he yielded to my entreaties, and I was admitted into the sacred order of which he was a member, and made the perfection of human wisdom, the practice of piety and virtue, under the direction of the divine word, the business of my happy life. Happy indeed then! but now the recollection of that happiness aggravates my present misery, in the irrecoverable loss of it, almost to despair.

'As the religion of the benign redeemer of mankind does not enjoin impossibilities; by requiring us to eradicate passions, which are the essence of our nature, and whose indulgence, under the direction
of

' of reason and virtue, is the end of our creation, and
 ' the basis of our being, and fulfills the first divine
 ' command, by continuing our species, and encreasing
 ' the number of his adorers, I obeyed the impulse
 ' of virtuous love, and married the daughter of a
 ' neighbouring divine, who compleated to me, as I
 ' vainly thought, the sum of human happiness, by a
 ' numerous offspring, which grew up on the knees of
 ' their aged grandfire, my father; now become too
 ' feeble for the active duties, while my labours supplied
 ' the necessaries of life to my contented family,
 ' in which I thus stood the happy centre of filial and
 ' paternal love.'

' In this blissful state did I advance toward heaven,
 ' when envy of his glory, and fear of his virtues
 ' brought this destructive war upon the dominions of
 ' our sovereign. O, my father! my children! my
 ' wife! in one day did I lose you all. These eyes be-
 ' held my habitation reduced to ashes, my children
 ' massacred in the wantonness of cruelty, in despite
 ' of the prayers of my aged father, whose snow-white
 ' hairs, whose whole appearance would have struck
 ' the ruthless hearts of the antient heathen *Gauls*
 ' with reverence, in despite of the cries of my beau-
 ' teous wife, who both begged to draw their fury on
 ' themselves, from the defenceless innocents; but all
 ' in vain; the murderers, deaf to their cries and in-
 ' treaties, insensible to the beauty of the babes, who
 ' stood smiling at the swords that hung over their
 ' heads, first butchered them as in sport, then abused
 ' the person of my wife to death, and mangled my
 ' father's breathless body, whose tender heart, the
 ' grief of such a sight had burst, while I unhappier
 ' far than any, stood looking on bound to a tree, with
 ' my jaws distended with the head of a spear, and my
 ' cheeks cut open thus from ear to ear, a Bible being
 ' placed before me, and a *French priest* standing by,
 ' encouraging their cruelty, as meritorious against
 ' hereticks, and insultingly bidding me, *preach now to*
 ' *my congregation*, at the same time refusing me the re-
 ' lease

‘ leave of death, which I besought by all the signs
‘ despair could suggest, and making them leave me
‘ naked, and whipped till my body was all one
‘ wound to perish by famine and grief.’

‘ But heaven had ordained otherwise for me: some
‘ of my neighbours, who had escaped their fury,
‘ came as soon as night favoured their fears, to learn
‘ our fate, and offer any assistance in their power.
‘ They unbound me; they buried the remains of
‘ my slaughtered family, and forced me from the
‘ grave, to their retreat in the woods, where they
‘ healed my wounds, and strove to comfort my dis-
‘ tress. But all their arguments would have been
‘ too weak to make me suffer life, had not a desire of
‘ revenge taken possession of my soul, and silenced
‘ every other thought.

‘ As soon as I had recovered strength, I hastened
‘ the army of my sovereign, where I threw myself at
‘ his feet, and told him all my distress. He heard me
‘ with pity; he shed tears at my sad story, and raising
‘ me with his own hand, ‘ *Be comforted, my brother,*
‘ (said the mighty monarch to his meanest subject)
‘ *be comforted, the losses of the just will be repaid in*
‘ *heaven; there thy happy family expect thine arrival;*
‘ *there thy virtues will be rewarded, thy joys compleat;*
‘ *when the evils of this world, which endure but for*
‘ *a moment, shall be at an end. The horrors of war*
‘ *agree not with the innocence of your past life, or the*
‘ *humane tenderness of your disposition, and would but*
‘ *aggravate your griefs, by the unhappy unavoidable*
‘ *repetition of the like scenes of ruin. Retire therefore*
‘ *to my capital, where all comforts of life shall be pro-*
‘ *vided for you, to alleviate your distress, while your*
‘ *prayers assist us in the day of battle.*’

‘ I heard his words with reverence, but his virtue
‘ was too sublime for my imitation. I fell again at
‘ his feet, and wringing my hands, O sir,’ (said I)
‘ this goodness is too great for man; alas, I am un-
‘ able to obey its dictates; my soul languishes for
‘ vengeance; O bear with human infirmity, and per-
‘ mit me to fight under thy command. Heaven
‘ heard

‘ heard not my prayers, or it would have prevented my ruin ; let me then have recourse to other methods for redress ; let me contribute my poor help to thy victories, to the deliverance of my country ; I die this moment if my prayer is refused.’

‘ *Be then my companion in this just war ;*’ (said my sovereign, raising me again) ‘ *and since thy sacred function must not be disgraced with any other rank, fight by my side, and lead me to success.*’

‘ From that day have I followed his steps in the field of battle at an awful distance ; and been witness to all the wonders of his conduct and valour ; till in the late action a cannon shot took off both my arms, as I had the honour of holding my own horse for him to mount, his having been killed under him as I fought by his side.

‘ He expressed concern at my misfortune, and commanded me to retire to his own tent : but an *Austrian* hussar, the moment after, cut me down with his sabre, though in the unpremeditated instinct of self-preservation I had held up both my bleeding stumps to ward the blow.

‘ Here I lay among my fellow sufferers in the common calamity, in submissive expectation of the stroke of fate, from the horses feet or the pillagers of the field. But heaven had otherwise ordained : and after two days weltering in my blood I was relieved, and recovered by charity, to the condition which you see me, and am now striving to go and avail myself of my master’s humane offer, which your benevolence enables me to do with comfort.’

‘ This fellow-sufferer, whose arrogance first prompted me to speak, has been a sharer with me also in the charity which relieved us ; where our common calamity created a kind of friendship between us, and our necessities suggested it to us, to combine the remains of our limbs for mutual assistance, he preparing our victuals and feeding me, while I have carried not only our poor baggage, but him also upon my back.

But

‘ But that alliance is at an end ; not because the relief which you so generously have bestowed upon me, may seem to free me from the necessity of his assistance, for I must beg your leave to divide it with him, as half is sufficient for me, but that my soul abhors the principles which first led him into this distress, and which even such sufferings cannot shew the impious absurdity of ; and disclaims connection with the enemy of my gracious sovereign, who would thus malign his glory, when he cannot deny, nor longer resist the virtues that have raised it.’

By this time we arrived at the place, where I was to be delivered to the minister of my destined master, who immediately carried me to him.



C H A P. XXII.

How CHRYSAAL found his master employed The grandeur and happiness of absolute power. His cares for the augmentation and support of his revenues. His rage at the insolence of liberty, punctuality to his engagements, and resolutions to maintain the consequence of his rank.

WE found him busied in reviewing some new levies, which he had just raised, to hire out to the best bidder of the parties then engaged in war, without ever examining the justice of the cause, or considering any other motive or consequence, than just the immediate price he was to receive, out of which he bounteously allowed them a pittance to support the lives so useful to him.

As soon as the men were ordered to their quarters, his highness retired with his minister, who presenting the bag in which we were, with a bent knee, ‘ The subsidy, may it please your most serene highness, from England,’ (said he)——‘ *It is well,*’ (replied the sovereign) ‘ *but upon what terms ?*’——‘ The same
‘ your

‘ your highness had last year.’—‘ No more, they shall not have my men ! I can have more elsewhere ! FRANCE offers better.’—‘ Then I must return this money, please your highness.’—‘ Return it ! no, for what ?’—‘ If your highness does not like the terms, you will not keep the money I presume.’—‘ Fool, but I will ! such laws may bind you subject wretches, but sovereign princes are above them ; laws are not made for us.’—‘ I humbly implore your highness’s pardon for my ignorance ; then you will give those troops to France.’—‘ Yes, when FRANCE pays me for them.’—‘ But in the mean time, as ENGLAND has already paid your highness, they will depend upon them, and consequently suffer by the disappointment.’—‘ Then let them prize my friendship properly another time ; I am not obliged to support Kings upon their thrones for nothing ; I may invade as well as guard against invasion. They shall know whom they dare offend.’

‘ Something has provoked your highness’s wrath, which I am afraid my ignorance should aggravate.’

‘ I will teach the respect that’s due to sovereignty ; I am not king of ENGLAND, curbed in my will, and limited in power ; my subjects are my slaves ; they dare not think of any other law beside my pleasure. Death ! can you think it ! my minister at the court of ENGLAND writes me word, that a base plebeian merchant, has had the assurance to demand payment for the goods he sent me last year, for the support and splendour of my court, and on its not being deducted from the subsidy, to refuse supplying me this year, and even to threaten complaining to their parliament.’

‘ Now judge you, if a sovereign prince, whose forces are their security in time of danger, can brook such insolence ; and to conclude the whole ; what did the ENGLISH minister say, when my minister remonstrated with him on this affair, but that by the laws of ENGLAND, no man could be compelled to part with his property against his will, or hindered to complain, if he thought himself aggrieved : and that the laws were
‘ sacred

‘ sacred, and must not be infringed. Think now if I
‘ can with honour keep an alliance with such people, till
‘ I have received satisfaction : I, whose subjects have
‘ no property or laws, but my will, to be treated in
‘ such a manner by a vile trader : it is not to be borne.’

“ I am very sorry to hear of this affair, and particularly at this time, because if your highness should break with the *English* now, when they think they want your men, they may be provoked never to deal with your highness for them another time, when they have no other occasion for them, only to do your highness a service.”

“ *Why there may be something in that, and therefore if they will send me the merchandize I want, and raise the subsidy, perhaps I may not refuse them the succours they desire.*”

“ How much does your highness require to have the subsidy raised.”

“ *I have not thought of that yet. But surely they cannot be so unreasonable as to expect my men at the same rate, now in time of danger, as they had them in peace, when there was nothing at all for them to do, but they could work at their trades at home, and maintain themselves without wearing out their uniform, or any other expence to me?*”—“ That is very true ; if your highness was not to consider at the same time, that even then they paid you as much as if it was a time of war, and indeed more than any other nation will, or can pay you now ; for as to the promises of *France*, they are not to be depended on at all, whereas *England* always pays well.”

“ *I do not care ! what I have gotten here I will keep, by way of reprisal, for the insult offered to my honour ; and if they will have my troops, they shall pay me over again for them : so say no more on that head.*”

“ I submit ; but how will your highness subsist them at home in the mean time ? There must be an immediate remittance made of some of this money to *Holland* to buy provisions, for your magazines are quite exhausted, and the constant demand

' any kind of work, having lost their limbs in the wars.'

Disabled men! I thought I ordered you not to exchange them; they might have remained in the hands of the enemy; such I mean of them as are not able to breed soldiers for me, and cultivate the lands; or such as were not prisoners might have been let perish of their wounds; it would have been a mercy to them to shorten their misery.'

' May it please your highness I observed your orders, and left a number of such wretches unchanged; but the enemy saw into my design, and sent them home, to be rid of the trouble of them. And now they are crying for subsistence, and demand the arrears of their pay, which were stopped while they were prisoners. The others our surgeons took proper care of.'

Insolent slaves! demand pay when they are no longer able to earn it! And subsistence too! they learned this impudence from the conversation with those English! it is much they did not demand roast-beef and pudding too!—Hang up half of them, the next word of the kind they dare to utter, to terrify the other half to starve in quiet. And at your peril let me hear no more of them.

As for the musters I will have them compleated; man, woman, and child shall go! I will make my dominions a desert, before I lessen my consequence among the sovereign powers of Europe.



CHAP. XXIII.

More cares of sovereignty, and consequences of grandeur.

CHRYSALE is sent to market, where he is given to a Jew for bacon.

HIS highness had just declared this magnanimous resolution, when the steward of his household entered to let him know, that the butchers and

and bakers of the next *Hans-town*, from whence his table was supplied, had refused to send him any more provisions till their bills were paid, as they had heard he was to receive no more subsidies from *England*; and there was scarce enough to make out dinner for that day, for the court was very numerous and brilliant, all the princes and princesses of the various branches of his highness's most illustrious house, having come to pay him a visit of congratulation, upon the birth of the most serene prince his son and heir; and that his purveyors had been able to find nothing in his own dominions fit for his table, but bear's flesh and venison, nor even a sufficient quantity of these; the misery of his people having made them venture to break through his laws, and hunt in his forests, to save themselves and their families from perishing by famine.

His highness had hearkened to him without any emotion, or even concern, till he mentioned this outrageous insult upon his sovereign authority and pleasure, but then bursting into a rage, '*Hunt in my forests!*' (said he) '*audacious slaves! dearly shall they pay for their presumption! Order my troops to march that way directly! I'll lay the country waste!*' — Please your highness (replied the steward) that will not cost you the trouble of marching your troops: the country is a desert already.'

'Who told you that they have been guilty of this insolence? you should have seized the author of the report, for not apprehending the criminals.'

'May it please your highness, they took one wretch in the very fact, and have brought him here to receive the sentence of your pleasure; and the stag with him alive, which he found in a pit, and had borrowed a gun to shoot. He pleaded hunger, and the cries of a starving family of grand-children, for he is an old man, and his three sons have been killed in the wars; but, though I own he moved me, I did not presume to let him go.'

'It is well you did not, or you should have suffered in his stead. Go, strip him naked, bind him on that

' flag, and then let him loose with him upon his back into the woods, proclaiming that no one, upon pain of death, presume to give him the least relief: he shall have hunting enough.'

' But what will your highness have me to do about provisions for the entertainment of the princes? I believe they design a long visit, for they have brought all the young princes and princesses of their illustrious families with them.'

' I care not! I am not to be disturbed on such trifles now, when the fate of nations depends on my resolution; let them go home again.'

' Not fasting I presume, for they have already signified, some of them, that they have come without their breakfasts, by calling for refreshment the moment they arrived; and indeed, I fear, the principal motive of this visit of their highnesses, was want of any thing to eat at home.'

' Confusion; what can I do? Here, take this money, and send for victuals for them.'

The sight of an handful of guineas was an agreeable surprise to the steward, who had not heard of the arrival of the subsidy from *England*. He received them with evident pleasure, and I felt no less in being delivered from this scene of sovereignty, of which I was sincerely sick; though, by the change, I fell from being the price of armies to the domestic office of going to market for a morsel of bread, from the glory of causing the slaughter of thousands, to the virtue of supporting the lives of a few.

The steward, as soon as he withdrew from the presence of his highness, called the other officers of the household together, and told them with joy in his countenance, that there was no foundation for the report of their master's breaking with *England*, so that they might look famine in the face for another year, and confirmed the glad tidings, by shewing them the gold.

The pleasing sight raised universal joy; they licked their lips, feasted in imagination, and prepared things for getting dinner ready, with all the alacrity of willing

ling minds and keen appetites, while the steward, not caring to trust a commission of that importance to any inferior officer, waited only to wash down a mouldy crust with a draught of four wine, and then went to market for them himself.

The appearance of things changed as soon as I left the hereditary dominions of his highness, and entered into the little territories of a free state. Plenty was the reward of industry, and content supplied well the place of grandeur.

As his highness's minister had pressing motives to accelerate his negociations, he went directly to the several dealers in provisions, and ordering a comfortable supply on the credit of our appearance, returned with the greatest dispatch, to the discharge of the offices of his high employment, in the ceremonials of the court.

In the course of these transactions, it fell to my lot to be paid to a Jew for bacon and sausages, the butchers of his religion being held to make the best of the latter, as they never cut out the nice bits to eat themselves.



C H A P. XXIV.

Comparison between two dealers in flesh. The celebration of the PASSOVER in the traditional way, and the method of procuring (human) lambs explained.

I NOW entered into a service, the most diametrically opposite of any in nature to my last; my present master denying himself the very necessities of life, to hide his riches under the appearance of poverty, as my last lived in the most vain ostentation of splendour, to conceal his poverty under the appearance of riches.

It is difficult to say, which hypocrisy was most absurd and contradictory to the immutable laws of moral justice. The former basely stealing, as I may say,

that wealth which was ordained to be of advantage to it, and whose value arises only from its being used, by thus secreting it in his coffers; and the latter, in gratification of a vanity as unjustifiable as that of avarice, committing every kind of actual violence to supply the want of it.

I here was soon initiated into all the mysteries of that lower species of trade, called *Peddling*, which is in a manner engrossed by those people. False weights and measures, adulteration of wares, lying, perjury, in a word, every species of deceit, that can impose upon ignorance and credulity, were here reduced into a science, taught by precept, and enforced by example, from the earliest exertion of reason, to wear off every hesitation of conscience, and make the practice natural and expert.

The beauty of my appearance, for I had hitherto escaped mutilation, made my master, who was an adept in that art, think it improper to throw me among his diminished heap, as I should but make their loss the more remarkable. He therefore put me into his purse, to make a shew with upon occasions, and appear as a proof of his innocence of that practice, for which he was too strongly suspected.

The evening after I came into his possession, happened to be one of their most solemn festivals. My master therefore, who was of the tribe of *Levi*, retired from business early, to purify and prepare himself for the celebration of the most sacred and mysterious ceremony of their religion.

This was the sacrifice of the *Passover*, which, by a secret tradition, never committed to writing, for fear of being betrayed, was changed from the typical offering of a lamb, to the real immolation of human blood, for which purpose the most beautiful children were purchased at any expence, and under any pretext, from the ignorance of necessitous parents, or the perfidious avarice of servants, if they could not be obtained by stealth, and brought from all parts of Europe, to these ceremonies: It being a long received opinion, that the original sacrifice of a lamb

was

was designed only for that one occasion, to conciliate the favour of heaven, to the escape of their forefathers out of *Egypt*; but that to render it propitious to their restoration to their country, and to the consummation of their promised happiness and glory, the type must be changed for the thing typified, and human blood, in the purest state of infant innocence, be offered instead of the ineffectual blood of a brute.

But as some traces of natural affection might remain, even in hearts divested of the feelings of common humanity, to remove every obstacle to this practice, and stimulate superstition by hatred and revenge, the children of christians were appointed for this sacrifice, and those especially of the superior ranks of life, whose pride might be too apt to make them treat the people of the Jews with severity and contempt.

As to other points, the rules laid down in the institution of the *Passover* were literally observed, in respect to the victim, who was to be *without blemish, a male of the first year*, that is, the first born of his mother, and to be kept fourteen days before he was sacrificed, during which time they fed him with the richest food, to raise him to the highest perfection of his nature.

The place chosen for the celebration of this ceremony, was a summer-house in a garden belonging to one of the rulers of their synagogue, where they all met at the appointed time. As soon as they were placed in order, one of the elders stood up, and in a long speech declared the occasion of their meeting, read the original institution of the *Passover*, and then recited the tradition, which changed the sacrifice to be offered, as I said before; concluding with an oath of secrecy, which all present joined in, and confirmed with the most dreadful imprecations, and which was to be sealed by the participation of the horrid mystery.

When he had ended, the victims of that night were produced, their bodies examined for fear of blemish, and their primogeniture proved, by those who had provided them, who were reimbursed their expences before the sacrifice began, by the general contribution of all present.

This method was used, that every person might have an equal share in the merit of the sacrifice, as it would be dangerous and too expensive to provide a *lamb* for every head of a family in the congregation.

The END of the FIRST BOOK.

CHRYSAL:

CHRYSAL:

OR, THE

ADVENTURES

OF A

GUINEA.

BOOK THE SECOND.

CHAP. I.

The rites are interrupted, and the victims changed. This cleared up without a miracle. The few survivors of the first fury brought to publick justice.

ISEE your astonishment, how so absurd an opinion could ever take possession of a rational mind, as that the Deity can be pleased with the breach of his most strict command, and rendered propitious by an action, against which his severest vengeance is denounced ; yet such are the errors, which the least deviation from the straight paths of reason lead to, when ceremony is made the essence of religion, and human inventions substituted in the place of immutable eternal virtue.

The Devil, whoever is meant by that most comprehensive name, has long been charged with being the author of this, and every other vice and folly, which men are ashamed of owning themselves ; his temptation

tation being a convenient and comfortable excuse. But if man would consider a little, he must blush at so unfair and ridiculous a charge, and give the poor *Devil* his due, who, among all his failings, has never been suspected of being a fool, and nothing else could have devised such gross enormities, such contradictions to the plainest rules of common reason.

But of this strange institution of human sacrifices, we need search for the original, no farther than in the heart of man, who observing, that to inculcate the duty of gratitude, the first of moral virtues, the divine will had directed returns of its blessings to be made, in the way of oblation or sacrifice, soon perverted the original purity of the institution to his own depravity, and measuring the divine beneficence by his capricious avarice, concluded that the richer the oblation, or the dearer to the offerer, the greater would the merit of it be, and thus he arose from a lamb to an hecatomb, from brute to human blood; his eagerness to obtain the end, for which he thus strove to bribe the favour of heaven, hindering him to see the absurdity of the means he used.

All things being prepared, the victims were brought to the altar naked and bound, the instruments for slaying, and the fires for roasting them (for, horror to human thought! they were to have feasted on their flesh) in readiness, and the butchers, of whom my master was one, just going to begin their work, when the doors of the house were burst open, with an out-cry that heightened the terrors of the guilty wretches, and a band of soldiers rushed in and seized them, as they stood stupified with their fright.

The horror of the sight gave a respite to their fate, striking the very hearts of the soldiers, though hardened by all the cruelties of war, with an astonishment that deprived them of power to stir for some moments. But this was only a short calm, that, as it were, gave time to the storm to gather; for, as they stood thus gazing at each other, one of the children cried out, *O, father! father! come and untie my hands, those ugly cords hurt me.*

The

The voice no sooner struck the ear of the officer, who commanded the party, than starting into a phrenzy, he ran to the child, whom he had not distinguished before, as he lay naked on the ground, and snatching him up in his arms, 'O my child!' (said he in an ecstasy) '*have I found you! have I rescued you in the very moment when you were going to be sacrificed by these wretches. O my child! my child!*'

These words awoke the fury of the soldiers, which burst upon the wretched Jews with a violence not to be restrained. The house was in a moment, a scene of horror beyond description. Most of them fell instant sacrifices to this resistless rage. Happier far, in having so speedy an end put to their sufferings than the few survivors, who saved their lives for that moment, by throwing themselves among the dead, or taking hold of the children, whom, even in this hurricane of passion, the soldiers took all care not to hurt.

The little respite which this caution gave, the officers improved to pacify the soldiers, who would not be persuaded to spare the rest, by any other argument, but a positive assurance of having them put to the most severe and infamous publick death.

When the storm was a little calmed by these means, and the living separated from the dead, the pillage of the scene was given up to the men, who rifled all, living and dead, with the most unrelenting severity, and retaliated their wicked intentions, with exemplary justice on the miserable criminals, stripping them quite naked, and binding them with the very cords which they took off their destined victims, who were unbound with the tenderest care, and carried away till their parents should be discovered, or in case that could not be, to be educated at the publick expence, as the children of the state, while their intended murderers were thrown into prison, till a punishment should be appointed severe enough for their guilt.

In the confusion of this affair, I fell into the hands of the officer, who had found his child, whose passi-

ons were raised so high by the recovery of him, that as soon as the plunder was over, he left his charge to another, and retired to share his joy with his disconsolate wife.

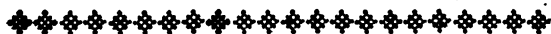
The tenderness of this meeting was a just reverse to the former part of the last scene, where the helpless infants were led forth to be slaughtered.

As the Jews were some of the wealthiest of the inhabitants, and carried on a great part of the trade of the city, the magistrates, to prevent the imputation of injustice, and to set the whole affair in a proper light to the world, convened the people early the next morning, where the rescued infants were produced on one side, and the few that remained alive of their intended butchers on the other, when my new master, who bore a considerable office in the state, beside his military command, unfolded the whole affair, in a short, but moving speech. He told them, ' That having lost his only child, the infant there present, about a month before, and having been informed, when he served in *Poland*, in his youth, that the Jews had a custom of stealing and sacrificing, or murdering infants, on the night when they celebrated their *Passover*, he made no search for him, but seemed to believe a story which he had invented himself, to appease the distraction of his wife, that he had been killed and devoured by a tame wolf, that was kept in the garden of his country-house, from whence he was stolen, watching, in the mean time, every motion of the Jews with such exactness, that he had punctual information of their meeting, at the place where he had seized them the evening before ; where it was to be lamented, that the just resentment of the soldiers had anticipated the severer hand of justice, and saved them from the laws, the judgment of which he now demanded against the remaining few, for himself, and for the unknown parents of the innocent victims, whom they saw before them.'

A roar of universal indignation pursued his words, which had inflamed the rage and detestation of the people

people so high, that they were with difficulty restrained from tearing the wretches instantly in pieces, by the same arguments which had saved them from the soldiers before; nor were the Jews admitted to say a word in their own defence, for though none of the infants had been actually murdered that night, yet the intention was beyond controversy; and beside, many of the people, who had formerly lost their children, now charged them with their murder, with the strongest appearance of Justice.

They were therefore dragged back to prison, where they lay loaded with chains, till they day of their execution, when they were all publicly burned alive on the very spot, where they were to have perpetrated their guilt, the house being rased to the ground for that purpose, and all the effects of such as were taken in this fact, confiscated to the use of the state.



C H A P. II.

A breach of neutrality properly resented, brings CHRYSAL into a service which he had long been ambitious of. How he found his new master employed. The king of Bulgaria's reception of the humble magistrates. His appropriation of money to his own use. His reflections on the fight of CHRYSAL.

THIS affair was scarce ended, when I changed my master again. The city in which I was, had professed a neutrality in the present war, but, whether yielding to inclination, or biased by private interest, the magistrates had, on many occasions, shewn the strongest partiality to the enemies of the king of Bulgaria.

Of this, that heroic prince overlooked many instances, in compassion to their folly; but instead of inspiring them with proper sentiments of gratitude, this moderation only raised their injudicious pride so high, that attributing it to fear, they at length proceeded,

ceeded so far, as to refuse him those good offices, which by the universal laws of mankind, he had a right to demand, and treated his messengers with disrespect.

This drew on them a resentment that was never raised in vain. The king, without deigning to waste time in complaints, sent a body of forces directly to their gates, and obliged them to buy their safety with contributions, and deprecate his vengeance with submissions, which humbled their pride, and terrified their neighbours from being guilty of the like folly.

As these contributions were too large to be immediately discharged by the state, they were obliged to be levied on the subjects, by which means I came into the service of this monarch, to whose treasurer I was paid, by the humbled magistrates of the city on their knees.

The many great things which I had heard of this prince, had long made me wish for such an opportunity of seeing him, and of having a knowledge of his heart, that I might be able to judge whether he really was the great man he appeared to the world, by all his actions to be. How my expectations were answered cannot be explained justly without a particular account of every thing I saw, while I was with him; but as that would be too much for my time, which begins to grow short, I shall only give you a few of the most remarkable particulars, by which you may form a judgment of the rest.

The king was walking in his camp before the entrance of his tent, after having finished the business of the morning, conversing with the most engaging affability with his officers, and even the private centinels of his guard, redressing their complaints, and relieving their wants, when the magistrates of the city I had just left, arrived to pay their contributions, and make submission for their misbehaviour; for to humble them the more effectually, he had ordered that they should attend himself.

As soon as they approached him, they fell on their knees, and delivering the money to his treasurer, im-
plored

plored his pardon; in the most abject terms of submission. 'Arise' (said the monarch) 'and cease your supplications; the posture and address are both improper to be offered to a man; but the passions of the foolish are ever in extremes; and your fear sinks you now as low, as your vain insolence raised you high before. Depart in peace and safety; and let this teach you not to mistake moderation for fear another time. But beware that you offend not so again. Mercy, that is amiable in the first instance, degenerates to folly, if extended to a second.'

The magistrates, unable to speak before him, retired in confusion from his presence, when turning to his treasurer, 'Take' (said he) 'so much of that money, as will repair the losses sustained by the innocent inhabitants of the country, around their city, and see that it is given to the sufferers, to be applied to that use, and none other, for I war not with the poor, nor would have my steps marked by desolation, when it can possibly be avoided. And of the remainder, leave the usual sum upon my table, for my private occasions.'

Then addressing himself to the officers around him in general, 'How abject' (said he) 'is the submission of the proud! how does guilt humble the conscious heart! These unhappy men, who dared not now to meet our eyes, but halted with down-cast looks from the flash of just indignation, when last we saw them, looked us in the face with the assurance of friendly respect, and seemed happy in the marks of our regard. Let this teach us to preserve the adamantine shield of a clear conscience, and terror can never strike a dart through it, to our hearts.'

When the treasurer went to divide the money, among which I lay, according to his master's orders, I was greatly alarmed for fear I should be torn so soon from the presence of this prince; but my anxiety was relieved, when he took that bag in which I was, and gave it to one of his master's pages to lay on the table.

The

The many things I had heard of this prince's greatness, had, I own, deceived me into expectations of pomp and grandeur in his court, and particularly about his person. This made me surprised to find every thing in a plainness, far greater than what I had in many instances observed in private life. But I instantly perceived my error, and that his greatness was his own, established on the virtues of his soul, and independent of, and superior to every adventitious circumstance.

I had not lain long upon his table when he entered alone, and walking a meditative turn or two across the tent, kneeled down, and offered up his soul in the most ardent devotion to heaven.

He then arose with a most serenely chearful countenance, and coming to the table, poured out the money, and viewing it earnestly for a moment, 'O thou source of every evil, which distacts this wretched world' (said he) 'let me not be infected by thy poison; let not my heart conceive a fondness for thee, farther than what thy native value of enabling it to do good, justly entitles thee to; I am yet free from thine infatuation; nor have ever suffered avarice to tempt me to desire thee, by improper means, nor vain luxury, or pride, to abuse thee by profusion. This pittance only do I call my own, which I devote to the divine author of all the benefits and mercies of my life, in grateful return, by supplying with it the necessities of my distressed fellow creatures.'

Then taking an handful of it to put into his pocket, and happening to observe my shape, he took me up, and looking attentively at me, 'Is there no corner of the earth' (said he) 'where the wealth of Britain is not dispersed? If its commerce collects the produce of every climate under heaven, its munificence does also diffuse its riches as far. Great and happy nation! wert thou but sensible of the blessings of thy condition; but the time is come, when thou openest thine eyes to thy own interest, and seekest the mightiness of thy strength. How great is the power,

‘power of true wisdom ! how happy the people who have a good man for their guide.’

Saying this, he put us into his pocket, and as soon as it was dark, wrapped himself in a cloak, and went out privately to take a view of his camp in a disguise, that secured him from misinformation or deceit.

~~CHAPTER XXXIX.~~

C H A P. III.

The king takes a view of his camp in disguise. The exalted pleasure he received in the various occurrences of his walk. He gains a great victory. His conduct in, and after the battle.

THE notion I had formed of a camp, from the effects which I had seen of war, made me expect a scene of tumult and confusion. But how was I surprised here to find every thing as regular and tranquil, as in the best governed city in the midst of peace !

My master had not walked far, when some conversation that seemed to be carried on with warmth, in one of the tents, catching his ear, he stopped to listen what might be the subject of it. ‘I imagine’ (said a voice within) ‘that we shall have a battle soon : the chearfulness of the king’s looks, and the more than common spirits he has been in for these few days, are certain signs that he has some great things in view. I always observe him so before a battle.’

‘The sooner it comes the better,’ (replied another) ‘I only wish, that our forces were not so overmatched in numbers ; not that I fear success when he is with us ; but that we might be able to give them a total defeat at once, and so prevent their making head again. For such is the inequality at present, that while we are killing half of them the other half escape ; and though what we destroy exceeds the number of our own army, yet another army of the

'the run-aways still remains to give us more trouble? But however we must only do our duty, and kill them all, one after another'

'And so we will, brother,' (continued the other) 'if it please God to preserve our king to us; for while we have him we can fear nothing. The number of our enemies only encreases the glory of vanquishing them. Indeed I wonder how they can stand before us even as they do; wretches that are dragged to the war against their inclination, who have no interest in the event, no attachment to their leaders! But what attachment should they have to such leaders, who shew no regard to their distresses, nor make any provision for their wants, but just drive them to battle, like oxen to the slaughter, and when it is over, take no farther care about them, but let them perish by famine, if they cannot relieve themselves by plundering the unhappy countries, friends or enemies alike, through which they go?'

'Well, brother' (returned a third voice) 'thank God that is not our case; we follow a leader who is a father to his soldiers, and provides for all their occasions. We fight for ourselves, and our families, for our laws and religion, and are sure that he will support us in the enjoyment of them, when he has disappointed the designs of his enemies, and restored peace to his people; but if we are to fight to-morrow, we had better take our rest to night, to make us fresh and strong for the battle. God bless and preserve our king; while his care watches over us, we can sleep in safety in the midst of our enemies.'

This genuine tribute of praise, melted the heart of the king with the sublimest delight, and drew the tear of tenderness from his eyes. 'O my God,' (said he, when the voices ceased) 'enable me to protect this people, and to bring this just war to an happy end, that they may enjoy the fruit of their virtues.' He then continued his progress, in which he met many such occasions of conscious pleasure. When he
saw

saw that all things were in proper order in the camp ; his next care was to visit the quarters of the wounded and sick, for he would not trust them to any person, where he could possibly attend to them himself.

The manner in which all things were ordered here, for the relief and comfort of the evils inseparable from war, were alone sufficient to raise the highest idea of the tenderness and humane care, which directed and supported it. No riot or disorder ; no negligence or abuse among the attendants ; no misapplication or embezzlement of the provisions made for the patients ; all was order and harmony between them. How unlike to other scenes of the same nature which I had seen before !

If he was delighted with the spirited attachment of his soldiers in health, his delight was almost raised to extasy, by the behaviour of these victims of the madness of the great. The thought of having suffered in his cause the extremest anguish of pain, nor even the agonies of death, ever making them utter a syllable to his disadvantage, or forget him in their prayers, in which his preservation was always joined with their own relief, and his happiness recommended with their souls to heaven.

This was too moving to be long bore ; he joined in the general prayer, and halted from the tender scene as soon as he had fulfilled the motive of his going, by taking a strict view of every thing, in which his orders might be disobeyed ; and these his particular family, as he called them, suffer by neglect.

His tour was now finished, and he returned to his tent, to take his necessary rest, having distributed, on the various occasions that had occurred in his walk, all the money he had taken with him, except *me*, who happened to stick in the corner of his pocket.

Temperance, exercise, and serenity of conscience ensured his repose ; he fell asleep the moment his head touched the pillow, nor awoke till his usual early time of rising the next morning, when he returned to the fatigue and perplexity of such a multiplicity of affairs with a clear head, and undisturbed heart,

heart, and soon reduced the confusion of them into such order, as made their execution easy

As the soldier had judged, the hour of battle was at hand. The king had scarce finished the business of the morning, when an officer brought him an account, that the forces of the enemy were in motion. 'I expected it,' (said the king coolly) 'I knew they could not remain long in the situation they were in. But let us observe their motions, that we may regulate ours by them.'

Then ordering some of his generals to follow him, he went to the top of a neighbouring house; from whence he could view them distinctly, where having observed them attentively for some considerable time, 'It is done, my friends!' (said he, with a smile of joy that enlightened all his face) 'It is done! that last motion is what we wanted. Let us haste and embrace the opportunity which heaven has put in to our hands.'—Then descending with an alacrity that inspired every beholder, he made his dispositions for the battle, and putting himself at the head of his forces, marched directly against the enemy.

Descriptions of battles are never satisfactory; the confusion is too great, and the business of the scene too complex, to be brought into the regularity of any one design. I shall therefore only say, that my master was completely victorious; and to raise his own glory the higher, the victory was entirely gained by that part of his forces which he commanded in person; the excellent disposition he made of the rest, rendering it unnecessary for them to do more than stand spectators of the action, from the situation in which he placed them, while they prevented him from being surrounded by the enemy.

This victory was not gained without resistance: the field was long and obstinately disputed, and my master often obliged to lead his men to the charge: but numbers were at length forced to submit to superior valour; and the evening sun saw his banners wave in triumph, where those of his enemies had menaced his destruction in the morning.—If the intrepidity

trepidity with which he flew from rank to rank, and exposed himself to every shape of death in the action, had struck me with astonishment, I was not less affected by his conduct after it was over: when cooling instantly from that enthusiasm of courage, he gave his orders for securing the glorious advantage he had gained, for taking immediate care of the unhappy sufferers, both friends and enemies without distinction, and for refreshing his own laboured soldiers, with all the serenity of peace.



C H A P. IV.

The happy fruits of victory. CHRYSAL finds new reason to admire his master. A stranger throws himself at his feet to implore justice. The story of the stranger.

THE transactions succeeding this event, were but the common occurrences on such occasions, in which there is always something so cruel in the triumphs of the victors, and so severe in the sufferings of the vanquished, that to a being free from the contradictory phrenies of mankind, the very thought is painful.—His majesty's next care, after returning public thanks to heaven, on the very spot where its favour had been so signal, was to reward the behaviour of his soldiers! he praised! he promoted! he gave money to them, according to their different ranks and dispositions. Nor was his justice more bounteous in the reward of merit, than severe in the punishment of the want of it.

Under such a leader, what forces could withstand his soldiers? Under the discerning eye of such a prince, who was not actuated with ambition to distinguish himself in the execution of his duty, to obtain his favour? who dared to be guilty of disobedience or neglect, to incur his wrath?

From

From the field of battle, the victorious army was directly marched away to a siege, their success in which, was to open them an opportunity of attacking another army of the enemy with advantage.

Such a round of carnage was so shocking, that the virtues of my master were not a ballance to the horrors of his service, and I began to wish for a release from such a scene of *glory*, when an unexpected occasion shewed me his character in a light, that raised my admiration of him still higher.

As he was riding along the lines of his camp, the morning after the battle, reviewing a body of forces which he was detaching on a particular expedition, a man, in the habit of a private soldier, threw himself prostrate across his way, crying, 'Mercy! O great King! have mercy on the sufferings of a wretch in despair, and shew yourself the substitute of heaven by impartial justice.'—The guards and attendants on the king would have spurned the suppliant out of the way, but his majesty, struck with the strangeness of the address, and imagining it must proceed from some extraordinary cause, interposed, and bidding him arise, 'What is the grievance you complain of?' (said he with a placid look and encouraging accent) 'or against whom do you so solemnly implore justice?'

'O, great and good king' (replied the stranger, with an air that bespoke something above his present appearance) 'my griefs are too many to be told so concisely, as your present situation demands, and the justice I implore will require time, to divest nature of its strongest passions.'—'What can this mean?' (said the monarch in surprise) 'meet me directly at my tent, and expect that justice, which the simplicity of truth shall be entitled to, without these laboured exclamations.'—The business which his mind was intent upon, prevented the king's thinking any more of this affair, till he saw the man at his return to his tent; when calling to him, 'Now,' (said he,) 'speak your griefs with the boldness, but also with the guard of truth, and doubt not the redress of

‘ of justice.’—Encouraged by these words, the stranger bowing his head, and pausing a moment, as if to support his grief, began thus: ‘ So may the ear of heaven be ever open to thy petitions, O gracious king, as thou hast readily vouchsafed to hear my cries ! so may its justice redress thy wrongs, as thou shalt deal with mine. Thou seest before thee the most wretched of mankind, whom despair has reduced to the necessity of flying from the defence of his country, and imploring justice for his private wrongs, from the declared foe of my sovereign. But let me not waste your time with fruitless complaints. My name, though spoken with some respect in my native country, is too obscure to have reached your ears, as my ancestors wisely confined their virtues to private life, nor ever laboured to emblazon their names with titles, that too often marr the happiest of their owners.

‘ In their steps I trod, till the wrath of heaven kindled the ambition of princes, and my country became the theatre of their contention. I then thought it my duty to arise in its defence, and the justice of my motive drew success on my attempts. But while I vainly indulged the hope of being instrumental in delivering my country from the horrors of war, a foe broke into my house, thus destitute of its defender, and rifled all the treasures of my soul. O, my unhappy wife ! my newly-wedded, beauteous wife ! in vain didst thou call upon me in the hour of thy distress ! when the hand of the ravisher was twisted in thine hair, and the horrors of immediate ruin took possession of thy soul ! thy protector was away, busied in the defence of others, while the wolf was ravaging his deserted fold.’

‘ But whither does my distraction hurry me ? O pardon, gracious monarch, the inconsistencies of despair ! I will be brief ; I will not trespass on thy precious time.’—He paused then a moment, till a flood of tears eased the fulness of his heart, and then proceeded thus.

‘ In

‘ In the irruption of thy troops into *Bobemia*,
 ‘ about six months ago, my unhappy fortune led a
 ‘ party of them to my house, where the industry of
 ‘ my ancestors, for ages of peace, fell a sacrifice to
 ‘ the wantonness of unrestrained devastation in one
 ‘ moment. But I complain not of this. It was my
 ‘ share of the indiscriminate calamity, ‘ Alas ! my
 ‘ woes are of another nature.

‘ The beauty of my wife struck the very hardened
 ‘ hearts of the soldiers with such reverence, that
 ‘ in the fury of their outrage, they dared not to lay
 ‘ a sacrilegious hand on her : but this safeguard that
 ‘ protected her from rapine, only raised the more
 ‘ audacious rage of lust against her. The officer who
 ‘ commanded the party no sooner saw her, than in-
 ‘ flamed with brutal desire, he hurried her away with
 ‘ him to the camp, where imagination shrinks in hor-
 ‘ ror, from the thought of what she may have
 ‘ suffered.

‘ The news of my misfortune soon reached me :
 ‘ no restraints of military duty were of force to hold
 ‘ me a moment ; I flew to the scene of my ruin,
 ‘ where having learnt what I have now related to
 ‘ you, the greatness of my grief stupified me for a
 ‘ time, till the thought of my wife’s being still alive
 ‘ and in the possession of her ravisher, roused me to
 ‘ a resolution of labouring for her relief. I therefore
 ‘ immediately entered in disguise into those very
 ‘ troops, which had perpetrated my ruin, as I de-
 ‘ paired of eluding the vigilance of thy officers by
 ‘ any other means. My stratagem had success ; I
 ‘ soon learned that the officer, who had brought my
 ‘ wife from my house, had been obliged to give her
 ‘ up to his general, who had demanded her, as soon
 ‘ as she had been brought to the camp.

‘ A dawn of hope broke in upon me ; though I
 ‘ could not gain any account of her after this, I
 ‘ thought that a man, honoured with your particular
 ‘ esteem, must be possessed of virtue, and this I
 ‘ knew must be her protection.

‘ Big

‘ Big with this hope, I found means to rejoin my own corps, where my absence was easily excused, to a general who was my friend, and who readily yielded to my request of sending a tumpet, with a letter to enquire for such a lady, and to desire that she might be treated with the tenderness and respect due to her sex, and beauty, till she should be restored to her friends.’

‘ But all my fond hopes fell to the ground, when an answer was returned, that the general knew not of such a person. Despair now stared me in the face ; I saw all the horrors of my condition ; and would that instant have returned in my disguise, and stabb’d the ravisher at the head of his forces, had I not reflected that my *Theodora* might be only exposed by such an action, to new insults, and her life perhaps sacrificed in torture and ignominy to revenge.

‘ While I fluctuated in this distress, heaven inspired me with the thought of having recourse to your justice. Though he is the enemy of my sovereign, said I, he is a *man* who feels the tender impulse of humanity ; he is a *king*, who delights in justice ! I therefore reassumed my disguise, and entered into your camp, as a deserter the night before this battle, in which instinctive abhorrence of cowardice urged me to the duty of a soldier, and I happened to fight near your person ; where, though I was sensible of my crime, in assisting the enemy of my sovereign, I had this palliative consolation, that the forces I engaged were not my fellow subjects, but those of a perfidious ally, who entered into the war only to take his own advantage, when a proper opportunity should offer.

‘ This, O gracious king, is my unhappy story ; this is the grievance for which I implore thy justice ; for which I fought against the allies of my sovereign yesterday ; for which I threw myself before your horse’s feet this morning ; for which I now call upon you by that power, who has placed
‘ you

' you as his substitute on earth, and will require an account of thy stewardship. O justice ! justice ! justice !



C H A P. V.

The king sends for the general, and orders the stranger to be confined till his arrival. Continuation of the story of the stranger. A new trial of the king's fortitude and activity of soul.

THE king heard out the stranger's story without interruption, and then addressing himself to his officers and attendants round him, ' How unhappy' (said he) ' is the condition of princes, who must be answerable for the crimes of their servants, as if every man's own were not more than he can bear. ' I thought this man as upright as I knew him brave ; I thought justice and mercy attuned to valour in his breast. But perhaps he is wronged ; let us not judge too hastily ; go' (turning to one of his officers) ' bid him come to me directly, nor tell him a word of the occasion ; if he is guilty, he has forfeited my esteem for ever ; but if this complaint is only a calumny devised to exasperate me against one of my best friends, severely shall the author of it feel that justice, which he so solemnly implores. Let him therefore be taken into custody 'till the event decides the doubt ; but let him be treated with that humanity, which his apparent distress stands in need of ; nor let any hardship or indignity, give justice the appearance of prejudice, or seem to intimidate his resolution.' He then retired to enjoy those few moments of his life, which privacy enabled him to call his own.

His majesty's commands were so punctually obeyed, that the general arrived at the camp the very next day, where he immediately waited on his master who received him with his usual familiarity, and having

ing conferr'd with him for some time, on the situation of the affairs under his care, he led him to the door of his tent, where he had ordered the stranger to be brought to confront him, and then spoke thus, as if in continuation of his former discourse: 'It has ever been my strongest wish, my most positive command, that the calamities of this necessary war should fall as light as possible on the innocent subjects of those powers who have provoked it: particularly, I have always enjoined the strictest care to avoid every unnecessary devastation of private property, every appearance of cruelty or ill treatment to the defenceless weakness of the aged, of women, and children. What then must be my grief to find these orders disobeyed? to find that the ruins of the poor mark the marches of my armies, and the cries of private anguish arise to heaven against me? But these enormities shall not lie on my head, for neglect of punishing them; nor be persisted in on the hope of impunity. Were my right hand guilty of such crimes, I would cut it off with my left, rather than it should infect my mind.'

The solemnity with which the king spoke these words, struck all present with terror for the *accused*, who alone was ignorant of their design. The king saw the general concern, and to let the impression sink the deeper, he paused some moments before he proceeded; then turning short upon the general, with a determined look, and awful voice, 'Tell me' (said he) 'where is the woman whom thou hadst from the officer who brought her to the camp, when the forces under thy command entered into *Bohemia*? the woman whom the *Bohemian* general sent to inquire after in vain, and whom I fear thou didst deny, and still detainest for purposes too base to mention?'

The unexpectedness of this charge deprived the unhappy criminal of all presence of mind: he stood abashed, and the confusion of his looks too plainly betrayed his guilt. The king saw his distress with the greatest concern, but superior to every private re-

gard that could interfere with his sublimer character, 'Tell me where she is this instant!' (said he) 'nor aggravate by falsehood, crimes already too flagrant; for I will know the whole of this black affair.'

'O, sir!' (replied the general, throwing himself at his feet) 'I acknowledge my crime; but I cannot bear thy wrath; let me die this moment; let that punishment expiate my guilt; but afflict me no longer with thy displeasure, which is heavier than I can bear.'—'Where is the woman, speak?'—'Safe and inviolate in my tent. My intreaties have not been able to prevail on her virtue; and my passion was too delicate to seek gratification by force.'—'This moment let her be sent for! and let the cause of her coming be concealed from her: I will learn the truth of this strange affair from herself. In the mean time let her husband be treated with tenderness and respect. His misfortunes deserve compassion.'

The king had scarce said this, when an express arrived from another of his armies, which guarded his own dominions from the calamities of war, to inform him, that they had been repulsed with great loss, in an attack upon the army of the enemy, which was now in full march to his capital.—'Thy will be done, O God,' (said the king) 'thy will be done.'—And then without any appearance of surprise, or alteration in his looks, he instantly gave orders for a strong detachment of the army under his own command to march to the reinforcement of that which had suffered this loss, and retired to consider of the alterations which this event must necessarily occasion in the operations of the campaign, and write his several orders accordingly, for he was his own secretary.

But though his looks were thus easy, his heart severely felt this misfortune; 'O God' (said he, as soon as he was alone) 'when will thy wrath be appeased? When shall this people have rest? If I am the unhappy object of it, O let it fall on my head alone, but spare them! There is nothing certain in this life; nothing worth a wise man's care or regard; the victory with which it pleased thee to bless

' blefs our arms fo lately, raifed my hopes to a profpect of peace. But the fcene is now changed; and this advantage will raife the pride and malice of our enemies ftill higher, and make new deluges of blood neceffary, to bring them to a fenfe of reafon and juftice. Thy will be done, O Lord; but as it is not yet declared, it is our duty to make ufe of the means which thou haft put into our power, to accomplifh that end, which appears to us moft juft and advantageous. The horrors of war are ready to burft upon my country, after all my endeavours to fave it, and divert them elfewhere. But they fhall not un-oppofed; I myfelf will ftand in the breach, and defend my native country.'

The ferenity in the looks of the king, had deceived the fears of the army, and every one prepared to obey him with the greateft alacrity: and though this affair put the whole camp in motion, it occafioned neither diforder nor confufion. Active as light, the king was every where, *ordered* every thing, *faw* every thing prepared, as well for the convenience of his foldiers, as for the greateft poffible expedition of their march. His armies might be vanquifhed, for they were but men; but to deject or difcover his mind, was not in the power of any event.



CHAP. VI.

Conclusion of the ftory of the ft ranger. His wife arrives and acquits the general. The king's fpeech to him, and generofity to the ft rangers. CHRYSAL changes his fervice, and goes with them. Some general remarks on the character of the king of BULGARIA, and the probable confequences of the war.

BY this time the *Bohemian* lady arrived, whom the king ordered to be brought directly to his tent. The firft fight of this woman raifed emotions in his heart, which it had long been a ft ranger to. A beau-

ty that exceeded imagination, and a sweetness and expression in her looks beyond description, soon made him sensible, that all his heroism could not eradicate the passions of nature, and raised his pity, both for the unfortunate general, and for her husband.

He stood some moments gazing at her in silent astonishment; but recollecting himself soon, he addressed her thus, with the highest complacency and respect, in his look and accent. 'I have sent for you, madam, to this improper place, for the delicacy of your sex, to learn from yourself, the manner of your having been brought away from *Bohemia*, and the cause of your being since detained by the general of my army. Speak, madam, have you suffered any violence, any usage improper for your sex and merit? speak with the assurance of truth, and expect justice and redress.'

'O mighty king (said the lady, prostrating herself at his feet) oft have I heard of thy wondrous virtues; but never till this moment could I think that you could stoop so low, as to take notice of my wretchedness. My sad story is no more than this; I was torn from my house by an officer of your army; I was hurried away to the camp by him; and there insulted by the base offers of his love; but heaven delivered me from him. Your general heard of my distress, and rescued me from his power: since which time I have had no personal cause of complaint, beside the indiscriminate calamity of the wars, which have robbed me of my husband, and left me a friendless widow in the hand of mine enemies.'—A flood of tears here stopped her utterance.

The king, raising her from the ground, proceeded thus: 'A widow, madam, did you say; how long since have you lost your husband, and by what means did you hear of his death?'

'O sire! (replied she) as soon as I was freed from the horrors of brutal violence by the general, I wrote to my husband with his permission, but received no answer to many, very many letters. This
suf-

suspence was worse than death, and almost drove me to despair; till the general, at length, in compassion to my misery, wrote himself to the commander of the army in which my husband had served, who returned him for answer, that he had been killed about the time I was taken prisoner. O! happy had been my lot had I shared his fate!

'I hope, madam,' (said the king) 'you have received no injuries, that make you weary of life: I hope my general has not misbehaved himself to you.'

'O, sire!' (replied she) 'I have received no injuries besides the irreparable loss of my husband, after which I can have no desire to live. As for the general, he has always treated me with the greatest compassion and tenderness: but now will your majesty hear the voice of affliction? will you grant the only wish of an heart in despair? let me be conveyed to some religious house, where I may devote the sad remnant of my days to the service of heaven, far from the knowledge of the general and every other person, who has ever heard my name. I am sensible of the presumption of troubling you with this request; but to whom should we fly in the moment of distress, except to heaven, or its vicegerents, especially those whose virtues give its seal to their authority.'

'You may depend' (returned the king) 'upon every endeavour of my power, to make you happy. But, madam, what meant the particular mention of the general, in your desire of being retired from the knowledge of the world? Pray be ingenuous; I hope he has not transgressed the limits of his own virtue and my command.'

'O, sire!' (replied she) 'mistake not the incoherencies of distraction; the general has always treated me with respect and tenderness; tenderness in excess, for nothing can be hid from you, was the only thing my soul could disapprove in his behaviour. He offered me honourable love; but, alas, my husband! my dear husband has possession of this heart!'

there he is buried ! nor ever shall another love disturb his dear remembrance.'

' Madam, be comforted, (returned the king) such virtue as yours is the peculiar care of heaven ; you may be happy yet ; your husband may be still alive ; in the disorders of these unhappy times, many strange things happen ; many who are thought to be alive, are long since dead ; many who have been long thought dead are found to be alive.'—' *O fire ! what can your words import ? you would not jest with misery ! you cannot speak in vain ! O, am I yet to hope after so long despair ?*'——' Hope ! always hope ! but I shall send a proper person to explain my words.'

Saying this, the king went to the door of his tent, and seeing her husband bursting with anxiety and impatience, he called him, ' Go,' (said he) ' in there, and see what blessings heaven reserves for virtue ; go in alone ; such meltings of the soul as must attend your meeting, are too delicate to be exposed to other eyes.'

Then turning to the general, ' You have behaved nobly, my friend,' (said he) ' in such temptation, which was almost too great for human virtue ; had you injured such excellence, dear as you are to my heart, your life should have expiated the crime. But you have behaved nobly ; in such a trial, it is virtue to refrain from vice ; the errors you have fallen into are but the weaknesses of nature ; for to have been insensible to her beauty and perfections, would have argued a deficiency in humanity.—— But beware, my friend, of indulging those passions ; they enervate the heart and wean the soul insensibly from virtue ; the example is before thine eyes ; see how the violence of love, has been able to urge the noble heart of this woman's husband, to desert his charge, to enter into the service of his enemies, to fight against the dictates of his own conscience ; think of this, and be more cautious for the future ; the heart of a soldier has not room for love.'

The

The general, unable to reply, threw himself at his feet, and embraced his knees. 'I understand you,' (said the king, smiling) 'your passion is not quite cured; but you shall have employment to wear off this rust of idleness: return to your command this moment, and expect my farther orders.'

The general obeyed, and the king addressing those around him. 'To be without fault' (said he) 'were not to be a man; he is the best who has the smallest; and allowance is to be made for human frailty, where the temptation is too great for human virtue.'

As the king said this, the stranger and his wife came out together, and throwing themselves at his feet, bedewed them with tears of grateful extasy. 'Arise,' (said the monarch) 'and be happy in each other. I have restored you your wife,' (said he to the husband) 'and am ready to do you every further instance of justice, which you can demand.'

'My soul is satisfied, O gracious king; my soul is satisfied,' (replied he) 'I ask no more of heaven, but to reward your goodness, your justice and compassion.'

'But there is one thing more to be considered,' (said the king) 'your estate was wasted; your houses burned by my soldiers; I do not know the loss you may have suffered: take this' (giving him a large purse of gold) 'if that is not sufficient to repair it, when heaven in mercy to mankind shall bid the calamities of war to cease, if my life is spared, come to me, and I will remove every cause of your complaint. I do not ask you to enter into my service in this war, but if your honour, your conscience oppose it not, you may expect every encouragement due to your merit.'

'O sire! it is too much! your goodness overwhelms me! I will retire from the seat of war! I will implore heaven for your happiness and safety; and though I cannot, may not fight for you, my arm shall never more be raised against you.'

His wife and he then withdrew to prepare for their departure, leaving the king no less happy, in being the author of their happiness, than his goodness and bounty had made them.—I here quitted the service of this great prince, being in the purse which he gave to the stranger. The happiness which this pair experienced, in being thus unexpectedly restored to each other, is not to be expressed; the delicacy of their love being as much too sublime for description, as the sensuality of other scenes was beneath it. In a word; they wanted, they wished for nothing more, and to secure the possession of what they enjoyed, they resolved to go and live privately with his brother, an ecclesiastick in *Vienna*, till the war should be at an end, and they might with safety return to their own country. This resolution was soon taken; they applied for passports that evening, and left the camp the next morning.

Sick as I was of such a scene of blood, I own I could not leave this prince without reluctance. I see you are desirous that I should give you a character of him; but I must not gratify your curiosity; what I have told you of his actions may convince you, that he is the greatest of men: but humanity is too frail to be able to form any definitive judgment from his past, for his future life. Success may elevate; misfortune may sour his mind; and so overthrow that equality of it, which now raises him almost above man. His enemies are numerous and inveterate; his friends few, and hardly steady enough to be relied on: so that his dependance is solely on the attachment of his own subjects, on the strength of his own soul.

What will be the event of his fortune, is not permitted me to conjecture: This only I must say, that if he falls, it had been better for his country, for *Europe* in general, that he had never been born; as his struggles will exhaust their strength, and leave them an easy prey to a foe, (*the Turk*) whose silence makes them not apprehensive of him, but who laughs in his heart to see them thus do his work, and destroy against each other the forces, which might prevent his

his adding them to the number of the nations, which already groan under his yoke. A design which he certainly meditates, and will not lose a moment to put in execution, when the opportunity he watches for is ripe.



C H A P. VII.

CHRYSAI arrives in VIENNA, where he meets an old acquaintance. The history of his master's brother. His mission, labours, and success in ENGLAND. He is sent to PERU. He disapproves of the precipitancy of the measures carried on there, and returns to EUROPE to prepare matters better.

IF the immediate scene of the war was shocking, the appearance of the countries around it was rather worse. In the former, the hurry of action kept the mind too busy to attend to every minute distress: but here a dismal desolation opened a field for melancholy reflection, which every object added horrors to the lands laid waste; the villages in ashes; the inhabitants perishing in the fields and high roads, of wound, sickness, famine; and every various kind of misery, which the madness of human nature can inflict upon itself.

Through such monuments of military glory did we travel to *Vienna*, where my master and his wife were received with open arms by his brother, who insisted on their living in his house. The scene was here changed, from the tumults and wants of war, to all the luxury and ease of peace.

The moment I saw this ecclesiastick, I knew him to have been a member of the convent, to the head of which I had belonged in *Peru*. Thus unexpected meeting, at such a distance, raised a curiosity to know the cause of his removal, from a place where I thought I had left him settled, in all the happiness which riches and sensual pleasures could afford.

It was not long before this curiosity was gratified ; for the very evening after my master's arrival, he led him to walk in his garden, and sitting down under a tree, on the brink of a fountain, addressed him thus :

‘ It is many years, my dearest brother, since I had the happiness of seeing you last. Various have been the climates I have gone through ! various the vicissitudes of my fortune since that day ! from despair to exultation ! from royal affluence and power, to apprehension of perishing by famine, or in a prison. Wonder not at my words ; I will explain them to you in a short view of my life, which it is necessary I should give you, to prepare you for the participation of secrets, in which your assistance may be employed, in establishing the most extensive and firm power, which ever yet was raised upon this globe.—You may remember, though you were then very young, that the representations of the *Jesuit*, to whose care our education was committed, made such an impression upon me, that in despite of my father's threats and intreaties, I renounced my patrimony in your favour, and taking only a small sum of money to defray the expences of my journey, went directly to *Rome* with my tutor, where I readily obtained admission into *the Society of Jesus*, as soon as I had gone through the usual preparatory forms of education.

‘ Nothing remarkable happened to me during the first years of my being professed, my studies engrossing my whole time and attention, in which I made such a proficiency, that the general of the order, thought it proper to send me into the world, in the service of the society.

‘ The first stage of my mission was to *England*, whither I went to counteract the poison which was dispensing against us, by an apostate of our order, who under the pretence of employing his abilities in the service of the society, had been admitted to all the libraries, and suffered to take extracts from all the records of the church. But no sooner had he

‘ he made such a collection, as he thought sufficient for his purpose, than he fled to *England*, his native country, where renouncing his vows and religion, he turned the weapons which had been entrusted in his hands, for the defence of the church, against her, employing the abstracts he had made to the defamation of the character, and subversion of the power, of the *Holy-See*.

‘ My success in this my first negotiation (for in defiance of truth, reason, conscience, and common sense, by plausible insinuations, by forged certificates, or, which was the same thing, by certificates from people who would certify any thing in their own favour, against a man who attacked the very fundamentals of their power; by bribery, subornation, perjury, and every kind of artifice, I, in a great measure, defeated the design, and overturned the authority of his work) my success, I say, in this difficult undertaking, for he had gone out from among ourselves, and was versed in our whole science, encouraged the order to continue me in that mission, but in an higher office.

‘ The laws, religion, and government of the nation, were now the objects assigned to my attacks, in which I laboured with various success for some years, in every character which human volubility could assume. I was a quaker; a methodist; a deist; I wrote for the ministry, or against the government, as the prevailing humour of the day promised attention to my writings. The sea which flows around that island, being not more unsteady than the minds of the inhabitants, nor more liable to be ruffled by the winds of heaven, than they by every breath of popular rumour.

‘ I proceeded thus for some time, with various success, till happening to disclose some secret transactions, which were known there only to the persons concerned, and had been communicated to me from abroad, in order to sow dissention between the people and their governors, to the ruin of both; the conscious parties were alarmed, and my intelli-
gens.

‘ gence traced so secretly, that I had difficulty to escape by flight, from an ignominious death which the resentment of those, whose ruinous machinations I had thus discovered to their country, would certainly have brought me to.

‘ My failing in this attempt, in which thousands had failed before me, was no prejudice to my character, nor in the least lessened me in the opinion of the order. On the contrary, the efforts I had made were so daring, so deeply laid, and so well conducted, that I was now judged a proper person to be employed in greater matters.

‘ I was therefore sent, the next year, to what is called *the Spanish* world, but is really *the Jesuits* heaven in *America*, where matters of the highest moment were just ripe for execution.—When I came there, I found things in a forwardness, too great for their foundation; the eagerness of some of our people, hurrying on events, before proper preparation had ensured their success. In short, they were ready to revolt from *Spain* and *Portugal*, before they had made provisions to support themselves in such an attempt. They wanted European officers, soldiers, arms, and ammunition, for on the natives there is no dependance; but, above all, the time was unfavourable. The powers they meant to attack in this vital part, were at peace with all the world, and consequently at liberty to turn their whole force against them.

‘ I therefore counselled them to moderate their zeal, and wait till better preparations, and a more favourable minute should make their success more probable. But they would not hearken to my advice, but attributed it to envy, or want of resolution: on which I left them to their own ill-fortune, and hastened home to provide a remedy, for evils which I could not prevent.’

CHAP. VIII.

C H A P. VIII.

Continuation of the Jesuit's discourse. He shews the promising situation of his affairs at present. The concise method by which SPAIN and PORTUGAL are to be brought into the war with ENGLAND. He proposes to his brother to join in the general, that he may accomplish his particular design.

THE event has confirmed my opinion ; by striking too soon, the blow has been ineffectual. However things, though disconcerted by this precipitancy, are not quite ruined ; and care may yet repair the effects of their folly.

In this cause I now labour, in concert with others of my brethren, in every court of *Europe* ; and I have the satisfaction to think that we have a prospect of success. The only obstacle that retards us at present, is the difficulty of making the courts of *Spain and Portugal* enter into the war against *England*. Could we bring this to bear, our work would be easy. The mighty naval power of *England*, will not only prevent their sending over forces to oppress us, before we can establish our power, but will also assist us to carry on the war, to share in the spoil, and distress their enemies.

But while the present kings are on the thrones of those kingdoms, it will be scarcely possible to bring our designs to perfection, they are so utterly averse to hazarding the consequences of a war, with a nation from whose alliance they receive such advantages. The first thing therefore which we do must be to remove them. The former has already swallowed his death, though the process will be so slow as to escape suspicion ; with the other, such caution is not necessary, nor is there time for it. The arm is already lifted against him, for a stroke that will terrify the world.

When

‘ When these obstacles are removed, the execution
 ‘ of our designs will meet with no farther delay.
 ‘ The successors to these princes we have secured
 ‘ such an influence on, that we can work them to
 ‘ whatever we please, and have already poisoned
 ‘ their minds with prejudices against *England*.*

‘ To provide officers of approved fidelity and ex-
 ‘ perience to command our forces, is the next object
 ‘ of our care. Shall I candidly own to you, that
 ‘ such a length of time, and multiplicity of affairs,
 ‘ had almost obliterated all the remembrance of my
 ‘ family ; but the moment I heard your name menti-
 ‘ oned, with the respect due to your merits in the
 ‘ present war, a flood of infant fondness melted my
 ‘ heart, and tears of tenderest joy acknowledged that
 ‘ I had a brother. I immediately gave notice to our
 ‘ general, and by his order, am empowered to treat
 ‘ thus with you.

‘ On my engagement for your fidelity, for your
 ‘ abilities are known to be far superior to any that
 ‘ shall oppose you, I am commissioned to offer you
 ‘ the supreme command of all our forces, in this great
 ‘ undertaking. With what joy I make this offer, the
 ‘ pleasure that you would feel in serving your bro-
 ‘ ther, can best enable you to judge.

‘ Though I will tell you farther, that mine is
 ‘ raised higher than common feelings can convey a
 ‘ notion of. I have hitherto only unfolded the gene-
 ‘ ral design of our order, in which I am but a party,
 ‘ though a principal and material one. But shall I tell
 ‘ you also, that my designs terminate not with their’s :
 ‘ as your command will make you master of all their
 ‘ force ; and as power is the consequence of that,
 ‘ you will be able to confer it where you please ; or
 ‘ indeed rather to retain it in your own hands, while
 ‘ I shall only ease you of the trouble of conducting and
 ‘ establishing the policy of an infant state.

‘ This

* *The conduct of the present king of SPAIN, hitherto, shows that the Jesuits had formed a wrong opinion of him at least.*

‘This was my motive for writing to you so pressing, to come to me to *Vienna*. This is the end which I have been labouring for all my life. I am advanced in years, and shall never marry to beget any heir ; you are young and will have many. Assist me therefore to acquire a throne, which must descend to your posterity ; a throne, which by holding it at first, as under the sovereignty of the order, will soon be established by them, even beyond their own power to shake.

‘I have now unbosomed myself to my brother, with all the confidence of so near an alliance. You will perhaps wonder at my openness, with one whom I have not seen since he was a child. But I know your character in life : and, above all, I know myself safe from being betrayed, because the information would not be received.

‘Consider, therefore, whether you will embrace this offer ; whether you will reign in a splendour that would dazzle the eyes of the greatest prince in Europe, or live here in slavery and dependance ! The alternative will not admit a moment’s hesitation. I see you yield. I will acquaint our general with it ; you and your wife shall remain here with me, till the proper time for all our departure comes, which will depend on circumstances, not yet settled. In the mean time we shall have an opportunity of conferring on these subjects together, and preparing all things for our undertaking, in a manner that shall ensure success.

Though my master made no reply to this proposal that testified the least disapprobation of it, I could easily see that many parts of the scheme affected him with the strongest abhorrence ; at the same time that the offer of royalty, was a temptation that shook his resolution, and almost vanquished his virtue.

His brother saw the conflict in his heart with pleasure : had he yielded readily, and without reluctance, he should have withdrawn his confidence from such a depravity of soul ; and the struggle convinced him that

that he was his own, as he knew that the man, as well as the woman, who deliberates between virtue and vice is lost.

XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX

C H A P. IX.

The Jesuits proceeds to shew the rise of the war in GERMANY, and explains the motives of the several parties engaged in it, as also of the neutrality observed by some particular states.

THE Jesuit the next evening resumed the conversation, and to remove every doubt of success, that might deter his brother from joining in his designs, proceeded thus,

‘ My brother, (said he) there is nothing so disgusting to a rational man, as the mistakes and blunders which passion, prejudice, pride, and ignorance, produce, in the conduct of all the courts in the world, even ours at Rome not being quite exempt from them, though the freest of all others. As for this of Vienna, it is at present a scene, where every absurd, every destructive passion rules.—Among these must you seek for the sources of the present war, that lays all Germany waste: Female pride, piqued by some slighting expressions, from one esteemed inferior in rank, and stimulated by a desire of recovering by surprise, what had been yielded, or rather extorted by treaty, influenced this sagacious court, in conjunction with that of Saxony, to form designs against the king of Bulgaria, but the vigilance of that monarch prevented their designs, of which he had timely notice, and before their schemes were ripe for execution, he boldly attacked them, and so anticipated the blow meditated against him.

‘ So daring a step surprised all Europe, and influenced many who were unacquainted with the motives of it, to take part against him, while more did

‘ did it for private advantage.—Of these *France* was the first; who concluding a league with her antient enemy, in despite of family animosity, has entered into a war, that seems not to concern her at all; nor indeed does it in the obvious consequences of it, but she has farther designs in view, and in return for the assistance she gives to crush this prince, is to receive from the house of *Austria* these dominions in the *Netherlands*, which have cost the greatest part of *Europe* such deluges of blood, for above a century, to keep out of her hands: while this court, inattentive to the consequences that must attend *France’s* getting possession of these long-contested places, has blindly, basely entered into a league with a family, that has been labouring her ruin for so many ages, and betrayed the confidence of all the states, who have supported her in them. The other nations who have acceded to this alliance, have acted from motives merely mercenary in the first view, fighting for the pay promised them by the *Imperial* and *French* courts, the latter of whom has stretched her generosity so far, as to undertake to support her new ally with money, as well as men.

‘ But it is not improbable, that they may all be disappointed, and the king of *Bulgaria* not only escape the ruin meditated against him, but also retort it on the machinators, one of the principal of whom, the *Saxon*, has already had abundant cause to repent of his undertaking. As for this court, it now fights *pro aris & focis*, as may be said; for if that hero is victorious, nothing less is to be expected here, than the total loss of the imperial dignity, of whose authority there wants not many instances of the most flagrant abuse, to vindicate such a revolution.

‘ But of all the effects of this unnatural combination, there is not one more base, than the ingratitude with which this court has behaved to that of *England*, whose blood and treasure have often supported

‘ por’d it against the power of *France*, when every other human assistance had deserted it; and established it in its present grandeur, almost at the price of its own ruin.—But now all those benefits are forgot, and because *England* will not tamely look on, (if not perhaps assist) to see the fabrick, which she has erected at so vast an expence overturned to gratify a blind caprice, and a prince allied to her by blood and interest, sacrificed to avarice and pride, all her former services are held as cancelled, and herself treated with the rancour of the greatest enemy.

‘ While *England* thus supports her character of generosity, and acts with prudence; the *Dutch*, as if infatuated, stand quietly to see the barrier which cost themselves even, so much in erecting for their defence, thus given away to every power against whom it was erected; and who, they cannot be insensible, means nothing less than their ruin, as soon as it can strike the blow to effect. But such is the degeneracy of that people from every sentiment of virtue, publick and private, that they will not give up the opportunity of present gain, to save their state from so evident, so imminent ruin; vainly, perhaps, expecting that *England* will still pursue the schemes of *knight-errantry*, which have so long made her fight the quarrels of her neighbours, while they themselves looked on almost as if unconcerned in the event; and will be moved by the cries of the *distressed states*, to remedy the mistakes, and repair the losses of their *Highb-Myghtinesses*.

‘ While every other state in *Europe* is thus employed, *Spain* and *Portugal* enjoy all the advantages of peace, prudently taking no part in a war which does not in the least concern them. Of these, the former, like the old lion in the fable, is only terrible to ignorant apprehension, on account of what it has been, and is now pacifick and harmless, because it no longer has the power of doing harm. Sensible of this weakness, it sleeps in the shadow of a mighty name, and mixes not in disputes which must only
‘ draw

draw it into difficulties, without any prospect of advantage to engage it in the attempt. But it must not be let to enjoy this state of tranquillity, so contrary to our designs, any longer; and as the present government there is determined to persist in the measures that support it, it must be overturned to make way for those, who will be more obedient to our advice.

A method which we must also pursue with *Portugal*; for though its strength is almost beneath the rank of an independant, much less a royal state, yet upon the account of its wealth, which might hire forces to oppress us, it must be worked up to take the same step and break with *England*, as I have said before, to which it has already made large advances, by several most unjust, and injudicious encroachments, on the trade of that nation.

As for the war between *France* and *England*, it arises solely from the contradiction between the interests of the two nations, which nature has set in an opposition impossible to be reconciled. But the seat of this war is so remote from hence, that it would have no influence on the affairs of *Europe*, did not the successes of the *English* prevent *France* from giving the assistance that was expected, and might be effectual to the designs of this court, for they have so absolutely ruined her trade, that she is no longer able to fulfil her engagements with *Russia* particularly, and the several courts of *Germany*, whom she undertook to pay, for fighting the quarrel of her ally; so that the former, who had no other motive but the money, for entering into the war at first, will of course, and the latter must of necessity, desert that cause, not having any internal support of their own, since this has failed them. Indeed the *Russians*, finding all the mighty promises which were made them, vanish into air, begin to be sick of their bargain already, and long again for the solid advantages of their alliance with *England*. As for this court, it is now making its last effort, and

‘ and if this is eluded or defeated, it has no other resource, than shamefully to receive law from a Prince, upon whom it made so unjust an attempt.’



CHAP. X.

Conclusion of the Jesuit's discourse. His systems of morality and religion. His brother yields to his arguments, with some particular exceptions. CHRYSALE changes his service.

‘ THIS short but distinct view of the present situation of the affairs of *Europe*, must convince you that a general peace must soon be concluded, the parties that would, not being able to continue the war much longer; and therefore we must be speedy in the execution of our designs, or the opportunity will be lost; for it would be impossible to make even the pride of *Spain*, or the avarice of *Portugal*, take the measures we want, at a time when *England* is disengaged from any other enemies. I have drawn this sketch to shew you, that our designs are not rashly undertaken, but the result of the deepest knowledge and insight into things. This must remove every scruple that may arise from doubt of success.—But there is one thing more, which must be explained, to remove prejudices of another nature, which may perhaps represent our undertaking in a wrong light to you; and this is to evince the justice of it, and of the means designed to accomplish its success.—

‘ Of this matter you must not pretend to judge by the vulgar rules, obtruded by design, upon the ignorance of the world, and which no wise man observes, who has it in his power to break them with impunity.—Man is thrown into this world by nature, to obtain his own happiness, by every means within his power: this is too sublime a truth for vulgar know-

‘ knowledge, as it would put an end to the delusion,
 ‘ by which the wise, keep the herd of mankind in an
 ‘ ignorance and subjection.

‘ But that it is really the truth, and as such made
 ‘ the rule of action, by all the states and princes in
 ‘ the world, will not be denied, nor even doubted by
 ‘ any one, who has considered the systems of policy
 ‘ and government, which are, and ever have been
 ‘ established by them.

‘ For if it was not an undoubted maxim, that power
 ‘ constitutes the rule of justice, how inconsistent
 ‘ would be the actions of all mankind? How could a
 ‘ state devise laws to punish a man with death, who
 ‘ goes into his neighbour’s field, and steals his ox,
 ‘ and, at the same time, sends armies to invade,
 ‘ spoil, and depopulate the territories of their neigh-
 ‘ bours? How could a poor pirate be hanged for
 ‘ robbing a single ship, and fleets immediately after
 ‘ sent avowedly to destroy the whole trade of the
 ‘ same nation? If a state of war is alledged, that is
 ‘ the very imposition of which I spoke. Every man
 ‘ has as good a *natural* right to declare war with his
 ‘ neighbour, as the state he lives in, has with ano-
 ‘ ther state; and every right that is not natural, is
 ‘ an usurpation, and void. This is the true philo-
 ‘ sophy of life, stripped of the idle dreams of enthu-
 ‘ siasm, and selfish misrepresentations of design.

‘ As for religion, look over the whole race of
 ‘ mankind, and try if you can find one who practices
 ‘ what he professes: this is an incontestable proof;
 ‘ that none believe it; as it is also, that there is no
 ‘ necessity they should, else would the want of faith
 ‘ and obedience be punished, by that power which is
 ‘ thought to enjoy them; whereas, on the contrary,
 ‘ it is always most successful, as it affords means
 ‘ which those restraints forbid: I observed, that in
 ‘ the beginning of our conversation on this subject,
 ‘ you seemed shocked, at my mentioning the neces-
 ‘ sity of removing the persons who oppose our de-
 ‘ signs, and particularly when I said, the *Spaniard* had
 ‘ swallowed his death. But this is all prejudice, and
 ‘ want

The first event, worth remark, that occurred to us, (for the nature of war, and its operations in general have been sufficiently explained before) was in the army of the allies of the king of *Bulgaria*, into which my master entered, in the character of a Jewish agent. This army was composed of the forces of several of the smaller *German* states (who were hired by the *English* to defend their own liberties) a small number of *Bulgarians*, and a considerable body of *English* troops.

You are surprised to hear, that people should require to be paid to fight for themselves, in so interesting a cause; but so it is, and so will continue to be, while a number of little sovereigns assume the state, and live in the luxury of the greatest kings: for as their own revenues are insufficient to support the expence, they will be ready to sell themselves to the first that offers, for an immediate supply, without looking forward to, or regarding the consequences of such inconsiderate, such wretched venality. They have indeed this excuse, which the general depravity of mankind seems to justify their alledging, that as their ruin would involve greater states, in some inconveniencies, they find these will rather submit to this gross imposition, than suffer them to be swallowed up by others, who would grow too powerful by this accretion.

Base as such a prostitution of principle must appear, it has been so successfully practiced, (and this not by those poorer princes alone; the *Austrians* and *Spaniards* occasionally, and the *Dutch* constantly availing themselves of it) that *England* in particular has been drawn in, to bear a part, from which, by her situation, she seemed exempt by heaven in every war that has distracted *Europe*, for some ages, to an expence of blood and treasure, which is already severely felt, and must, if pursued much farther, involve it in the very ruin, it thus strives to avert.

There is one, and only one remedy for this; but that is attended with difficulties, which will prevent its being applied, till the evil itself shall work its own redress;

redress : a period, that to human foresight seems not far distant at present. This is taking away the power of those petty tyrants, who disgrace the name of sovereigns, and uniting their territories into one state, of strength sufficient to support itself. For while those princes have any power left, they will, consistently with their present systems of policy, oppose this; but the manner in which they have conducted themselves, in this present war, if not speedily altered, will so effectually reduce that power, that they will be no longer able to resist, but must passively submit to the dominion of whoever will undertake their support : an event as much to be desired by their own immediate subjects, as by the other states, which thus suffer by their absurd iniquitous conduct ; as the severest form of one government, is preferable to the capricious rule of several tyrants, whose poverty and pride put them upon every method of making the most of their wretched people, without any regard to the established rules of justice, or even the common rights of humanity. The usual objection to this expedient, of its overturning the liberty of *Germany*, which they make so great a noise about, is of no weight ; that boasted liberty being, at present, no more than the power of those sovereigns, to treat their subjects as they please, with impunity, the restraining of which, within just bounds, would really be establishing, not overturning, the liberty of mankind.

As to the war, in which the *English* were at this time engaged, it was not to be ascribed solely to this cause. The insatiable ambition of the *French*, had prompted them to strive for the enlargement of their territories in *America*, where they already possessed an hundred times more, than they were able to make any use of. The possessions of the *English* in that part of the globe, were also uselessly extensive ; however, the boundaries having been settled between them, usurpations were not to be tolerated, consistently with the honour of the state ; beside, if they were taken no notice of in the beginning, they might

in time possibly be extended, to the profitable and inhabited parts of their dominions. On this account a war was kindled between those powerful and jealous neighbours, the seat of which was properly transferred by the *English*, to the place in which the attack was made upon them; where the superiority of their naval force, gave them such advantages, that they not only recovered the places, which had been taken from them, but also absolutely overturned the *French* power, in those boundless regions, and pursued their conquests in every other part of the world, where the *French* had made settlements, to the utter ruin of their naval power and trade.

As it was impossible for the *French* to recover these losses directly, and the ambition and avarice, which first gave occasion to the war, was now strengthened by pride, to prevent their making the concessions, on which they might have obtained peace, they removed the seat of the war into *Germany*, and attacked certain powers there, with whom *England* was so inseparably connected, that it could not avoid flying to their assistance, in expectation of having all their own losses restored, in return for these territories, if they could get possession of them, which the number of their own land forces, and the alliances they knew they could make among the venal *Germans*, gave them hopes of accomplishing; a scheme not ill-founded, as every motive of honour and justice obliged the *English* to protect, and indemnify an innocent people, attacked thus solely upon their account. As the *French* at the same time, that they made this attack, had also entered into the confederacy against the king of *Bulgaria*, as has been already mentioned, this necessarily cemented the alliance between him and *England* still closer, and made him join as many of his troops as he could possibly spare, to the army raised by the *England*, upon this indispensable occasion, from which conduct he received this immediate advantage, that this army engaged the attention of the *French*, and prevented their joining their forces to the number of his enemies; beside a considerable assistance

sistance in money, to enable him to support his own troops.

It was necessary for me, to give you this short explanation of the nature of this war, though such digressions are contrary to my design and inclination, that you may be able to form a proper judgment of the extraordinary occurrences, I am going to relate to you.

The army, through which my master was obliged to pass, as I have said, though paid by *England*, and the flower of it composed of *Britons*, was commanded by a *German* general, in disgraceful acknowledgement, of the want of military merit, equal to such a charge in the natives: though to palliate the disgrace, and satisfy the jealousy of the *English*, they had the imaginary privilege of being immediately under a commander of their own, and subject only to their own laws, in all things, except the operations of the war, when they were of necessity to obey the *German* commander in chief.

Such distinctions create animosities, often more prejudicial, than the inconvenience they were meant to prevent. Accustomed to live in the most luxurious plenty and ease, and valuing themselves upon the riches of their country, which supported the whole army, the *English* found fault with the victuals and accommodations provided for them, and treated the *German* troops, with which they were joined, with contempt, who, in return, affected to despise their delicacy, and took the advantage of their want of knowledge of the language of the country, to give such impressions of them, as prevented the people from bringing them in provisions, with that care and cheerfulness, which their prompt and generous payment deserved; by which means they suffered the inconveniencies of scarcity and dearth, while the others abounded.

Though such feuds among the men threatened the most dangerous consequences, those whose authority ought to put a stop to them, were far from striving to restore that harmony, which alone could give

success to their designs. The commander in chief, either overlooked as beneath his notice, or was prevented by his attention to the military operations of the campaign, from taking notice of these misunderstandings; and the *English* commander, ambitious probably of the supreme command, which he imagined he might easily obtain, if he could make the other sufficiently obnoxious to the *English*, inflamed them by every artifice he could use.

Nor did he stop here; whenever he was summoned in consequence of his high station, for he was second in command in the whole army, to attend councils for concerting the operations of the war, he made it his common practice to contradict, whatever was proposed by the commander, and to treat all his schemes with contempt, without ever attempting to offer any thing himself in their place; and this he did the more effectually, as he was a ready and powerful speaker, and perfectly versed in the theory of war; whereas the commander was a thoughtful, reserved man, of few words, whose whole life had been spent in action, and who could more easily have executed, than explained his designs.

The consequences of this disagreement were very detrimental while it lasted, and must in the end have proved fatal to the army, had not the *German*, without ever attempting to discuss the affair with his worthy antagonist, written directly to the *British* sovereign, to inform him, that he was so constantly opposed in all his designs, by the *English* general, that it was impossible for him to do any thing of moment; wherefore he desired, either that he might have leave to resign his command, or have his authority freed from this vexatious and dangerous opposition; concluding his letter with these remarkable words, —“ Though in a multitude of counsellors there is said to be much safety; yet in the operations of war, if many are privy to the councils which direct them, there never can be that secrecy, agreement, and dispatch, which are indispensibly necessary to success.” —

The

The monarch, who was no stranger to the capacious, and unquiet disposition of the *English* general, was sensible of the justice of the *German's* complaint, and immediately removed the cause of it, by giving him an unlimited power, to carry on the war, as should appear best to his own private judgment, without consulting with, or being liable to be opposed by any other person.

It may be thought, that the entire removal of the *English* general, would have been a readier and more effectual method; but the nature of the *English* government made this not quite so proper; as he was descended from one of the most illustrious and powerful families in the kingdom, and a member of the senate, in which his talent for speaking gave him such weight, that it was judged best, to avoid giving him cause for exerting his abilities, in opposition to the measures of the government, by removing him from an employment, which he had solicited, with all his power and interest; especially, as the immense expence of his army began to make the people uneasy, and ready to receive any impression against it. But the event shewed that this caution was ineffectual, and productive of greater evils than that which it was made use of to avoid.

Accordingly, from the time the *German* general received this enlargement of his authority, he planned his schemes, without ever consulting any person, or ever communicating the least hint of them, till the very moment of their being put in execution, when he sent his orders with the peremptory precision of an absolute sovereign. This was a severe stroke upon the *English* general, who had been accustomed to canvas the very commands of his king, and therefore could badly brook such subordination, to a person, whom he affected to hold in contempt, for the inferiority of his understanding. However, as it was in vain to dispute, he obeyed in sullen silence, resolved to seize the first opportunity of defeating his measures, since he could no longer disconcert his councils; and to take hold of the least miscarriage, to at-

tack him in the *British* senate, at the end of the campaign, where he doubted not, but he should be able to represent things in such a light, as to have him removed from the command, which must of course devolve upon himself.

This account my master received from a Jesuit, the very night he arrived at the camp, who, to ingratiate the society the more effectually with the *French* king, and secure his interest and protection, should any unforeseen accident defeat their design, had entered into the service of the *English* general, as his valet-de-chambre, for the better opportunity of discovering the schemes of the allies, which he gave constant intelligence of to their enemies.



C H A P. XII.

A deep-laid scheme disconcerted by an accidental victory. Treachery falls into the pit, it had dug for another. The true way to satisfy ENGLISH soldiers. The disgraced commander's motives for appealing from the will of his sovereign, to a public trial. His hopes are again disappointed, and he confirms his own ruin.

THE very morning after my master's arrival in the camp, an event happened that astonished all *Europe*. The *French* army was so greatly superior to that of the allies, that the general was obliged to be entirely upon the defensive, nor had his consummate experience, and indefatigable assiduity, been able to prevent their taking several advantages by their numbers, and forcing him to a retreat, that seemed to threaten the loss of the country he was to defend. But through all these difficulties, he persisted steadily, in his own plan, and preserved his attention cool and ready, to take any advantage that might offer.

Accordingly that morning, upon notice of some motions of the enemy, that indicated a design of attacking

tacking him, he ordered a small, but select body of forces, almost all of them *English*, to advance towards them, and receive their charge, while he should make a proper disposition of the rest of his army, to give the enemy battle, or make a secure retreat, as he should see expedient ; but the unexampled behaviour of those few brave troops soon changed the face of the affair ; for not content with repelling the attack of the main body of the enemy's army, they intrepidly advanced to charge them, in their turn, which they did with such irresistible valour, that the *French* were thrown into confusion, and obliged to abandon the field of battle.

I have said before, that the transactions in a battle are so complicated, and confounded with each other, that it is impossible to reduce them into the regularity of a satisfactory description ; I shall therefore, enter no farther into the account of this, than just as it concerns the conduct of the *English* general, which I had a sufficient opportunity of observing, my master having placed himself near his person, in company with his friend.

The moment the commander in chief received an account, of the unexpected effects of the valour of the troops, which he had ordered to march towards the enemy, he sent to the *English* general, who commanded all the horse in that wing, to advance and sustain them. It is impossible to describe his situation, when a messenger from the general informed him, that a party of the army was engaged, in the plain that lay before him, and ordered him to march the cavalry, under his command, to their assistance. Surprise, and resentment, at such a measure's being taken, without his having the least previous notice of it, almost deprived him of his reason ; but he recovered himself in a moment, and drawing his sword, with an air of indignation and discontent, was just preparing to obey the orders he had received, when another messenger arrived, and delivered them, but, with some variation.

This the general instantly perceived, and resolved to take advantage of, to justify his obeying neither, in hopes, by that means, to accomplish his scheme of defeating the measures of his commander, without any regard to the consequences that must attend such a conduct. Accordingly, instead of advancing, as he had before prepared to do, he entered into a debate with the messengers, about this difference in their orders, and finding each positive in those he delivered, he coolly determined to go himself to the general, for an explanation of them, by trifling away the critical moment, in which manner he expected that the part of the allied army, which was engaged, would be beaten for want of a proper and timely support, when he might have the glory of covering their retreat, and saving the whole army from a defeat, and the pleasure of effectually ruining the character of the general, by attributing the whole misfortune, to his not taking the advice of his council, or even communicating his designs to them in proper time.

Such a scheme was but too likely to succeed, had not the unparalleled bravery of the troops, whom he thus designed to have sacrificed to his ambition and resentment, disappointed it beyond all human probability, as I have observed before, and actually beaten the whole army of the enemy, though ten times their number, out of the field, while he was taking advantage of a pretext to abandon them to ruin.

The situation of his mind, when, upon his coming up to the general, he heard the victory was won, may be better conceived than described. The cool distant reception he met with, gave him notice of the storm which was ready to burst over his head: and he saw that the scheme he had laid so deeply, to perpetrate the ruin of another, had inevitably worked his own, as the very accusations which he had intended to bring against his general, would now recoil upon himself with tenfold force.

According to his fears, the general next morning publicly passed an implicit censure on his conduct, which

which he saw received with such universal approbation, that he thought it proper to resign his command, for fear of personal insult from the incensed soldiers, and return home, where he did not doubt, but the interest of his family, and his own eloquence and address, would vindicate his character, at least; if not still accomplish his designs against the general.

Though I lost sight of him, at this time, yet as I had an opportunity afterwards of coming to this whole affair, I think it better, and less troublesome to us both, to continue the account here, than break my narrative with it in another place.

The first construction which was put upon his conduct, was that it proceeded from cowardice; an opinion, which the cruelty of his temper, to those under his command, gave no small weight to, from this generally just maxim, that *the cruel are always cowards*; and which many insignificant parts of his former conduct, were alledged to confirm; but I have shewn, that it sprung from another, much less justifiable cause; I say, less justifiable, as cowardice is a natural infirmity, which a man is no more accountable for, than for his being born blind or lame; but such a scheme, as his, was a premeditated crime, and aggravated with the blackest circumstances.

The first consequence of his quitting the army was a perfect harmony, between the *English* and *Germans*; the glory they had acquired upon this occasion, raising the spirits of the former so high, that they thought no more of the inconveniencies they had complained of before, but readily followed the example of their new commander; whom they all loved; and entered into friendship with their fellow soldiers, as if there had never been any jealousy between them; who on the other hand were so struck, with their gallant behaviour, and so sensible of the advantages gained by it, that they no longer accused them of improper delicacy, or strove to do them ill offices with the natives of the country as before. But what completed the happiness of the *English*, was the commander in chief's indulging their natural

thirst for glory under their present commander, by giving them the post of honour upon all occasions, and taking public notice of their valour, the honour of which, they esteemed a sufficient recompence for the severest fatigues and dangers: an indulgence, which it was not in his power to give before, as their late commander had always opposed their being exposed to danger, out of an affected regard to them, as if they were of greater consequence than the rest of the army, or joined it only to make a figure, and not do any service.

As soon as the late general arrived in *England*, his sovereign, who had been informed of the whole affair, immediately deprived him of his many lucrative and honourable employments, and dismissed him his service; an instance of clemency, which few other princes would have shewn, and which regard to the merits of his illustrious ancestors alone procured for him.

But so far was he from having a proper sense of this lenity; or acquiescing in the sentence of his sovereign, that he loudly asserted his being wronged, and demanded a trial, to vindicate his character, with all the assurance of conscious innocence.

This was the highest insult that could be offered to a prince, as it impeached his justice, and questioned his power in the tenderest point; however, he scorned to take any advantage of it, but waving every personal resentment, condescended to grant the trial demanded; but with this express declaration, that as it was at the instance of the party, and without any legal necessity, he should abide by the sentence of his judges, be it what it would, as he would never interfere farther. But this declaration was of little weight, for the general was well advised, before he solicited the trial, that according to the laws of the country, he was exempted from the danger of it, by his being deprived of all his military employments, as they only made a *Briton* subject to military law, by which he must be tried; and this exemption was the real reason of his being so eager for a trial.

But

But though his life might be out of danger by this subterfuge, the trial completed the ruin of his character, beyond all possibility of recovery ; as upon the most impartial examination, his neglect of the orders of his commander, and the pernicious consequences of it, by the loss of so favourable an opportunity, of entirely ruining the army of the enemy, and perhaps putting an end to the war, by that means, appeared so plainly, that the justice of his being dismissed the service was not only asserted, but he was also declared incapable of ever being admitted into it again, and thus he fell a second time a victim to his own schemes. As to the victory, which had been the immediate cause of his ruin, as soon as the circumstances of it, as related here, came to be known to the world, the general lost the glory, which in the first emotions of joy and admiration, had been so lavishly heaped upon him for it ; and it was justly ascribed to accident, as human foresight could not possibly have formed any plan, for such an improbable instance of bravery, as that which obtained it.



C. H. A. P. XIII.

CHRYSALE arrives in BRUSSELS. The great source of jesuitical influence. Anecdotes of a man of pleasure, and a lady of fashion. Their history concluded in character.

AS soon as the confusion of such an event was a little over ; and my master thought he could travel in safety, he quitted the camp of the conquerors, and throwing off the character of a Jew, which, as I said, he had born there, pursued his journey to *Brussels*, in his own, where he was to receive further instructions ; for though *the great design* was carried on, by every member of the society, yet the real secret of it was known only to a few of the heads, whose orders the rest obeyed with an implicit exactness.

ness, fidelity, and zeal, never equalled by the subjects of any sovereign upon earth, since the days of *the old man of the mountain*.

It was some time before these instructions arrived ; which gave me an opportunity of learning the intrigues of that debauched, gaudy, insignificant court, by my master's intimacy with the confessor of the Governor, who, beside the advantages of that character, to gain information, was himself a man of pleasure, in the most extensive sense of the phrase, and utterly free from every restraint of principle that could oppose its gratification ; though he had the address to maintain the dignity of his station, by his secrecy, and regard to propriety of appearance.

There is nothing that contributes so much to the influence, which the Jesuits possess over the minds of people, as the knowledge of the secret history of their lives. To acquire this, they stop at nothing ; they assume all characters, mix in all companies, and enter into every scene of vicious pleasure, where reserve is thrown off, and the whole heart appears without disguise. Such an opportunity of information therefore was not to be missed. Accordingly, the evening after my master's arrival, he went with his friend to court, where they had a liberty of placing themselves, in a convenient situation to see all the company, and make their remarks, without danger of being over-heard ; such as was merely political, I shall omit, as I am sick of such a stupid subject, and only take notice of those, which may extend your knowledge of the human heart:—‘ Observe that ‘ little, mean-looking, ill-formed person.’ (said the confessor, continuing a conversation, the beginning of which I need not repeat) ‘ who acts as master of ‘ the ceremonies. You see his feeble frame is quite ‘ worn out with debauchery, and he nods over the ‘ grave in anticipated old age, yet still he affects an ‘ air of levity and youth, and strives to inflame ‘ others, by his discourse, to vices, which he is no ‘ longer able to participate of himself : but this is all ‘ grimace,

‘ grimace, and he assumes this appearance of gaiety,
‘ to hide the gloomy discontent and remorse that prey
‘ upon his heart.’

“ There is something so particular, in the story of this man that it may be worth while to give you a short sketch of it. He is a native of a neighbouring country, where his father, from the lowest state of poverty, amassed such wealth in trade, that his vanity prompted him to get his family ennobled, to hide the meanness of his original. There is something so absurdly wrong, in purchased nobility, that it always turns the heads of the purchasers, perhaps in just retribution, for so flagrant an abuse of an institution, meant as a reward for merit. The *ennobled* man lived not to shew the truth of this observation, but his sons abundantly made up for that; the elder lavishing his wealth, on every kind of expensive vanity, and the younger, the person you see, glorying in every kind of debauchery, as if vice and folly were the prerogatives of their *honour*.

“ In the course of a life of pleasure, he contracted an acquaintance with that lady, whom you see at the upper end of the room. Though nature had never meant him for a man of intrigue, and debauchery had exhausted even the little powers she gave, he thought it would have been inconsistent with his character of a man of pleasure, not to commence an affair of gallantry, with so desirable a person. Accordingly as she happened to be married, he directly cultivated an intimacy with her husband, into whose unguarded confidence he so far insinuated himself, as to receive many acts of friendship from him. To a man, who had any sense of honour, or honesty, this would have been an irresistible reason for desisting from his base design: but he was above such vulgar restraints, and genteelly took the opportunity of the husband’s friendship, to debauch the virtue of the wife.

“ Nothing but the most abandoned profligacy in the woman, could have given success to such an attempt,

tempt, as the husband exceeded the paramour in every natural endowment of mind and person, beyond every degree of comparison; but the caprice of vicious inclination is not to be accounted for: it will leath the most exquisite delicacies, and fatten itself on garbage.'

'They had not continued their commerce long, when their indiscretion betrayed them. It is impossible to describe the astonishment and rage of the injured husband, at the discovery! Had it been possible, he would have doubted his senses, which were witnesses to his disgrace. In the first emotions of his rage, he was going to break in upon them, and take the revenge, which his superior strength amply put in his power; but a moment's reflection shewed him the folly of such an action, and determined him to take the safer, and more severe revenge of the law.'

'Accordingly he withdrew, without being perceived by them, and bringing some of his servants to testify their crimes, as soon as he had secured the proof necessary to obtain his satisfaction, entered the room in the height of their dalliance, and coolly telling them that it would be proper for them to chuse another scene for their pleasure, beside his house, retired and left them to their meditations.'

'This conduct convinced them of his design, and that they had not a moment to lose, to avoid some of the most disagreeable consequences of it: as soon, therefore, as they recovered from the first impressions of their astonishment, they directly departed together, and concealing the place of their retirement, for fear of a pursuit, quitted the territories of the state, as soon as they possibly could.'

'But they might have spared themselves that trouble: the revenge which the husband sought, was of another nature: he directly instituted a suit at law against them, by which, as he had sufficient proof of their guilt, he obtained a divorce from his wife, and such damages against the violator of his

his bed, as made it impossible for him ever to return to his country, without he designed to languish out the rest of his days in a prison.'

'The lovers, in the mean time, were far from being happy, in the uninterrupted enjoyment of each other. Variety, and the mystery of intrigue, were all that tempted them to the correspondence at first, and now, that these were lost, reflection opened their eyes, to the consequences of their folly, and made them look upon each other as the authors of their mutual ruin. Such thoughts soon cool the most ardent love: what effect then must they have upon persons in their situation? However, necessity obliged them to conceal their sentiments; and as soon as the divorce gave them liberty, they married, to preserve the appearance of a passion they never felt, and obtain a support from their families, which they could not have expected on any other terms.'

'When this was done, and that necessity removed, the aversion which they had long entertained, broke out in the most violent manner. They lived in a state of eternal warfare, in which, the wife threw off all regard to decency, even so far as to take advantage of her superior strength, and frequently beat her feeble husband. Observe that scar on his upper-lip! the third day of their happy marriage, he received that mark of her rage, from the heel of her slipper, with which she also beat out two of his teeth, whose place he now supplies with artificial ones.

'But the viciousness of her inclination, which first brought him into this wretched situation, released him from it, sooner than he deserved. They had fixed their residence here; where the prince soon happened to take a liking to her, the first overture of which she eagerly embraced; and completed the infamy of her character, by quitting her second husband to become his mistress; in which station you behold her at present.

'Though

‘ Though such a disgrace seemed to be a judicial retaliation upon the husband, for his own base crime, he was insensible of it: and instead of taking advantage of his deliverance, and retiring to some place where his shame was not known, meanly accepted of the employment, in which you see him, and submitted to be the slave of her vice and insolence.

‘ But though his hatred for her, and passion for the pomp, and dissipation of a court, make him brave the infamy of such a situation, sickness, the constant consequence of debauchery, the faithful monitor of guilt, has awakened his conscience to a sense of the crime that has sunk him so low, and raised a remorse, that wastes his life, though he thus absurdly strives to drown its voice, in the noise of vanity and vice.’



C H A P. XIV.

The confessor entertains CHRYSA L's master with another, not uncommon character. The modern method of repairing a broken fortune. The general consequence of female ambition. A curious amour commenced in an odd manner, and carried on in as odd a place.

MY master was beginning to make some obvious reflections, on this account, but his friend soon diverted his attention to another object. ‘ Ob-
 ‘ serve’ (said he, pointing to a person, who bore all the external marks of nobility, in his habit and appearance) ‘ a striking proof of the insignificance of
 ‘ being born to wealth, and honours! Who, that
 ‘ sees that despicable figure, which this man makes
 ‘ here, a voluntary exile from his own country,
 ‘ where his rank and fortune placed him, in the most
 ‘ exalted and advantageous light, can ever throw
 ‘ away a moment's thought, on heaping up riches,
 ‘ or obtaining honours, to perpetuate his name, and
 ‘ aggrandize

‘aggrandize his family, the folly and profusion of a single member of which may thus disappoint his hopes, and make his very virtues an aggravation of his own degeneracy and reproach ?

‘In a rank, scarce inferior to that of a sovereign, and possessed of a fortune, sufficient to support it, with dignity to himself, and benefit to the community, did this man enter into life ; but a few years of the dissipation of what is falsely called a life of pleasure distressed his fortune, and debased his principle to such a degree, that he was obliged, and not ashamed, to have recourse to the mean method of a mercenary marriage, to retrieve his affairs and enable him to support the external appearance of his character.

‘The constant consequences of such marriages, might be sufficient to open the eyes of the unhappy victims of them to such a dangerous folly ; but vanity possesses so absolute empire over the female heart, that nothing can prevent the gratification of it.

‘The female, whom this person pitched upon, as proper for his purpose, by her immense wealth, was destitute of every charm of mind and person, to attract or preserve love or esteem. But few are sensible of their own deficiencies, or can bear to be informed of them. On his making the first overture to her, all her real friends took the alarm ; they drew his character in proper colours ; they shewed her, that necessity, not inclination, was the motive of his addresses, and they laid the inevitable consequences of a connection with such a person, before her in the strongest light : but all was in vain ! Her heart was fixed upon rank and precedence, and so she could obtain them, she left the rest to chance.

‘Accordingly, as she was absolutely her own mistress, the match was soon made, to the present satisfaction of both parties. He got her fortune, to pay his debts, and pursue his pleasures ; and she rode in a coach, with coronets, and was called *her Grace*.

‘But

' But this mutual happiness did not last long: the
 ' moment he got possession of her fortune, all his
 ' wishes were fulfilled; and as he had nothing farther
 ' to expect, he did not think it necessary for him, to
 ' continue any appearance of love, or even com-
 ' plaisance, for an object really disagreeable to him.
 ' Accordingly the very morning after his marriage, he
 ' set out upon a party of pleasure, with some of his
 ' former companions; and left the bride by herself,
 ' to receive the compliments, and go through the
 ' farce, usual upon such occasions.

' Though such behaviour must appear base, and
 ' ungenerous to the last degree; yet she had no right
 ' to complain of it; as she could not expect any
 ' other from his known character, and motives for
 ' marriage; she, therefore, put the best face on the
 ' matter, and whether from intoxication at her ele-
 ' vation, or indifference to him, seemed to be insen-
 ' sible of the slight, and went through the ceremony
 ' and parade, with all the appearance of pleasure
 ' and content, leaving him to pursue his own inclina-
 ' tions, without molestation or complaint.

' But this calm did not hold long. As soon as her
 ' new dignity lost the charms of novelty, nature
 ' awoke, as from a dream, and convinced her, that
 ' something more than empty show, was necessary to
 ' human happiness: but alas! this conviction came
 ' too late: and all her expostulations were as ineffec-
 ' tual to induce the tenderness or esteem of her hus-
 ' band, as those of her friends had been with her,
 ' to prevent her marrying him. On the contrary,
 ' they turned his indifference into aversion, and made
 ' him treat her with indignity and contempt, insult-
 ' ing her deformity, and ridiculing the vanity, that
 ' had prompted her to sacrifice her fortune for a bare
 ' title.

' Hard as such treatment was to be submitted to,
 ' she had no redress; but was obliged to bear it in
 ' silence, without even the poor consolation of com-
 ' passion to mitigate her sufferings. At length, a far-
 ' ther aggravation of her wrongs gave her the plea-
 ' sure

‘ sure of revenge, by driving him again into the distresses, from which her folly had relieved him.

‘ In the pursuit of pleasure, to which he had sacrificed his character and fortune, he never had the excuse of a refined taste, or particular passion to palliate his folly, but blindly followed the example of his companions, or was a slave to every gross impulse of his own caprice, without the least notion of delicacy, or even decency, to direct him. As he was strolling alone about his own house, one unhappy evening, when he had no company to divert his thoughts, he happened, just as it grew dark, to overhear two persons, a male and female, in earnest conversation. Curiosity prompting him to listen, he soon discovered that love was the subject of their discourse, in which the man, whom by his voice, he knew to be one of his huntsman’s helpers, was so successful, that he persuaded the fair one to promise him a meeting, half an hour after, in the dog-kennel.

‘ Though the place of assignation might have deterred any person, whose senses, as well as his inclinations were not totally debauched, from attempting to supplant the happy lover, the novelty of such an adventure made his lordship overlook that, and resolve to supply his dog-boy’s place. Accordingly he retired, unperceived, and going into the stables, ordered him to be called, and sent him directly on a message, some miles off, without giving him an opportunity of letting his mistress know any thing of the matter.

‘ As soon as the time appointed drew near, his lordship went to the agreeable scene, where the punctual fair one did not let him wait long. As he was about the Dog-boy’s size, and the place was quite dark, she never perceived the change put upon her, but lavished her caresses upon him with the greatest tenderness, vowing never more to have any correspondence with the pantry-boy or scullion, who it seems were the dog-boy’s formidable rivals, but be always constant to him alone; and took her leave

‘ of

‘ of him, with a promise to meet him there at the same time next evening.

‘ Disgusting, as every circumstance of this affair should have been, the oddity of it, with the pleasure of supplanting another, even so mean a person, and in so unworthy an object, made him determine to be punctual to her appointment. But then the difficulty was, how to prevent his rival’s traversing his design, for his delicacy was not in the least alarmed at the thought of his participating her favours. He was also at a loss, to know who the obliging female might be, for the darkness that concealed him, was equally favourable to her, and he was a stranger to her voice, nor did he care to ask any questions, as that would betray his own imposture, and bring on an explanation that he did not desire, both as his greatest pleasure was in the cheat, and the discovery might be attended with circumstances he should chuse to avoid, in case the female was disagreeable to him.

‘ To obviate all these inconveniences, he ordered his rival to attend him the very moment he returned, when he gave him a letter to carry that instant to a gentleman, who lived about twenty miles off, with directions to be back early the next day with an answer. This he said aloud, in the hearing of all his servants, that if his mistress should happen to hear of her lover’s being sent from home, she might also have reason to expect his return time enough to keep the appointment ; but to prevent this, he had desired the person to whom he wrote, to keep the messenger, as if for an answer of the letter, two or three days, in which time he concluded, he himself should be tired of his amour.’



CHAP. XV.

*Continued: His lordship's scheme to sling his rival un-
luckily disappointed. A disagreeable meeting occasions
strange discoveries. Woman never at a loss. Law
often spoils sport.*

"PLEASED with the sagacity of this scheme, he waited for the next evening, with an impatience that he did not often feel on such occasions ; but an unlucky accident disappointed his designs. The gentleman, to whom he wrote the letter, happened not to be at home, nor was he expected for a day or two ; wherefore, as his lord had ordered him to make haste back, he left the letter and returned without any delay, perhaps not more in obedience to his orders, than from his impatience to retrieve the disappointment his desires had met, by his absence the evening before."

"As soon as he alighted, therefore, his first care was to find out his mistress, to tell her the reason of his disappointing her the evening before, and to make a new assignation for that ; but what was their mutual surprize, when they came to compare notes ! As he insisted on his not having attended the appointment, she flew into a rage, and accused him of having betrayed her basely to some of his companions ; and as she positively asserted her having met some person there, he accused her, with equal warmth, of inconstancy, and sacrificing him to some of his rivals, on whom he vowed the severest vengeance, if he should ever find him out.

"As this altercation was not carried on with much delicacy on either side, it soon produced an absolute rupture between the lovers, who separated with sentiments for each other very different from those with which they met. The dog-boy, in an hour or two, when his resentment cooled a little, recol-

his cloaths, and wash off the blood and dirt, with which he was all over plentifully dawbed.

"As soon as he had set himself somewhat to rights, he rung for his valet-de-chambre, who was his usual agent upon such occasions, and ordered him to bring the kitchen-maid's daughter up to him. The valet, who was sufficiently acquainted with the capriciousness of his master's taste, was not in the least surpris'd at his choice of such an object, but obeyed him directly.

"The fortunate female, who had found the quality of her new lover by his snuff-box, which she had picked out of his pocket, was almost afraid to obey the glad summons, for fear she might be suspected, of having designedly occasioned the out-rage his lordship had lately met: however, her ambition getting the better of her fear, she suffered herself to be prevailed on, and went trembling and blushing, in all the bashfulness of virgin innocence, to know his lordship's commands.

"If he had been surpris'd at the discovery of her condition, he was much more agreeably so at the sight of her: for though she was far from being handsome, there was something in her face, which from her extreme youth, and a glow of health, that her confusion heightened not a little, struck his fancy in an uncommon manner. He therefore, without giving her the least hint of what had happened, as he imagined she knew nothing of him, made no ceremony of proposing love to her. But young as she was, she had too much woman in her soul to comply so easily, though there was nothing she desired more ardently. Accordingly she refused his lordship with the most respectful modesty, and on his urging his request farther, threw herself at his feet, in a flood of tears, and begged him to have compassion on her friendless youth and innocence.

"Such behaviour would have made him doubt the dog-boy's information, did not the sound of her voice convince him she was the person. He therefore

fore, laughed at her artifice, and told her, that as soon as the farce was ended, he should expect another answer, as he knew she had granted to others the favour he asked of her.

This convinced her that he had discovered her, and that it was necessary for her to enlarge her scheme, to accomplish the design she had formed, of establishing a lasting interest in his affections. Accordingly, upon his saying this, she embraced his knees, in a seeming agony of distress, and conjuring him to have mercy on her folly, owned that she had transgressed with one, and one only, who had made such an impression upon her heart, that tho' she had taken him for another, and knew not even who he was, she had made a vow, never to repeat her folly with any other.

The candour of this confession, the greatest part of which he thought he knew to be true, compleated her conquest over him. He raised her from the ground, and embracing her tenderly, discovered himself to her. The consequence is obvious. She immediately appeared in public as his mistress, and had the address to accommodate herself, so entirely to his caprices, that she soon gained the absolute mastery of his heart. As for the poor dog-boy, he was turned off, of course, as an offence to her sight, though not without a considerable gratuity, to purchase his silence; but that was impossible; the moment he left the house, he looked upon himself as freed from the necessity of concealing it any longer, and made it the common subject of his discourse, till it became as publicly known as his lordship's name.

This happened just as his affairs became again so distressed, that he was forced to withhold the support he had allowed his wife. She therefore directly took the advantage of it, to sue him for a separate maintenance, on the plea of his thus living in avowed adultery. The fact was too flagrant to be denied, and his infatuation was such, that he would not remove the cause, to avoid the consequence

‘quence of the suit, but chose to quit his native country, and come here with his mistress, to live in the disesteem and contempt you see him treated with, on the poor pittance of his fortune, which the law allows him for his support ; the rest, much the greater part of it, being assigned for the maintenance of his wife, and payment of his debts.’

CHRYSA L: Or, the

CH A P. XVI.

CHRYSA L's master meets an old acquaintance, who relates the history of his life. Curious anecdotes of a GREAT man.

MY master's friend proceeded to give him an account of several other persons who were present ; but as his remarks were confined to their political characters, I shall omit them, as I said before. On these I have dwelt so long, because they display a just, however disagreeable picture, of human nature.

The day after my master's being with his friend at court, he went to see an old acquaintance of his. The principles of the soul are sometimes so strong, as to baffle hypocrisy, and mark the character of the man, in the lineaments of his visage, to every common eye. The first view of my master's old friend and acquaintance, struck me with horror ; every vice that can deform the human soul appeared triumphant, and unallayed with any the least tincture of virtue in his face. Though I was no stranger to the latitude of my master's principles, the intimacy of such a person blackened my worst opinion of him. They flew to each other's arms, and embracing with the tenderness of long parted friends, asked each other a thousand questions almost in a breath, concerning their mutual welfare, and the adventures they had met with, since they had seen each other last.

In the account given by my master, there were none but common occurrences; but the history of his friend, had something so strikingly singular in it, that, for the curiosity of such a character, I'll give you a short sketch of it, as drawn by himself, with this difference only, that I shall omit several facts, too gross for repetition, and soften the colouring of the whole, as the glaringness of it would over-power human sight, and strike imagination with horror too strong to bear.

'You have often expressed a curiosity, my friend,' (said the stranger to my master) 'to learn the particulars of my life. That I did not gratify it, was not owing to any diffidence or disinclination to oblige you; but because I had not arrived at any fixed period to make a proper pause at, and therefore, an imperfect account could give you but little satisfaction. But that objection is now removed: I am here settled in a situation, which, though far below my former hopes, I shall strive to be contented in, and not launch out any more into the fatigues and perils of the world, at this late season of my life. One caution only I must hint to you, which is, that in the account I am going to give, I shall throw aside all prejudice, and represent every thing in the unadorned simplicity of its first principles, without any regard to the received notions of self-deluded man.——'

'I was born in *France*, of poor parents, who were scarce able to give me the first rudiments of a liberal education. To avoid a life of labour, I rashly entered into the monastic, before I had experience enough to see the folly of such a step; but my stay here was not long: to a man of sense, the obligation of a vow ceases, with the motive that induced him to take it. I made my escape from the convent; and as I was destitute of money to support me, and as yet too ignorant of the ways of the world, to be able to live without it, was driven by necessity, to enlist myself for a soldier. But I soon found, that I had not gained by the change; the

'slavery of a soldier's life being still more intolerable than that of a monk. I therefore had recourse to my former expedient for relief, and deserted the very first opportunity. I then threw myself at random upon the world, without any particular point to direct my course to; but this did not discourage me: I had boldly thrown off the shackles which foolish man has forged for himself, to prevent his rising in life, and regulated my conduct solely by my convenience. This gave me a superiority over the rest of mankind, which I never failed to avail myself of. I looked upon their follies as my inheritance, and soon found abundant opportunities of turning them to my advantage.

'For some years I lived a life of ramble, in the course of which I met with many adventures.— At length, I thought my own country too narrow a sphere to confine my activity to, and so I went to *Spain*; where I expected an ample harvest, from the ignorance and superstition of the people; but their poverty disappointed my hopes, and almost starved me into repentance of my expedition. However, I proceeded to *Madrid*, where the credulity of a countryman of my own made me amends for the reserve of the natives. He not only relieved my immediate wants, which were too pressing to be borne, but also entrusted into my hands some valuable materials for a literary work, from which he expected both reputation and profit. But I disappointed his hopes; for being tired of *Spain*, I took the first opportunity of going to try my fortune in some other country, and carried all his papers with me. Nor was this all he suffered by his confidence. I had before experienced the inconvenience of depending upon charity, in a country where there is scarce sufficient for the necessities of nature. I therefore thought it proper to take all the money and valuable effects in his possession, to defray the expences of my journey. As to the distress this might throw him into, I never regarded that a moment, no more than I did his being any countryman

‘man. I despised the narrowness of thought, that
‘made such accidental circumstances of any weight,
‘when they clashed with my own particular designs:
‘and I esteemed the lesson I had taught him, to be
‘more cautious whom he placed his confidence in, a
‘sufficient recompence for his loss.——— .

‘From *Spain* I directed my course to *Germany*,
‘where the political knowledge I had acquired from my
‘late friend’s papers made me so much taken notice
‘of, that after some time, not disagreeably spent
‘among the great, I was recommended to the prime
‘minister and favourite of the king of *Poland*, as a
‘proper person to be entrusted with the education of
‘his only son. Not to disgrace this character, I as-
‘sumed a fictitious name and title, and gave out that
‘I had been obliged to leave my own country for
‘an affair of honour. My employment gave me fre-
‘quent opportunities of conversing with the father
‘of my pupil, to whom I displayed my skill in poli-
‘tics, to such advantage. that I was soon admitted
‘into his esteem and confidence. In this intercourse
‘I had the honour of starting the first hint of that
‘project, which has since kindled the present war in
‘*Germany*, and will immortalize his name (for he has
‘had the ungenerous meanness to assume it to him-
‘self) to all ages.

‘Such a situation was sufficient to satisfy the de-
‘sires of any other man ; but my ambition knew no
‘bounds : I thought my patron did not reward my
‘merit as it deserved ; and in revenge, I resolved to
‘work his ruin. For this purpose, I entered into a
‘correspondence with several noblemen, who were
‘his enemies, and taking advantage of the opportu-
‘nities his confidence gave me, of seeing his papers,
‘copied some, and counterfeited others, that I
‘thought necessary to my design, which was no less
‘than to raise a civil war, in which the minister
‘should be sacrificed, and his master dethroned.
‘But just as my plot was ripe for execution, it was
‘discovered, and I hurried from a palace to a prison,
‘where I was condemned to languish out the rest of

his charge, so that I despised his impotent accusations.

From *Switzerland* I once more turned my face to *Germany*, where my name was so famous for my political knowledge, that a war being just ready to break-out, I received considerable offers, from most of the parties concerned, to engage me in their service; but though I refused none, I resolved not to engage myself absolutely to any, till I could know, which might prove most advantageous to me.

CH A P. XVII.

Continued He comes to *ENGLAND*, where his services are rejected by the state; and he is obliged to exert his abilities in a lower sphere. He gains the confidence of his landlord, from whom he borrows all he is worth, and then strives to pay the debt with an halter. A good retreat is better than a bad stand.

AS *England* was likely to bear a considerable part in the war, I thought it proper to go over, and found the inclinations of the ministry there also. The riches and credulity of the inhabitants of that country, have long made it be esteemed the inheritance of needy adventurers. The thought of displaying my abilities, in so fertile a soil, inspired me with an ardour I had never felt before. I already grasped all the wealth of the nation, and looked upon myself as the oracle of the people, and the terror of the ministry, who would not fail to purchase my silence with a pension, that should enable me to spend the rest of my days, wherever I liked, with dignity and ease.

Full of these flattering hopes, I arrived in *London*, where I soon found, that, just as the notion I had formed of the people in general might be, the government would not take the bait I had prepared for them, and treated me and my proposals with equal contempt. This threw me into the necessity
of

‘ of prostituting the abilities, which I fondly hoped
‘ would have been employed in embroiling nations,
‘ to the deception of individuals, for the support of
‘ life ; for all the wealth I was master of, consisted
‘ solely in the projects of my brain.

‘ My success in this under-plot made me some
‘ amends, for the miscarriage of the other. I no
‘ sooner fixed my habitation than I was crowded to,
‘ by tradesmen of all kinds, to solicit my custom for
‘ things, which I had not the least probability of be-
‘ ing ever able to pay for. But that gave me no con-
‘ cern ; I accepted their offers to such an amount,
‘ that I was immediately able to procure considera-
‘ ble sums of money, for other occasions, by the sale
‘ of commodities, which, so far from having occasion
‘ for, I scarcely knew the use of.

‘ Flushed with this good fortune, I threw off all
‘ reserve, and gave a loose to every passion, which
‘ luxury could raise in a temper naturally warm ; ne-
‘ ver reflecting, that the day would soon come, when
‘ my inability to pay my present debts, would not
‘ only put a stop to these artificial resources, but al-
‘ so probably plunge me into the horrors of a goal,
‘ for life. I professed myself a man of pleasure ! I
‘ dressed, gamed, and intrigued, with people of the
‘ first rank ; and for some time was so intoxicated, as
‘ to forget my first purpose in coming over, and
‘ think I could support this life for ever. Not that
‘ I was ever so intent upon my pleasures, as to miss
‘ any opportunity of procuring the means immedi-
‘ ately necessary to obtain them. On the contrary, the
‘ moment I threw off my designs upon the govern-
‘ ment, I doubled my application, to turn the follies
‘ of particulars to my own advantage, stopping at
‘ nothing, however iniquitous in the opinion of the
‘ world, to accomplish my designs.

‘ Such a life must necessarily involve me in a va-
‘ riety of adventures, many of which, ’tis true, I
‘ got not so smoothly over as I could wish ; but I
‘ had learned philosophy enough to take the bad,

‘ with the good, without repining, at what it was
‘ not in my power to redress.

‘ It would be endless to enter into a particular de-
‘ tail of every thing I did, and suffered in the course
‘ of this life; I shall, therefore, only just mention
‘ one or two affairs, which may serve to give you
‘ some notion of the rest.

‘ As I particularly valued myself, upon my literary
‘ character, there was no kind of acquaintance I was
‘ fonder of cultivating, than with men of letters;
‘ for which I had also a farther motive, that as
‘ their attention to books, generally made them
‘ strangers to the ways of men, they were most easily
‘ to be made the property of any mercenary de-
‘ signs.

‘ On both these accounts, I had taken lodgings in
‘ the house of a clergyman, who, beside the charac-
‘ ter of a man of learning, was also reputed to be in
‘ easy circumstances. I soon found that he was a
‘ person exactly fitted for my designs, and therefore
‘ lost no time, in making a proper impression on him.
‘ The first step towards acquiring confidence, is to
‘ place it yourself. I immediately made him my
‘ banker, lodging every sum of money I won at play,
‘ or raised by the means I mentioned before, in his
‘ hands. As my success made these sums very con-
‘ siderable at first, he conceived an opinion of my
‘ being a person of consequence and fortune, above
‘ my appearance. This inspired him with such re-
‘ spect, for me, that if at any time, I even hinted an
‘ occasion, for more than I had in his hands, he not
‘ only offered to supply me, but even looked upon
‘ my acceptance, as an honour. To confirm him in
‘ this way of thinking, I frequently accepted of his
‘ offers, when I had no occasion, only that the punc-
‘ tuality of my payment might make him still the
‘ readier, whenever I should.

‘ Nor was it long before I was obliged to avail
‘ myself of this scheme. A bad run at play stripped
‘ me of all my money, and my tradesmen brought in
‘ their bills, so that my former resources were at an
‘ end.

end. In this difficulty, I applied to my landlord, who readily supplied me with all the money in his possession ; and that not being sufficient, borrowed as much more as he could, till my remittances should arrive from my estate.

This supply might have extricated me from the difficulties of the present moment. But I was awoke from my golden dreams, and saw that this was the last money I could any ways expect to raise, as my practices began to be suspected, and every body had taken the alarm against me ; so that if I parted with it, I should only gain a momentary relief, as my landlord would soon expect to be paid also. I therefore resolved to serve all my creditors alike, and go back to *Germany*, with the money in my possession, leaving them to curse their credulity, and be more cautious for the future.

As I had still a considerable quantity of valuable effects, in my possession, I knew it would be impossible to remove them, without giving the alarm to my landlord, and I could not think of leaving them in his hands, though they were far short of the debt I owed him. In this dilemma, my ready genius prompted a scheme, that would not only secure me from him, but also gain me time to prepare for my decampment, with more convenience. Upon my first coming to his house, I had contrived, by taking the impressions in wax, to get false keys to all his locks. This is a piece of precaution, which no man of prudence will ever neglect. In pursuance of my scheme, the morning after I had received the money from him, and before I was to pay it away, by appointment, I took the opportunity, while he was at church, to convey into his closet several things of value, my property in which I could clearly prove, taking away at the same time, the obligations which I had given him for the money he had lent me, which his confidence in my honour had prevented his taking the precaution of having witnesses to.

As

‘ As soon as I had done this, I went directly to a magistrate, before whom I made oath, of my being robbed of a large sum of money, and many of my most valuable effects, among which I particularly named the things I had left in his closet, and required an authority to apprehend my landlord, and search his house, as I had reason to suspect that he had stolen them, having caught him several times coming out of my apartments, in evident confusion, and at times, when my being absent deprived him of every honest reason of going into them : and this charge, I had confirmed by the testimony of my valet-de-chambre, and another person, whom I had prepared properly.

‘ Though the execution of sentence is not quite so sudden in *England* as in *Turkey*, an accusation of this kind, however groundless, is in many respects not much less dreadful ; the harpies of the law, never losing their hold, till they have devoured every thing in his possession. The warrant I demanded was readily granted, for this reason ; and away I resolutely went, in company with the officers to execute it. We found my landlord, in the security of innocence, in his parlour, waiting for my coming in to dinner. It is impossible to express his astonishment, when they laid hold of him, like a thief, and told him it was upon my accusation. All the resolution and presence of mind I was master of, were requisite to bear me through the scene ! At first he was unable to speak a word ; which the candour of his accusers did not fail to construe, as a silent acknowledgement of his guilt ; but recovering himself in a few moments, he first raised his eyes to heaven, and then turning them upon me, gave me a look, that almost froze the blood in my veins ; but never deigned to speak a word to me.

‘ He then addressed himself to the officers, and mildly desired that they would execute their duty with lenity, nor offer any indignity to the sacred
‘ charac-

character he bore, till a proof of his guilt should make him appear unworthy of the sanction of it.'

'Such behaviour had an effect not to be described, upon all that were present. The very officers forgot their hardened nature for a moment; and the tear of pity fell from eyes that never wept before at human misery. Even I began to feel the foolish infection, and was obliged to charm up other passions to prevent my betraying myself, though my ruin was at stake. Accordingly, I raised my voice, and with a stern accent, commanded the officers to do their duty, and search the house before his accomplices should have time to convey away the things we came in quest of. This word put an end to a compassion, that was contrary to their nature, and they proceeded to their business, with their usual keenness, though still with respect, till they came to search his closet, where the sight of the things, which I had sworn to have been stolen from me, appeared so plain a proof of his guilt, that they treated him with all the indignity of the vilest malefactor.

'Secure in his innocence, he had hitherto preserved a steadiness of temper, that seemed superior to the power of fortune; but at this sight, his resolution failed him. He fell upon his knees, and raising his hands and eyes to heaven, 'Just God!' (said he) 'thy will be done! thou knowest my innocence, and art able to defend me!—And wilt defend me.' (said he) rising and recovering his former spirits.

'In the mean time, I seemed encouraged by this success, to hope for the recovery of the money, which I pretended to have lost also, and ceased not to urge the officers to make the strictest search. But this was not necessary: they ransacked every place, and tossed about every thing, that was too large for them to convey away, till they made his whole house one scene of desolation. They then dragged him before the magistrate, where the finding of the things gave such weight to the charge which I positively swore against him, that he

‘ he was on the verge of being hurried to prison, and would certainly have suffered an ignominious death, had it not been for some unlucky prevarication in my valet de chambre’s evidence. This, with some suspicions that were suggested against my own character, by the pawn-broker to whom I had sold the goods I took up from my tradesmen, and who unfortunately happened to be present, gave the affair such a turn in his favour, that he was admitted to bail, ’till his innocence or guilt should be proved by a public trial.

‘ But it was far from my intention to wait for this. The moment I left the magistrate, I went to the house of an acquaintance, wither I had ordered my effects to be removed before, when I resolved to prepare for my departure, with the utmost expedition. As to my creditors, when they called upon me the next morning, as I had appointed, for their money, I told them the story of my having been robbed the day before, by my landlord; and, therefore, that they must wait till I should receive another remittance from my own country; and though I saw that few of them believed me, or were inclined to grant me that indulgence, I was under no concern, as the habitation of my friend was in a place, privileged from the immediate power of the law.

‘ However, it was impossible to be easy in such a situation, where every eye that saw me, reproached me with what I had done! I therefore took the first opportunity of going off, in which I was so successful, as to elude the vigilance of my pursuers, and escape to *Holland*; where I had the vexation, to learn that half of my scheme was disappointed, my landlord being discharged without trial, for want of my appearing to prosecute him; but though he had escaped death, his affairs were so effectually ruined by the loss of the money he lent, and had procured for me, and the expence and damage he suffered by my accusation, that he was obliged

‘ obliged to fly for refuge to the savages in *America*,
‘ from the power of his more savage creditors.’



C H A P. XVIII.

*Continued. He launches again into the troubled ocean
of politicks, and suffers a second shipwreck, in ENG-
LAND. He that will not, when he may, &c.—
It is often better to play a poor game, than stand out
CHRYSAL arrives at LISBON.*

‘ I NO sooner arrived in *Holland*, the general ren-
‘ dezvous of politicians, than I reassumed that
‘ character once more, and that with such success,
‘ that the minister of a power in alliance with *Eng-
‘ land*, conceived such an opinion of my abilities,
‘ as made him offer to recommend me to that court,
‘ for an employment of the highest consequence,
‘ in one of the principal courts of *Germany*.

‘ Though I was sensible, that my return to *Eng-
‘ land* must be attended with disagreeable, if not
‘ dangerous circumstances, from the general pre-
‘ judices that were entertained there against me, I
‘ boldly resolved to accept of his offer: the former,
‘ which could consist only in impotent marks of dis-
‘ like I disregarded, and the latter, I judged my re-
‘ commendation would enable me to defeat. Ac-
‘ cordingly, I set out with the utmost privacy, and
‘ was safe in *London*, before my leaving *Holland*
‘ was even suspected by those, who would have lain
‘ in wait for me.

‘ The very morning after my arrival, I waited
‘ upon the minister to whom I was recommended with
‘ my letters, who received me very politely, and up-
‘ on the credit of the character given to him of me,
‘ entered into a familiar conversation, on several sub-
‘ jects of intricacy and importance, in which I support-
‘ ed the character he had received of me so well, that
‘ he

‘ he dismissed me with an assurance of his protection and favour.

‘ I now thought myself secure of my hopes ; but the pleasure of this thought was of a very short continuance. The very next morning, I received a message from the minister, to attend him directly ; which you may think I obeyed in the highest spirits. Instead of the affability with which I expected to be received, upon my advancing to him, he darted a look at me, that seemed designed to search my very soul. After viewing me steadily thus, for some moments, “ You are recommended to me (said he) as a man of abilities ; and such I have found you to be ; but you have imposed upon the person who recommended you, and concealed your real character from him, or he would never have entertained so favourable an opinion, of such an abandoned wretch !—But I have unravelled the mystery of your iniquities, and guarded against your wiles. —Your crimes call aloud for vengeance, and the stroke of fate hangs over your head : but in hopes you may repent, and amend your life, and in respect to the recommendation you brought (of which I cannot give a stronger testimony than this) I will give you an opportunity to escape, for this time, the ruin that threatens you. Fly this country directly ! if you are found in this city an hour hence, or make the least delay in any part of the kingdom, (and all your steps are watched) you are to expect no favour or protection. And that you should not plead inability to obey this injunction, take this purse of gold, and let me never see your face more.”

‘ I need not tell you the effect this speech had upon me ! I took the purse, and retired without making any reply : nor did I close my eyes in sleep, till I had bid adieu to that inhospitable shore.

‘ On my return, I went to wait upon my former patron, but was denied admission, and ordered never to go there any more : the account of my disgrace in *England* having, as I learned afterwards, been

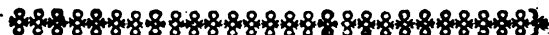
‘ been transmitted to him, in the very ship that, brought me over.’

‘ Though these miscarriages mortified my pride, they did not deject my spirit. The gold given me by the *English* minister, enabled me to support myself, in a state of independance, for some time; during which, I successively offered to accept every proposal that I had formerly rejected; but I had missed my opportunity, and was now rejected myself in my turn. At length, when I was almost reduced to despair, the employment I hold here was offered to me, which, tho’ far beneath my former hopes, I thought it not prudent to refuse; especially as it opened to me an opportunity of venting my rage, with impunity, upon all who had ever offended me. I am literally hired to wage open war with truth, honour, and justice, by inventing false news, to support the exhausted spirits of the people;—by defaming the enemies of my employers, to give a colour to the iniquitous designs of the latter; and by varnishing over the most flagrant acts of oppression, cruelty, and deceit, with the specious colours of authority, justice, and religion.

‘ To a man who retained any of the prejudices of the world, and did not examine things in the simplicity of nature, such a task must be most disagreeable. But to me, all things are indifferent, as I know all things are alike.’

Here my master’s friend concluded his history; the enormity of which would prevent its obtaining credit, had it been related by any body but himself, though, as I have told you before, I have omitted the blackest particulars, and softened the colours of the rest.

In a few days after this interview, my master left *Brussels*, and proceeded on his journey to *Lisbon*, during the remainder of which, nothing occurred worth relating.



C H A P. XIX.

CHRYSALE comes at LISBON into the possession of a former acquaintance. His master makes the great attempt without success. Several of the nobility are sacrificed to other motives, on pretence of being guilty of this fact. CHRYSALE's master is at length taken up; and he changes his service.

IF I was formerly surprized at meeting a *Peruvian* acquaintance at *Vienna*, I was no less so, when I found that the person to whom he sent me in *Lisbon* was the very captain, of whose miraculous conversion, after the rape and murder of his brother's wife, I gave you an account in the beginning of this relation, whom I found to be the man chosen for *this great attempt*, the proof which he had given of his capacity in that affair, having raised their opinion of him so high, as to make them think him the only proper person for this.

I did not remain long in a state of speculation in the possession of this master; the orders which were brought along with *me*, were all that was waited for, to accelerate the execution of the design. Accordingly the blow was struck a few nights after, but, in the confusion inseparable from such attempts, without effect.

The king was shot in his coach, as he returned one night from a love assignation, at some distance from his palace, by my master, who had way-laid him at a proper place, and fired a blunderbuss, loaded with small balls at him, through the back of the coach.

By an instantaneous stupefaction of fear, which is often taken for resolution and presence of mind, the king fell down in the coach, and spoke not a word, which made my master conclude the work done, and so prevented a repetition of the blow.

But

But what was his confusion the next morning, when he found that the king, though severely wounded, was likely to recover. The opportunity was lost, nor was it probable that another should offer, till it would be too late. However he attended the event, so far safe, that no one could endanger his safety by betraying him, there being no person there, not even of the order, privy to the action: for secrets of this importance are always entrusted to as few as possible.

While he thus calmly looked on, as an unconcerned spectator, it is impossible to describe the distraction that reigned all over the city, where every person suspected his neighbour, and was almost afraid to converse with his brother, for fear of being suspected of a participation in a crime, of which he knew not the person guilty.

At court, in the mean time, the most mysterious silence was observed, and all conversation on the subject discouraged. This was thought to be the most probable way of coming to the knowledge of so dark an affair; as their spies could thereby mix with the people with less suspicion, and make their observations with the greater certainty, when they should be off their guard.

Not that they were at a loss to think from whence the blow had come; but by whom it was struck was the difficulty to find out, that so they might found their proceedings on an evidence of justice; for the Jesuits were too mighty a body to be attacked upon an uncertainty.

The reason for suspecting them of this fact was, that upon the miscarriage of their premature attempt in *America*, the king was so incensed against the whole society, that he dismissed them from the direction of his conscience, and every other place and employment about his person or court.

Such an indignity he was sensible must alarm the resentment of a set of men, not remarkable for patience, or forgiving affronts; he had therefore taken every precaution to guard against them, as far as human

man

man prudence could direct his fears, which was only against disturbance in the state, for of such an attempt as this he could not suspect them.

While things hung in this suspense, I had an opportunity of seeing into the character of the people I was among; but human language wants force to describe them.

I have already given you the genuine character of the *Dutch*; to that let us add poverty, pride, superstition, bigotry, and its inseparable attendant, cruelty, and they will give you some idea of the present *Portuguese*. A people of whom it is hard to say, whether to abstracted speculation they are more ridiculous or execrable, the struggle between their follies and vices is so unremitted and so strong.

A little before I arrived there, the city had been reduced to ashes by lightning, and before they had recovered from the consternation, which such a misfortune threw them into, they received an account of the capital of their *American* dominions being swallowed by an earthquake.

Such signal instances of the wrath of heaven might have been expected, to alarm their consciences to look for the causes of it in their vices, and to try to avert it by repentance and amendment. But instead of that, the first proof they gave of coming to their reason (or I should rather say of coming to themselves, for reason it was not) after their fright, was to attribute these misfortunes to a relaxation in superstitious severity, and to demand as victims to it, the only people under heaven, whose good nature had given effectual relief to their distress.

At length, after a calm so long, that people began to think the storm was quite allayed, it broke out with a fury, that amazed not only the unhappy heads on which it burst, but also the whole nation beside.

I told you that the attempt had been made upon the king, as he was returning from a love-meeting. The person with whom he had been, was descended from

from the first, and related or allied to all the greatest families in this kingdom.

In a country whose characteristics are pride and revenge, such an intercourse must be dangerous, even to royalty, as the honour of all those families seemed to be wounded through her. Accordingly a rumour of her being with child, having extorted some inadvertent, illative, general menaces from some of her relations, as the fact was really so, the conscious apprehensions of the king were alarmed; and as he could not declare the true reason of them, he made a pretence of the assassination; the charge of which received some appearance of probability, from the very circumstance, which now occasioned its being brought against them, it being known that he was returning from that lady, at the very time when the attempt was made upon him.

Thus to the fear of danger, arising from a real crime, were the greatest subjects in the kingdom to be sacrificed on a pretence of guilt, which their very accusers believed them innocent of. For before they were apprehended, their ruin was resolved on, which was not a little forwarded by the opportunity which it gave the king of seizing all their vast possessions, and thereby repairing the losses which he had suffered in the late calamities.

Accordingly, after suffering every torture which human ingenuity could invent, to make them confess a guilt of which they were not even suspected; they were publicly executed in the most ignominious and cruel manner, in the sight of an astonished people, without any proof been given of their guilt, beside the bare affirmations, and strained inferences of those who were both accusers and judges, and also reaped the profits of their ruin.

Such scenes as this are too horrid to be dwelt on: I shall therefore return to my master, with whom I had an opportunity of coming to the knowledge of every transaction relative to this mysterious affair, the miscarriage of this attempt, having made it necessary for him to disburse the money, among which I came

came to him, and by that means continued me so long in his possession.

Could any thing have heightened the opinion my first knowledge of him gave me, it must have been, to see him an unconcerned spectator of the sufferings of those unhappy victims to his guilt, and to hear him argue for the justice of their punishment.

But his triumph was not long ; secret and inscrutable as the Jesuits imagined they had laid their schemes, the king either received, or pretended to have received, such information of them, as, confirmed by a multitude of facts not to be denied, gave an appearance of probability and justice, to their being charged as accomplices with the unhappy nobles, and treated with the utmost severity. A step that could not have been taken on such grounds, while these nobles were alive and at liberty, or the people in spirits to exert the influence of their prejudices in their behalf. But the favourable minute was come to strike at the root of ecclesiastical tyranny, and deliver both king and people from the yoke, under which they had so long blindly groaned, that at length they thought it just and natural.

Accordingly, in the midst of this security, my master was seized, and hurried away to a prison with the rest of his brethren ; and all his papers and effects secured for the government. Of the former, they could make but little use, as it is an invariable rule with all the *order*, never to keep any by them whose discovery may endanger them, or their designs ; but the latter were turned to ready account.

In this dissipation I fell to the lot of one of the officers, who in his search took an opportunity to secrete the bag in which I was, and that very night lodged his acquisition with a banker, for fear of detection.



CHAP. XX.

CHRYSAI meets another acquaintance at his new master's. Conclusion of the history of honest AMINIDAB. Adventures of his son. He enters into business at LISBON, in which CHRYSAI suffers a great misfortune. His ingratitude to his uncle justly rewarded. CHRYSAI enters into a new service.

I WAS scarce settled in the possession of my new master, whom I found to be a concealed Jew, when I saw a person enter his counting-house, the sight of whom made me almost distrust my senses. Nor was the surprise of my master less: 'O, God of *Abraham*,' (said he) 'is not that the son of my brother *Aminidab*? Where hast thou been? And where is thy father? He has been sought from, *Dan to Beer-sheba*! His spoiling that Gentile, that *Egyptian* woman, has been a joy to all the brethren! but I am amazed to see thee here; I hope he is safe out of the reach of every christian power.'

'O, brother of my father,' (replied the son of *Aminidab*) 'mention not that unhappy affair, if thou hast not a mind to kill thy wretched nephew with grief. My father is dead!'—'But where is the wealth, nephew,' (interrupted my master hastily) 'where is the wealth?'—'All lost! all buried with him in the bottom of the ocean,' replied the nephew.—'All lost! The wealth all lost! O my brother! O *Aminidab*, my brother! my brother! Since the destruction of *Jerusalem* there fell not such a misfortune on our tribe: The wealth all lost! O *Aminidab* my brother! my brother!—'Alas, my father, I faint through weariness, weakness, and hunger; I have not eaten bread this day; let us retire into the inner chamber, and when my soul is refreshed with a morsel of bread, and a drop of water, I will put ashes

on

‘ on my head, and ungird my loins, and then unfold
‘ the whole unhappy story to thee.’

The repast was literally what he had asked; and as soon as it was ended, and the young *Aminadab* and his uncle seated on the floor together, in the posture of mourning, the former proceeded thus.

‘ By the letters which my father wrote to thee from
‘ *England*, in the sacred cypher of our family, thou
‘ wer’st informed of his intended return into his native
‘ land of *Africa*, and invited to meet him at *Tetuan*,
‘ and share his fortune. This he told me while we
‘ were upon our voyage; but thy better angel pre-
‘ vented thee, and saved thee the labour and loss of
‘ such a journey in vain.

‘ The ship on board which we unfortunately em-
‘ barked was a *Dutchman*, bound for the coast of *Italy*, but was to land us at *Gibraltar*, from whence
‘ we knew we could get an immediate passage over.
‘ But behold, when we were just in view of the port,
‘ when the sight of his native land made the very soul
‘ of my father rejoice, and we thought of nothing
‘ but safety and content, a *Sallee* rover gave chase to
‘ our ship. The *Dutch* captain immediately crowded
‘ all the sail he could to escape; but the wind dying
‘ away, and the pirate gaining upon us with his oars,
‘ he came to my father with tears in his eyes, and told
‘ him that we were all ruined, for he had neglected
‘ to bring a pass.

‘ This news was like a clap of thunder to my fa-
‘ ther, who too well knew the consequence of their
‘ finding such a mass of wealth in his possession!’
‘ *Wretch that I am,*’ (exclaimed he) ‘ *why did I venture*
‘ *with one of thy sordid nation? slaves to MAMMON,*
‘ *who could hazard liberty and fortune to save such a*
‘ *trifle?*’ Then turning about, and going into his
‘ cabin, he stood some moments as if lost in thought,
‘ when bursting into an extatick rage, he snatched up
‘ the coffer in which his gold and jewels were, from
‘ under the head of his bed, and embracing it eager-
‘ ly, ‘ *I have gained thee,*’ (said he) ‘ *I have earned*
‘ *thee with anxiety and toil; and I will not lose thee*
‘ *now!*

‘ now !—O *Jonas* send thy whale to receive me,
‘ and bear me to the land of my fathers. I will not be
‘ a laughing-stock to the Gentiles, nor a bye-word in my
‘ father’s house.’—‘ Saying which words he rushed
‘ upon the deck, and before any person could possi-
‘ bly prevent him, he plunged into the sea, with the
‘ coffer in his arms, and was never seen more.

‘ While all stood amazed at his rashness, the hea-
‘ vens, as if appeased with the sacrifice, immediately
‘ sent a wind that filled out fluttering sails, and so
‘ bore the ship, delivered thus of its *Jonas*, out of
‘ the reach of the enemies. You may better con-
‘ ceive than I can describe the situation I was in at
‘ this event : I prostrated myself on the shore when
‘ we landed at *Gibraltar*, and bewailed my misfor-
‘ tune with tears and lamentations, But this afforded
‘ no relief to my distress ; and something I must do
‘ to earn a morsel of bread. I therefore sold all my
‘ superfluous raiment for four ducats, for all our mo-
‘ ney was in the coffer, and with these did I purchase
‘ some eggs and fruit, which I sold again in the gar-
‘ rison, to support my life, till I should have an op-
‘ portunity of coming to thee, my father, for advice
‘ and assistance in this distress ; and now behold these
‘ four ducats are become twelve ducats in my hands,
‘ and that is all my worldly wealth.’

The uncle covered his face with his hands, and re-
mained silent some time. At length he spoke to his
nephew in these words : ‘ It is in vain, O son of my
‘ brother, to mourn for what is not to be remedied ;
‘ holy *David* wept no longer for his child after he
‘ was dead : let us therefore arise and think of some-
‘ thing that may, if not retrieve thy mighty loss, at
‘ least administer relief to thy distress. Thou hast
‘ been initiated in the mysterious art of lessening the
‘ weight, without effacing the image, on the golden
‘ coins of these idolaters. This was the first rise of
‘ thy father, who began the world as poor as thou
‘ art now ; till his unwearied industry in this prac-
‘ tice raised him from want. Follow thou therefore
‘ his example ; and may the God of thy fathers give
‘ thee

‘ thee the same success, but with an happier blessing than he found.

‘ And lo! fortunately it has happened, that I have this very hour received a large quantity of the coin of *Britain*, all new from the mint. On that therefore thou mayest begin thine endeavours, and the fourth part of the produce of this labour shall be thine: I was just going to have sent for another, who always works for me, for a fifth: but I am willing to give thee a profit extraordinary to encourage thee.

‘ Thine earnings in this business will soon produce thee a considerable sum, with which thou mayest go privately to *London*, and purchase old cloaths, which will bring great profit in *Germany*, as soon as this war shall be at an end.’

‘ Till thou art able to provide for thyself, thou mayest eat bread here, and sleep under the shadow of my roof: be not dejected; *honest* industry, never fails of success.’

The young *Aminadab* was no sooner introduced thus into the way of *honest* industry, than he seemed to forget his loss, and settled himself most intently to work. I sell one of the first sacrifices to his art, which deprived me of a fourth part of my weight, and of all my beauty; nor did my companions fare much better; so that from a thousand of us, who were in the bag, his share of the spoil was a treasure, on which he immediately commenced merchant, stocking a box with all the gaudy trinkets which could allure the ignorant, and give him an opportunity of exerting his talents of imposition.

You have often heard me mention the beauty of my figure with pleasure; but, alas, vain boast! it was now no more! I came from this fiery trial, with all the marks of age and infirmity so strong upon me, that I could not forbear comparing myself and my companions to a number of *British* soldiers, just come from *Soup Maigre* and straw, in a *French* prison.—In this mutilated condition I was made up in a parcel, to be sent to *England*, against whom this trade was
most

mostly carried on, there being no other nation who would receive their own coin, under the disgrace of such diminishing. But before I could be sent off, an accident happened in the family of my master, the banker, which gave me a longer delay in *Lisbon*.

I have told you, that in secret he was a Jew, though the prospect of gain made him profess Christianity, in despite of the horrors of the inquisition. But happy had it been for him that he had not made such profession, or that his nephew had been drowned with his father.

For no sooner had his gains, in his art of diminishing, restored him a little to his spirits, than thinking his portion of that profit too little, and insufficient beside, to raise him to opulence so suddenly as he desired, he cast about how to acquire the whole, or at least a large part of his uncle's wealth at once.

He therefore took a proper place to work in, for his merchandize did not interrupt him in his main business, at some distance from his uncle's house; and having conveyed a large sum of money thither to work upon, he directly informed the *holy office* of his uncle's *Judaism*, with directions how to detect him in it, concluding, that when he should be seized, there would be no enquiry made after the money that was in his own hands; as he knew it was impossible he should ever escape from thence. And though this was but a poor pittance, in comparison of the sums which he knew would be forfeited, yet he comforted himself with the thought, that it was more than he could any other way hope to obtain from him.

But he was deceived by his avarice, and justly involved in the ruin which he drew upon his benefactor. For when the officers of the inquisition took possession of his uncle's effects, finding an entry in his books of the money in *his* hands, they went directly in quest of it, and that so unexpectedly, that they caught him at *his work*, beyond a possibility of evasion or escape.

This is a crime never forgiven in a state. He was therefore immediately delivered up to the civil power, from which he received a death not less cruel than that of his uncle, from the inquisition.

Of all the human sufferings I had yet seen, except in the case of the *sacrifices*, this gave me the greatest pleasure, as there is no crime that can deform the heart of man more than ingratitude.

I here changed my service of course, and entered into that of the *holy office*, to the judge of which I was delivered, the day I was taken out of the possession of the unfortunate Jew.—I have before given you my sentiments, on the absurdity of thinking to please the Deity, by cruelty to his creatures, in the instance of the *human passover* of the Jews. The same arguments will hold here, and with this additional force, that cruelty of every kind, is, if possible, more absurd under the christian dispensation than any other, as beside the general laws of nature and reason, the particular laws of christianity do every where clearly and expressly command brotherly love, tenderness, and compassion, forbidding every appearance of cruelty, under the severest denunciations of wrath.

But there has been so much, and that so well said, on this subject already ; and the nature of the sufferings of those unhappy wretches, who are brought before this tribunal, are so well known, that I shall spare myself the pain of the repetition, and only mention one affair, the circumstances of which appeared singularly affecting to me.



C H A P. XXI.

An uncommon criminal appears at the tribunal of the holy office. A love scene in a strange place. The history of PHERON and ILISSA.

THE next day after I came into the possession of the inquisitor, there appeared at his tribunal a person of the most august presence, though overcast with all the melancholy which his unhappy situation could inspire. He seemed to be advanced in years, but not past the vigour of life, and was distinguished from the national look of the *Portuguese*, by an uncommon turn of feature, which shewed him of another people.

As soon as he was brought to the place appointed for him, the inquisitor, with an awful solemnity in his voice and manner, addressed him thus, ‘Thou art once more brought to this tribunal, to try if the stubbornness of thine heart has yet relented, and thou wilt confess thy guilt.’—‘I told thee before, O judge of the faith of Christians,’ (replied the prisoner, with a composed look and determined voice) ‘I told thee before, and I repeat it again, that I am not conscious of any thing that should incur the censure of this tribunal: nor shall all the tortures, which the inventive cruelty of man can inflict upon this wretched body, make me lie against mine immortal soul, or acknowledge guilt to which I am a stranger. But tell me of what I am accused, and my conscience shall direct my lips to answer thee the truth. Perhaps I may unwittingly have erred; thou knowest that I have not always professed the Christian faith, according to the laws established here: pardon then the errors of mine ignorance, and instruct me to avoid the like for the future. And, O! I adjure thee by the Christian faith, to relieve my heart from the anxiety that

'tears it, for the fate of my daughter ! O, let me know.'——

His adjuration was broken off at these words by the officers of the court ; and his answer not being satisfactory, he was remanded back to prison, without any farther questions, with the strongest menaces of severity ; though in secret the judge ordered him to be treated with tenderness and respect, and supplied with every comfort and convenience of life, that could mitigate the horrors of a prison.

My master then withdrew, and changing his judicial robes for a more convenient and splendid dress, retired to his own apartment, where, after the respectful ceremony of sending to desire admission, he went into a particular chamber, in which was a young female, whom he approached with all the timid tenderness of love. ' I have seen thy father, my dearest *Ilissa*,' (said he) ' and he is well ; nor shall any human means be wanting to preserve him so.'

' Why then may I not see him ?' (replied the lady) ' how can I trust thy words, thou hast already deceived me ?'—' Thou knowest, my love' (returned he) ' that thy request is impossible ; and if I have deceived thee, by promising compliance with it, it was only to calm the transports of thy passion, that in a cooler moment thou mightest hearken to the voice of love and happiness.'—' *Mention not happiness to me in this place ! Can happiness be without liberty ? Is a prison the proper scene for love ? But I will be deceived no longer ! I will see my father, or I will not live. Grant me this request, and expect my gratitude. Thou knowest that for myself I fear not thy power ! thou knowest that immediate death is ever in my reach ; trifle not therefore with me any longer ; restore me to my father ; restore us both to liberty ; and then, then only, speak to me of love.*'—' Thou hast conquered, my *Ilissa* ! thou hast conquered ! Your father shall be restored to you ; and we will all fly together to thy native land, where we shall live in happiness ; but this cannot be compass'd on a sudden it will require both time and address to secure our
' retreat.

‘ retreat. But when I have done this for my *Ilissa*, can I be sure of her love ? Will her heart return the sacrifice I make ?’—‘ *I have told thee that my heart is grateful ; I tell thee now it is not insensible to softer passions : urge me no farther ; when I am freed from this prison, and my father is present to give the sanction of his authority to my actions, I promise thee to become thy wife. And my inclination, which has never yet contradicted my duty, will not find it difficult to pay the love I promise at the altar.*’

These words raised my master’s heart into an ecstasy ; he prostrated himself at her feet, he kissed her hand, and swore eternal love.

The rest of the day was spent in forming schemes for their escape, and planning scenes of future happiness ; in the prospect of which, their unequal years seemed to raise no cloud. The lady appeared to be about eighteen : her beauty, though very great, was rather majestic than soft ; different from the *Bohemian* lady I mentioned before, an air of grandeur kept every one around her at an awful distance, and the flash of her eye, like lightning, terrified the heart it warmed. Her lover was just past his meridian, but still in all the vigour of his life, and far from disagreeable in his appearance or conversation.

There was something so extraordinary in this affair, that it raised my strongest curiosity to know the circumstances of it ; nor was I long at a loss. In the happiness of his heart, that evening my master presented a jewel of immense value to the lady, from whom, in the way of gallantry, he asked a tablet, cased with gold, as a return.

The lady refused not his request, but at giving it desired he would be careful of it, as she esteemed it much beyond its apparent value, it having been given her by her father.

The moment I heard her say this, and saw him put the tablet in his pocket, I knew my curiosity would be gratified by the *spirit of the golden case*. As soon, therefore, as my master retired to rest, I entered directly into his heart, and summoning, by our

sympathetick impulse, the spirit I wanted, I shewed him my curiosity, which he complied with, by a look which signified these words.—‘ There is something so extraordinary in the whole history of the persons who have raised your curiosity, that it will be necessary to trace it from the beginning, to give you the satisfaction you desire.

‘ The father of the young lady, who gave me to our master, is the person whom you saw this morning at his tribunal. His name, in his own country, was *Pheron*; he is a native of *Abissinia*, where his ancestors have possessed ample territories for many ages, being descended from the race of their kings.

‘ From the first dawn of reason to the mind of *Pheron*, he shewed the strongest desire for knowledge, and the steadiest attachment to virtue. The advances of human knowledge have not been so great in those countries as here: yet natural reason has been able to discover the sublime truths of morality; the practice of which is called wisdom, and the time consumed here in fruitless speculation devoted to it; by which means, if men are not so knowing, they are certainly more wise.—In this happy employment passed the first years of the youth of *Pheron*, till riper manhood calling him to the service of his country, he went at the head of his father’s vassals, to repel the invasions of the *Ethiopians*.

‘ His success was so great in this first essay of his arms, that he not only repelled the invaders, but also carried the war into their own country, where after many victories, he compelled them to sue for peace.

‘ The fame of his actions soon reached the ear of his sovereign, who sent for him to his court, and rewarded his services, by giving him his sister in marriage. Dignities in those countries are not prostituted to the support of luxury and idleness. *Pheron* returned home with his bride, to govern and protect his people, who, safe in his care, pursued their usual occupations; war not being made there a constant profession, nor the gratification of the worst

‘ worst passions of human nature reduced into a science, and practised by rule.

‘ The peace which *Pheron* had made was not injurious to his enemies, and therefore was preserved by them, which gave him leisure to attend to the improvement of his country, and instruction of his people.

‘ He had lived in this happy state some years, when there arrived a person in his country, who gave an unexpected turn to his affairs. The situation of those nations is such, that the inhabitants themselves rarely ever travel; nor is the face of a stranger seen in an age among them. This made the arrival of this man the more taken notice of; he was immediately introduced to *Pheron*, to whose friendship, his knowledge in several branches of science, soon recommended him.

‘ When the stranger had thus established an interest with him, he at length disclosed to him the motive of his coming into a country so remote from his own; he told him, that he had undertaken this hazardous and painful journey in pure obedience to the divine command, of instructing the ignorant in the knowledge of salvation. He explained to him the *mysteries* of the Christian religion; the *hierarchy* of *Rome*; the divine foundation of its power; and the several orders in its government, in so forcible a manner, that he soon made a convert of him.

‘ *Pheron* had always adored the name of Christ, but never till now knew what it was to be a Christian. One only book of his gospel had he ever seen, and from that he could understand no more, than that faith in the death of Christ for the redemption of mankind, and obedience to the self-evident laws of morality, with the pious worship of the one God alone, was the whole religion taught by him.—It is not strange therefore, if the glorious fabric of the church, as represented by this Jesuit, for such he was, had all the effect he could desire upon him, the naturally inquisitive turn of his mind, making

him listen with eagerness to every thing which seemed to open a new prospect to it.—Nor was he content with his own knowing those sublime doctrines: he also instructed his wife, whom he tenderly loved, and their example converted the greatest part of his people; for nothing could prevail upon him to attempt forcing their assent.—But this did not satisfy him; the descriptions which he had heard of the learning, piety, and glory of *Rome*, had filled his soul with an ardent desire to see that metropolis of the world, that he might learn its virtues, and transplant them into his own country. He communicated this thought to his instructor, who fired with the glory of such a proselyte, encouraged him in it, by every argument he could use.—This determined his resolution to make an attempt, the hazards of which would be rewarded with such happy consequences. He therefore prepared all things for his journey, in which his wife would bear him company, and also bring her only child, the lady whom you saw to-day, to receive the benediction of his *Holiness*, and committing the government of his people to his brother, and taking jewels and gold to an immense value, to defray the expences of his journey, he set out with a company sufficient to protect him from the dangers of travelling through such inhospitable countries, and arrived without any accident at the *Red Sea*, where he embarked on board a ship for *Alexandria*.

While he waited here for a ship bound to *Italy*, the plague deprived him of his instructor and his wife. He was at first inconsolable for his loss! but virtue soon awoke reason to his guard; and his care for his daughter made him careful for himself.—His attendants would have persuaded him to return directly home, as he had lost his guide; but the loss of his wife made the thought of home a torture to him. He therefore sent them back, and resolved to settle his daughter in a convent, and enter into the monastic life himself at *Rome*.

With

‘ With this design he embarked in the first ship that sailed for *Europe*, not being able to bear the sight of a place which had been so fatal to him. The ship was bound to this place, but for a large sum of money, the commander engaged to land him at *Leghorn*; but happening to come to the knowledge of his wealth on the passage, he brought him directly hither, where he was no sooner landed, than he informed the inquisitor, who is his brother, who immediately seized both *Pheron* and his daughter, for errors in their opinions, and confined them in the prison of the *holy office*, where they have now been above a year.’

‘ The first motive of this outrage was the stranger’s wealth, an unpardonable crime in that court; and which would soon have brought them to an unhappy death. But the beauty of the daughter has hitherto deferred their fate, and by what you have overheard to-day, may probably prevent it entirely.’



CHAP. XXII.

The love-adventure continued. The inquisitor visits PHERON, and obtains his consent. He employs an ENGLISH sailor, whom he sets at liberty, to assist him in his designs.

THE inquisitor’s heart was too full of love to let him sleep long; he arose about midnight, and taking the keys of the prison, which were every night deposited with him, he went directly to visit the father of *Iliffa*.

He found him wrapped in so profound a sleep, that his approach did not awake him; a sight so unusual in those mansions of despair astonished him; he paused a moment in admiration, gazing at him; to try if he could trace that virtue in his face, which made his heart superior to such terrors.

Just

Just then a smile of indignation flashed over the face of *Pheron*; and in the illusion of imagination, he cried out, 'It is in vain! my conscience is secure, and I despise your tortures.'—As he said these words, the working of his mind awoke him, when seeing my master standing at the side of his bed, the scene seemed to him in his surprise, to be continued, and he proceeded thus.—'I have told thee, that thy tortures should not bend my soul to falsehood: and now thou shalt find it so.'

'O father of *Ilissa*' (returned my master, melted into tenderness at such a sight) 'I come not to give thee torture! I bring the balm of comfort to thy soul!—*Art thou not the inquisitor?*'—'I am, O *Pheron*, and thy friend.'—'*Am I awake, is this, or was the former, but a dream? Guard me, good heaven! let me not fall from virtue!*'—'Such virtue ever is the care of heaven! *Pheron*, behold thy friend! the profelyte of thy virtues.—The time admits not many words; I come to offer thee liberty, and concert with thee the methods for our obtaining happiness. Thy *Ilissa*'—'*Heaven guard my child!*'—'Thy *Ilissa* is well, and happy in her father's welfare!'—'*O my child! my child! but shall I ever see her again?*'—'You shall; she shall be restored to your bosom, and never turn from it more.'—'*Good, gracious judge! O, when? O, how?—My child! my child!*'—'Suppress your joy a moment; the beauties of *Ilissa* have triumphed over the malice of her fate! she has found a lover, who offers happiness to her and you.'—'*Does my child love him? Is he an honest man?*'—'His life will prove him such! he offers to restore you, and your *Ilissa*, to liberty, and to accompany you both to your native country, for there can be no safety in *Europe* for you, after you leave this place; your escape from whence, and every circumstance relating to your return, shall be his care. Nor will he demand the reward his heart pants for, till your safety shall remove every fear, every doubt of his sincerity.'

'O name

‘*O name the generous man!*’—‘Behold him at your feet! receive me for your son.’—‘*Thee! the inquisitor! who threatened me with torture!*’—‘But treated thee with tenderness, treated *Iliffa* with respect.’—‘*Make me know that!*’—‘I ask no favour, but on that condition; if I procure liberty for you and your *Iliffa*; if I restore you to your native land, and accompany you thither; if your *Iliffa* acknowledges the services of my love, and asks your consent to reward them, will you confirm my blifs, and own me for your son?’—‘*I will, and thank kind heaven that gives me such a son.*’

Saying this, he embraced my master, who in a few words let him know the scheme he had formed for their escape, and then left him to his happy reflections, while he went to prosecute it.

In one of the cells of the inquisition, there was confined an *English* seaman, who had been seized, and secretly conveyed thither, for some disrespectful expressions against the *Divinity of St. Dominick*.

The manly, modest resolution, with which he had refused to own the authority of their tribunal, and his firmness under the first tortures, marked him out to the inquisitor, as a person proper for his design; for he would not trust any one of his own country, not even his brother, whose treachery to *Pheron* he now abhorred.

As soon as he opened the door of his cell, the sailor, whose foreboding prevented his sleeping very sound, perceived him, and imagining it was a summons to a repetition of the torture, he sprang up as far as his chains would admit him, and cried, ‘*Hollo! who comes there?*’—The inquisitor advancing, answered, ‘*A friend.*’—‘*Aye! damn all such friends!*’ (replied the sailor) ‘*I suppose you are come to give me another taste; but if my hands were out of those bilboes, I’d send you off with a salt eel for your supper.*’

‘Moderate your rage a moment, my friend; I come to set you free if you desire, and will deserve it.’—‘*Awast baling, brother! I do not understand you!*’—‘Why do not you desire to be free?’
—‘*De-*

—‘*Desire! aye! that I do! but I may whistle for that wind long enough, before it will blow.*’—‘Perhaps not; perhaps that wind, as you say, is nearer blowing than you imagine! what would you do to be free?’—‘*Do! I’d burn the inquisition, and cut the inquisitor’s throat! I’d do any thing, but turn papist, or fight against Old England.*’—‘Honest Briton! But suppose I should set you free; would you serve me faithfully in one thing, that is neither against your country nor your religion?’—‘*Belay that, and I’ll warrant you if I say it, I’ll do it without more words, I’m no Landsman nor Portuguese.*’—‘Well then, I’ll take your word, and so come with me.’—The sailor was so surprized, he scarce knew whether he was asleep or awake; however, as soon as the inquisitor had unlocked his chains, he struggled his shoulders, and followed him without more questions.

When they were come to my master’s apartment, he made the sailor sit down, and giving him some wine to chear his spirits, ‘You are now at liberty, my friend’ (said he) ‘without any farther condition, and may go where you please: but if you will serve me in an affair I shall mention to you, you shall have reason to think of this night with pleasure as long as you live.’—‘Serve you, master!’ (replied the sailor) ‘that I will! name but what you would have me do; that is, as I said before; you understand me; and I’ll do it, though it was to hand the main-top-gallant-sail in a storm at midnight, when the yard was broke in the flings, and it was not my watch; for if it was a man’s watch, do you see, it would be but his duty; and there is no merit in a man’s doing his duty; I am no flincher, I never say aye when I mean no; though I say it, I am a gentleman; my father was lieutenant of a man of war, and I have been at sea these five and thirty years, man and boy, and never was once brought to the gang-way in all that time. If the noble captain that rated me a midship-man twenty

ty years ago, had lived to be an admiral, I should have been an officer before now.'

The honest openness of heart that appeared in the sailor's giving his own character, made my master hear him with pleasure, and place an entire confidence in him. As soon as he had finished, therefore, he opened his scheme to him, and the sailor undertook to go to *London*, buy a good ship, and freight her for *Alexandria*, and to call at *Lisbon* in his way, and take my master and his friends aboard; to do which he gave him money and jewels to a great amount; the latter he was to dispose of in *London*, and account with the inquisitor for the surplus, after the purchase of the ship and cargo, which were to be his own, in reward for his trouble, as soon as he made this voyage.

All things being thus settled, the sailor was just departing, when on a sudden thought he turned short on the inquisitor; 'Steady,' (said he) 'steady; so far we go right before the wind, and all's well. But whom do you mean to clap on board me when I come? if it is the *Pretender*, or the *French king*, here, take back your *trinkams*; I'll be damned before I'll help either of them to make his escape.' '---Never fear, my friend,' (replied the inquisitor, scarce able to contain his laughter, at the strangeness of such a thought) 'I promise you it is neither of these; I promise you not to do any thing against your king or your religion.'---'But shall we not have one dash at this damned place?' (added the sailor) 'shall we not set it on fire, and cut the inquisitor's throat? I'll bring a gang of jolly boys that would shoot the gulph of hell, to have a stroke at the *Devil Dominick*; shall we not set the inquisition on fire, and cut the inquisitor's throat?'---'We will consider about those things: but you had better lose no time; and let me once more caution you, not to be seen in *Lisbon* at present; and to be as expeditious as possible in your return.'---'Never fear, master; never fear,' replied the sailor, and shaking him heartily by the hand, away he went.

I here

I here quitted the service of the inquisitor, being among the money which he gave to the sailor.



C A H P XXIII.

The sailor goes to LONDON, buys a ship and returns to LISBON, where he takes his passengers on board. His behaviour on meeting a FRENCH ship. He lands his passengers at ALEXANDRIA, returns home and marries. CHRYSALE quits his service.

MY new master no sooner found himself at liberty, than he hastened away to the sea-side, without ever stopping to look behind him, and luckily finding the packet just ready to sail, he was out of sight of *Lisbon* before morning.

Never was an heart so intent upon executing a commission faithfully as his; he thought of nothing else all the passage, and the moment he arrived in *London* he sold the jewels, bought a ship, manned her well, and having laid in a proper cargo, set sail for *Lisbon*, and was there before his employer imagined he was arrived in *London*.

I had been an idle spectator of these transactions, for young *Aminadob* had made such depredations on me, that no one in *London* would accept me at my original value; and my master's honour would not think of parting with me for less, without acquainting the person from whom he had received me—

The moment he arrived in *Lisbon* he gave notice to his friend, whose joy at his fidelity and expedition is not to be expressed. He immediately had the treasures, which he designed to take with him, conveyed secretly aboard, and as soon as the wind served, embarked himself with his friends, in the night, and obliged my master to sail directly, though greatly to his dissatisfaction, because he would not consent to his firing the prison of the inquisition, and cutting the inquisitor's throat.

Hea-

Heaven seemed to approve of the undertaking; sending a fair wind, which soon carried us out of the fear of our enemies.

It is impossible to conceive an happier company than were now together; nor did the blunt festivity of my master add a little to the pleasure of their voyage, which met but one cloud, that seemed at first to threaten a good deal, but soon blew over.

When we were about half our voyage, my master entered the cabin hastily one morning, and with a kind of fierce delight flashing in his eyes, says to the inquisitor, whom he always called *owner*, 'Well, *owner*, you shall now see what *English* boys can do; there is a large *Frenchman* bearing down upon us, but if you do not see him sheer off as short as if he had got foul of a lee shore, I will never take the helm again, if he is not even obliged to drop anchor to bring him up along side of us; and as I expected some such thing, I took a letter of marque, so that you need not fear being hanged for a pirate, if the worst should happen.'

But delighted as my master was, his passengers did not seem so well pleased with the news, especially his *owner*, who was not used to fighting, and beside was too anxious for his escape with his fair prize, to think of any thing with pleasure, which could possibly deprive him of her.

They all therefore went directly upon the deck, and seeing the ship really coming toward them, the inquisitor went into the cabin, that he should not be observed by the men, and sending for my master, accosted him thus; 'Surely, my friend, you cannot mean to wait for that ship,' (for we were *laying to*) 'she certainly means to attack you,——' And so let her, *owner*, (replied my master) 'I'll warrant she gets as good as she brings.'——'But consider, my friend,' (returned the inquisitor) 'consider we are on board you.'——'Well, *owner*, and what then; you are not afraid: the lady may be stowed safe below; and you'll stand as good a chance as another; you are not afraid.'——'My good friend I have not time to
' ex-

‘explain my reasons to you ; but if you have any regard for me, you will instantly croud all the sail you can, and get clear of this affair ; I desire it ; I beg it.’——‘ *Why look you, owner, what needs all these words ? if so be you order us, we must put about to be sure, for the ship is yours ; but then the honour of Old England, consider that ; the honour of Old England.*’——‘ O my friend, I can consider nothing but my desire to avoid this danger ; so once more I beg’——‘ *Enough said, enough said.*’ Then going upon the deck, ‘ Well, my lads, our owner does not chuse this brush, while the lady is on board ; so we must about ship. but as we come back, *Soup Maigre* shall pay for it.’——And saying this, he obeyed the desire of his owner as faithfully as if it had been his own, only not with the same appearance of pleasure, not being able to avoid ejaculating *damn fear*, at every turn of the tune he whistled as he walked the deck the rest of that day.

He had so punctually observed his owner’s instructions, in getting a good ship, that we were soon out of sight of the *Frenchman* ; nor did we meet with any thing disagreeable during the remainder of the voyage.

The day after this affair, when they had all recovered their good humour, my master addressed his owner thus.——‘ Now, owner, while the sky is clear, and we have nothing else to do, I had better give you an account of your money. Here is the log-book, which you may over-haul at your leisure, though the sooner the better. This is the time ; there is no taking a good observation in a storm, as may happen by and by ; you’ll find all as fair as a new cable : but I must give you one point to direct your reckoning by ; and that is this ; you bade me buy a ship, and freight her, and so forth, and she and the cargo should be my own, after I had done your job this trip. Now, owner, it is very true, that a less vessel than this might have made the run ; but then you seemed so desirous to be safe, that I thought it best to take a bargain in this stout ship,

‘ ship, which I knew to be as good a sea-boat as ever
 ‘ turned to windward, and able to go, hank for hank,
 ‘ with any thing that swims the sea, as we shewed
 ‘ when we run the *Frenchman* out of sight yesterday;
 ‘ though it went against my heart to do it; but no
 ‘ matter for that now; the ship is yours, and you
 ‘ have a right to be obeyed. However, there is the
 ‘ account, and here is the rest of your money, of
 ‘ which I did not lay out one shilling that I could
 ‘ avoid, but one guinea, which I gave to my old
 ‘ mess-mate *Will Crofstree*, whom I met on *Tower-*
 ‘ *bill* in distress; and one I gave *Black Moll* of *Wap-*
 ‘ *ping* to *beave down*; and I could not well avoid
 ‘ those either, for *Will* was an old mess-mate, and I
 ‘ owed *Moll* for many a good turn in her way; but
 ‘ all this signifies nothing to you; they can be stop-
 ‘ ped in account; and here is a damned guinea too,
 ‘ that would not go; I believe it has been in the
 ‘ hospital, till it was *fluxed* off its legs.

‘ And now, *owner*, as you may think this ship
 ‘ cost too much, and that the cargo is too good; I
 ‘ will not keep you to your bargain; she is your own
 ‘ and all that is in her, only pay the men; as for me,
 ‘ I am satisfied with having got out of that damned
 ‘ inquisition, and leave the rest to yourself. If you
 ‘ think that I have deserved any thing, well and
 ‘ good; if not, I do not fear bread, while the sea
 ‘ flows round *Old England*: all that grieves me is,
 ‘ that you would not let us set fire to the inquisition,
 ‘ and cut the inquisitor’s throat.’—If my master’s
 bluntness in the affair of the *French* ship, gave offence
 to his *owner*, the honesty of this speech restored him
 to his warmest esteem; and made *Pheron*, who was
 present, cry out in rapture, ‘ Thank heaven there is
 ‘ still some honesty among mankind.’—‘ Honesty!
 ‘ aye,’ (replied my master) ‘ a little among the tars of
 ‘ *Old England*! a little.’

The inquisitor having by this time, recovered from
 the astonishment, into which such nobleness of soul
 threw him, returned the account unopened, with
 these

these words, 'I am convinced your account must be just; and I freely make you a gift, not of this ship and cargo, for they are justly your own already, but of the rest of the money which is in your hands.'—*What all, owner, all!'*—'All, my friend; if it were many times so much you justly merit.'—'But then, owner, had not you better sign the account if you please, for fear of after reckonings with your executors; for I hate the law damnably, ever since I lost a year's pay for binding our boatswain's mate's brother to beat his wife. The brimstone swore I beat her husband, and so I paid for meddling; but it was the lawyers fault that set her on. Damn all lawyers say I.'—'Well then, my honest, worthy friend, there is a receipt; and I wish you success equal to your merit; and you cannot have more.'—'Enough said, owner; enough said; I thank you.'

The remainder of our voyage was one continued scene of happiness. My master landed his passengers at *Alexandria*, from whence they soon set out for *Pheron's* country, and at his taking leave of them, advised them to be careful how they ventured in any of the ships of those countries, which he assured them were not better than *bumboats*, nor did their mariners know any more of the sea than a *Thames* water-man.

Having finished this, his first business, he proceeded to dispose of his cargo, for which he met so good a market, and made so profitable a return from thence home, that as soon as he arrived, his landlady's daughter in *Gosport*, whom he had been in love with for many years, but never dared to speak to till now, readily consented to marry him. One thing though I must not omit, and that was, that he kept a constant look out all the voyage home, for that *Frenchman*, whom he had fled from so sore against his will; and was greatly concerned that he could not meet him, to have one brush, for the honour of *Old England*.

I did
22

I did not remain with him to be a witness of his happiness; he gave me to a Jew pedlar for a pair of fine sleeve-buttons, to present to his mistress the morning before his marriage,



C H A P. XXIV.

CHRYSAL arrives in London, where he comes into the possession of a pawn-broker, by whom he is given to the author. A most unhappy instance of human infirmity. The conclusion.

THE diminution of my size, which had made my late master careless about me, did not prevent the pedlar, though with many apparent scruples, from giving him a great bargain, worth about a third part of my present value, for me.

I did not remain long in his possession: he passed me off as soon as he arrived in *London* whither he was going when he received me, to a pawn-broker, at a division of the loss, in the purchase of old cloaths, which he was going to carry abroad.—Strange were the scenes, and unexpected the faces, which I saw in this place, where every necessary utensil of life, every ornament of luxury, was deposited, as in a place of security, by their respective owners: but your own experience makes any particular description of this place, or its manifold mysterious trade, unnecessary to you.

The misfortune of my size kept me prisoner here till *Saturday* night, when my master always puts off his light coin, just before he shuts his shop, to the poor people, whose necessity requiring an immediate supply, for the support of life, cannot wait to return it on *Monday*, and so must even bear the loss.—Such a person did he think you, and accordingly gave me to you; but the moment I came into your possession, and found that you were *the chosen of ten thousand, the first-born of science*, whom wisdom had instructed,
and

and art led by the hand, through the dark labyrinths of nature, till the coy fugitive, unable longer to elude your pursuit, had been obliged to consent to a revelation of her most *occult wisdom*, and to entrust you with the command of *that chain*, which links the animal and material world together ; the moment, I say, that I perceived who you were, and that I was the *intelligence* appointed to convey this favour to you, I entered your heart with the greatest pleasure, and waited with impatience for the moment when I should confer this completion of human happiness and honour upon you ; a pleasure that was heightened by the noble constancy you shewed, when the smell of the hot ox- cheek, as you came by the cook's shop, raised that conflict between nature and knowledge, whether you should purchase some of it to satisfy your hunger, or preserve me for this last experiment, in which the latter was so gloriously triumphant.

The auspicious moment is arrived ; *nature labours in the throws of the mystick birth ; and lo ! the philosophick king arises in all the glory of the morning !* attend to my words ; receive the consummation of human knowledge.

To apprehend this secret cause, you must know

*	*	*	*	*	*	*
*	*	*	*	*	*	*
*	*	*	*	*	*	*
*	*	*	*	*	*	*
*	*	*	*	*	*	*
*	*	*	*	*	*	*

O doleful and deplorable event ; never to be told without wailing ; never to be read without tears. Just as the spirit had arrived at this most interesting point, human weakness, unable to suppress the impulse of internal vapour, which the mention of the fatal ox-cheek set in motion in my empty bowels, by the longing it raised in my stomach, emitted an explosion that filled the room with a fetid steam. The spirit

spirit started at the unpardonable offence to his purity ; and looking at me with ineffable contempt, indignation and abhorrence, vanished from my sight, without deigning a word more.

The misfortune was more than I could bear ; I sunk under its weight, and swooned away upon the floor, * where officious humanity found me, and restored me to a life that was a burden under such a disappointment. The labour of my life being lost, the one moment in a thousand years slipped away in vain. But such is the consequence of human weakness ; such the end of all the works, of all the expectations of man.

C O N C L U S I O N .

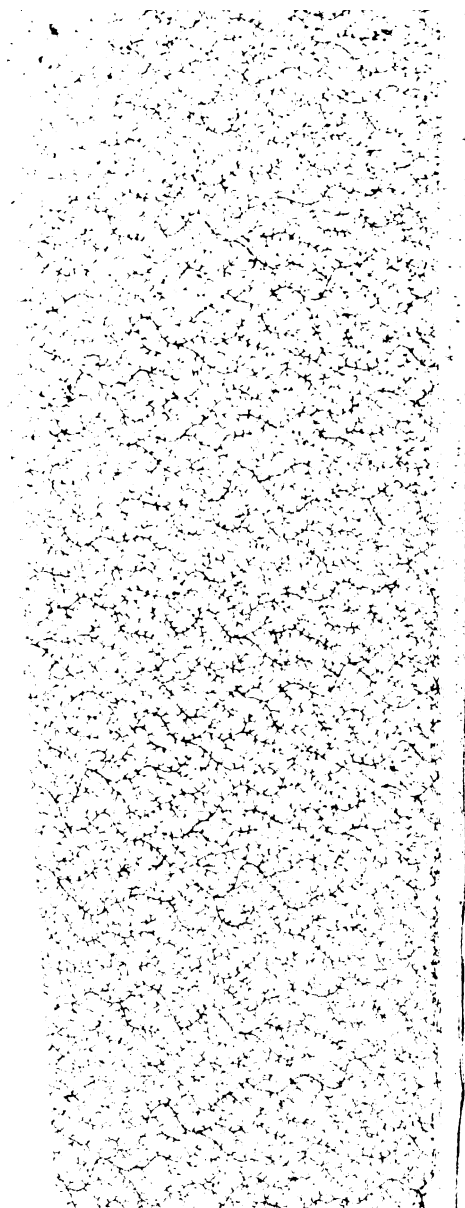
And now, O my brother in disappointment, who readest this most lamentable catastrophe, whether thou art a taylor, whose principal debtor is made a lord, a physician, whose *nostrum* is discovered, a cobbler, who sleepest over thy last, in hopes of dreaming of hidden treasure, a poet, whose play is refused, or a senator, who hast mortgaged thine estate to purchase a seat in parliament, just before its dissolution, attend to the instruction in my words, and learn wisdom from my example. Seize the present moment, nor depend upon the future ; let reason curb expectation ; reduce imagination to common sense ; and bring your wishes within the bound of your real wants : so shall industry banish necessity from your habitation, and content turn all your possessions into gold,

* See the Preface.

End of the SECOND VOLUME.

7





B'D SEP 20 1912

